4°r
9
13

LONDON BOROUGH OF LEWISHAM
LIBRARY SERVICE

Author

Title

BOOK STORE

Books or discs must be returned on or before the last date stamped on label or on card in book pocket. Books or discs can be renewed by telephone, letter or personal call unless required by another reader. After library hours use the Ansafone Service (01-698 7347). For hours of opening and charges see notices at the above branch, but note that all lending departments close at 1 pm on Wednesday and all libraries are closed on Sundays, Good Friday, Christmas Day, Bank Holidays

METROPOLITAN
SPECIAL COLLECTION

942·066·95

942.066/06

BISHOP BURNET'S

HISTORY

OF

HIS OWN TIME,

FROM THE

RESTORATION OF KING CHARLES II.

TO THE

CONCLUSION OF THE TREATY OF PEACE AT UTRECHT,
IN THE REIGN OF QUEEN ANNE.

To which is prefixed,

A SUMMARY RECAPITULATION OF AFFAIRS IN CHURCH AND STATE, FROM KING JAMES I. TO THE RESTORATION IN THE YEAR 1660.

Together with

THE AUTHOR'S LIFE, BY THE EDITOR:

AND SOME

EXPLANATORY NOTES.

THE WHOLE REVISED AND CORRECTED BY HIM.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR J. NUNN, GREAT QUEEN STREET; R. PRIESTLEY, HOLBORN;
AND M. PRIESTLEY, HIGH STREET, BLOOMSBURY.

1818.

ANNEX LIBRARY

Printed by J. F. Dove, St. John's Square.

942
066

THE

LIFE OF THE AUTHOR:

BY THE EDITOR,

THOMAS BURNET, ESQ.

IT were to be wished, that the Author himself had lived to have completed his whole design; and, as he made Thuanus his pattern in history, like him to have closed his work with an account of his own life: that he intended so to have done, is evident both from his last will, and from a rough draught or imperfect sketch of this nature, left behind him. He acted so considerable a part in the world, in so many different stations; he met with so large a share of favour from some, and so much censure from others, and in a life where the scenes were so various, there must be so many occurrences which will be both useful and entertaining, that I feared the public would scarce forgive me, as an Editor, if I should not endeavour to supply this only part of the Author's plan, which he himself did not live to execute. Though the producing authorities for the several facts asserted in the following sheets, might perhaps have exempted a writer from future cavils: yet the inserting vouchers for every particular,* would have rendered a work of this nature both dry and tedious; I have only done it, where the matter related seemed very essential, and the original papers themselves might prove an agreeable entertainment. I have carefully avoided repeating all those parts of the Author's life, which are already related in the "History of his Own Time:" they are only transiently mentioned here, so as to continue the thread of my narration, and the Reader is referred, for farther information, to the History itself.

* Those facts, for which no vouchers are alleged, are taken from the Bishop's manuscript notes of his own life: and can be further supported by other testimonies, if occasion should require.

WOOLWICH PUBLIC LIBRARIES

The author's birth and parentage.

Our Author, Dr. GILBERT BURNET, was born at Edinburgh, on the 18th day of September, in the year 1643. His father was the younger brother of a family, very considerable for its antiquity as well as interest, in the shire of Aberdeen; and was bred to the civil law, which he studied for seven years in France. His excessive modesty so far depressed his abilities, that he never madê a shining figure at the bar, though he was universally esteemed a man of judgment and knowledge in his profession: he was eminent for probity and generosity in his practice; insomuch, that near one half of it went in acts of charity and friendship. From the poor he never took a fee, nor from a clergyman, when he sued in the right of his church. In the year 1637, when the troubles in Scotland were breaking out, he was so disgusted at the conduct of the governing bishops there, he censured them with so much warmth, and was, at the same time, so remarkable for his strict and exemplary life, that he was generally called a puritan: but when he saw, that instead of reforming abuses in the episcopal order, the order itself was struck at, he adhered to it with great zeal and constancy; as he did to the rights of the crown, without once complying with that party, which afterwards prevailed in both nations. For though he agreed with Barclay and Grotius (with the latter of whom he had been intimately acquainted) as to their notions of resistance, where the laws are broke through by a limited sovereign; yet he did not think that was then the case in Scotland.

Our author's mother was very eminent for her piety and virtue: she was a warm zealot for the presbyterian discipline; her education that way had been very strict: she was sister to the famous Sir Archibald Johnstoun, called Lord Waristoun, who, during the civil wars, was at the head of the presbyterians; and was too often hurried away, by his attachment to them, into excesses that were not suitable to his natural temper; which was just, generous, and self-denying; insomuch, that he left behind him but a very small provision, for a family of thirteen children, though for many years he had been entrusted with the whole government of Scotland. He was so zealous in the interests of his party, that neither friendship nor alliance could dispose him to shew favour to those, who refused the solemn league and covenant. Our Author's father, therefore, persisting in this refusal, at three several times was obliged to quit the kingdom, and at one of them to remain an exile for five years: and, when his return was afterwards connived at, as his principles would not permit him to renew the practice of the law, much less to accept of the preferments in it, offered him by Oliver Cromwell, he lived retired in the country upon his own es-

tate, till the restoration; when he was made one of the lords of the session.

His father's retirement from business proved a considerable advantage to our Author's education, which was wholly under his care, and so managed by him, that at ten years old his son was master of the Latin tongue: he was sent at that age to the College of Aberdeen, where he perfected himself in Greek, and went through the common methods of the Aristotelian logic and philosophy with applause: he commenced master of arts before he was fourteen, and then applied himself to the law, much to the regret of his father, who had always designed him for a clergyman. He continued studying the civil and feudal law for above a year, by which he laid in such true notions of society and government, as are seldom found amongst divines: he then changed his resolution, and determined wholly to dedicate himself to the church: thereupon he pursued a very hard course of study; he went through the Old and New Testament, with all the several commentaries upon the different parts of it, then in repute: he examined into the most noted authors in controversy, and read Bellarmine and Chamier, in opposition to each other, quite through: he perused some of the most received systems of school-divinity, but was soon disgusted at the subtlety of those writers, and readily observed, how little all their disputes, which the jargon of the schools rendered endless, could tend towards making men wiser or better. In the hours of amusement, he ran through many volumes of history: and it is scarce conceivable, what a progress he had made in these studies, before he was eighteen, by an application, which seldom fell short of fourteen hours in a day. His education.

At that age, he was put upon his trial as a probationer or expectant preacher; who, after having passed examination, is at liberty to preach wheresoever he is desired, but has no particular church, to which he is attendant. This is the first step in Scotland, towards an admission into orders, and was practised both under the episcopal and presbyterian economy. The method observed in it has something so different from what is customary in England, that it may perhaps be worthy the reader's notice. These probationers are first appointed to preach practically on a text assigned them; next, critically upon another, the sense of which is controverted; and then a mixed sermon, of criticism on the text, and practical inferences from it, is expected from them. After this, the examiners allot a head of divinity to each, on which they are to make a Latin oration, and to give out theses upon it, which they undertake to defend in public: then a Hebrew psalm and a portion of the Greek Testament is given them, to render into English extem- He is admitted as a probationer.

pore; and last of all comes the questionary trial, in which every minister of the district is at liberty to put such questions to the person under examination, as occur to him, out of the Scripture, or body of divinity. Before any one can be admitted to this, he must produce a testimonial of his good life from the minister of the parish where he lives; and if, during his trial, which lasts for three months, any scandal can be proved upon him, he is laid aside as unfit for the church.

Refuses a presentation to a living.

This probation our Author went through, at the age of eighteen; about which time his father was made a lord of the session, and his cousin-german, Sir Alexander Burnet, gave him the presentation to a very good benefice, where his family resided, and which lay in the centre of all his kindred. There is no law in Scotland, that limits the age a minister must be of; but our Author thought his own so unfit for a cure of souls, that he absolutely refused to accept of it, notwithstanding the repeated importunities of all his relations, except his father, who left him wholly to his own discretion.

His father's death, and his further pursuit of his studies.

In the year 1661, his father died: and soon after his brother Robert, who was then become very eminent at the bar, as his other brother Thomas was afterwards in physic: upon the occasion of his brother's death, our Author was much solicited, by his mother's relations, to return to his former study of the law, wherein he was assured of the greatest encouragement; but he persisted in his former resolution, of devoting his life to the service of the church, in which he was confirmed by Mr. Nairn, minister of the Abbey Church, at Edinburgh. Mr. Nairn was then the admired preacher of that country, remarkable for accuracy of style, as well as strength of reasoning and sublimeness of thought: him our Author purposed to make his pattern, in this branch of the pastoral office; and was not a little surprised to find, that he always preached extempore. For though all sermons in Scotland were delivered without book, yet were they premeditated discourses, first written, and then learned by heart; which was a loss of time Mr. Nairn could not submit to, and he soon put our Author upon attempting the same method of preaching, which he continued to practise all the rest of his life.* He attained to an easiness in it, chiefly by

---

* I shall only mention two remarkable instances in relation to his preaching without book. In 1691, when the sees, vacant by the deprivation of the nonjuring bishops, were filled up, Bishop Williams was appointed to preach one of the consecration sermons at Bow Church. But, being detained by some accident, the clerk had twice set the psalm, and still the preacher did not appear. Where-

allotting many hours of the day to meditation upon all sorts of subjects, and by accustoming himself, at those times, to speak his thoughts aloud, studying always to render his expression correct. Mr. Nairn led him likewise into a new course of reading, by recommending to his perusal Smith's Select Discourses, Dr. Moore's Works, and the writings of Plato and his followers; but no book pleased him more than Hooker's Ecclesiastical Polity, from the principles of which he never departed.

In the year 1662, the Scotch bishops, who had been consecrated at Westminster, made a pompous entry into Edinburgh, and, by the pride of their first appearance, gave no good omen of their future conduct. Bishop Leightoun, though one of their number, would have no share in the state they took upon them on this occasion: he soon became acquainted with our Author's growing fame, and, as he conceived a great affection for him, he took a peculiar pleasure in overlooking his studies. By his advice, he became conversant with all the primitive writers, going through the apologies and other treatises of the fathers of the three first centuries, and Binnius's Collection of Councils, down to the second council of Nice.

At the same time, our Author contracted an intimacy with another eminent divine, Mr. Charteris, a man of great prudence, joined to an unaffected simplicity of behaviour: he was not only very knowing in his own profession, but was likewise a great master of history, both ancient and modern, of geography and books of travels, and not a little skilled in mathematical learning. These three persons, by their conversation and advice, contributed towards finishing an education, which had been so happily begun. And, indeed, what might not be expected from such early helps, where nature had lain in materials, so fit to be wrought upon? For there was a robust constitution, capable of the hardest labour and study, an apprehension that took things quickly, and a memory

---

upon the Archbishop of Canterbury desired Dr. Burnet, then bishop of Sarum, to supply his place, which he did; and, as the Archbishop declared, gave them the best sermon he ever heard him preach. In 1705, he was appointed to preach the thanksgiving sermon before the Queen at St. Paul's; and it was the only discourse he had ever wrote beforehand, so this was the only time that he was ever at a pause in preaching, which on that occasion lasted for above a minute. These two incidents were so publicly known and spoke of, that I think it needless to allege any particular authority for them, unless they should be questioned.

that retained them long, an imagination rather too lively, and a natural fluency of expression.

His journey to England.

In the year 1663, our Author took a short tour into England: he first visited the two universities; at Cambridge, he had an opportunity to know and admire the extensive learning of Dr. Cudworth, the judgment and moderation of Dr. Pearson, the fine luxuriant imagination of Dr. Burnet (author of the Theory) and the free-thinking of Dr. Henry More, one of whose sayings, with relation to rites and ceremonies, then made great inpression on him: "None of these," said he, "are bad enough to make men bad, and "I am sure none of them are good enough to make men good." At Oxford our Author was much caressed, on account of his ready knowledge of the councils and fathers, especially by Dr. Fell, and Dr. Pocock, that great master of oriental learning: he was much improved there in his mathematics and philosophy by the instructions of Dr. Wallis, who likewise gave him a letter of recommendation to the learned and pious Mr. Boyle at London. Upon his arrival there, he was introduced to all the most noted divines, such as Tillotson, Stillingfleet, Patrick, Lloyd, Whitchcot, and Wilkins, whose characters are faithfully drawn by him in the History. But no conversation proved a greater advantage to him, than that of Sir Robert Murray, not only as he brought him into the best company, but as he also acted the part of a faithful monitor, in reproving him for any errors or indiscretions his youth might betray him into. After a stay in England of about six months, which, being spent in the manner I have mentioned, could not but be highly useful, he returned to Scotland, where he was again pressed to enter into orders, and accept of one of the best benefices in the west.

Delays accepting a good benefice.

Sir Robert Fletcher of Saltoun, who, during his stay at Paris, had received many obligations from his father, hearing so great a character of the son, invited him down to his seat, and had no sooner heard him preach, than he offered him that church, the minister of it being nominated to one of the vacant bishoprics. Our Author would have excused himself, as having determined for some months to travel beyond sea; and solicited the living for his friend Mr. Nairn; but Sir Robert would admit of no denial; and, as the present incumbent was not to be consecrated immediately, resolved to keep the benefice vacant, till his return from his travels.

His travels into Holland and France.

It was in the year 1664 that our Author went over to Holland; where, after he had seen what was remarkable in the Seven Provinces, he fixed his residence at Amsterdam. There, by the help of a learned Rabbi, he perfected himself in the Hebrew language; he

likewise became acquainted with the leading men of the different persuasions tolerated in that country; as the Arminians, the Lutherans, the Unitarians, the Brownists, the Anabaptists, and the Papists; amongst each of whom, he used frequently to declare, he had met with men of such real piety and virtue, that there he became fixed in that strong principle of universal charity, and of thinking well of those that differed from him, as likewise in an invincible abhorrence of all severities, on account of religious dissensions, which hath often drawn upon him the bitterest censures from those, who, perhaps by a narrower education, were led into a narrower way of thinking.

From Holland he passed through the Netherlands into France; he remained for some time at Paris, and conversed often with the two famous ministers of Charenton, Daillè and Morus; the one renowned for his learning and judgment, the other for his bright parts and eloquence. He thought, there entered too much of the gesture of the theatre into Morus's delivery; his sermons were full of fire and of turns, which, being out of the common road, at once surprised and pleased his audience; but when these flights, which passed current in a pathetic discourse, came to be coolly considered, they would hardly bear the test: so that our author found in him much that deserved imitation, there was still more that required correction. His stay in France was the longer, on account of the great freedom and kindness, with which he was treated by the Lord Holles, then ambassador at the French court. Towards the end of the year he returned to Scotland through London, where he was introduced, by the president, Sir Robert Murray, to be a member of the Royal Society.

Is settled as minister at Saltoun, and his conduct there.

Soon after his arrival at Edinburgh, Sir Robert Fletcher came thither, and carried him down to Saltoun, giving him the presentation to that church; but he declined taking it absolutely at first, and resolved to continue there four months, performing all the functions of a minister, without engaging himself to the parish, till he should have the joint request of all the parishioners; which he afterwards had, without one single exception; and thereupon he was ordained a priest by the Bishop of Edinburgh in the year 1665. During the five years he remained at Saltoun, he preached twice every Sunday, and once more on one of the week days; he catechised three times a week, so as to examine every parishioner, old or young, thrice over in the compass of a year; he went round his parish, from house to house, instructing, reproving, or comforting them, as occasion required; those that were sick, he visited twice a day; he administered the sacrament four times a year, and personally instructed all such, as gave notice they intended to receive

it; all that remained above his own necessary subsistence (in which he was very frugal) he gave away in charity. A particular instance of his generosity that way, a person* who then lived with him, and afterwards was in his service at Salisbury, used to recount: one of his parishioners had been in execution for debt, and came to our author for some small relief, who inquired of him, how much would again set him up in his trade; the man named the sum, and he as readily called to his servant to pay it him. "Sir, said he, "it is all we have in the house." "Well, well," said our author, "pay it this poor man; you do not know the pleasure there is in making a man glad." Thus, as he knew the concerns of his whole parish, as he treated them with tenderness and care, and as he set them a fair example of every article of that duty which he taught them, he had soon gained the affections of them, not excepting the presbyterians; though he was then the only man in Scotland that made use of the prayers in the Liturgy of the church of England.

As his studies were chiefly bent upon the pastoral care, in which he endeavoured to instruct himself from the best writers, concerning the constitution of the primitive church, during the first centuries, among whom St. Cyprian was the chief, he observed, that the bishops, who governed in Scotland, though they derived the strongest arguments for their order, from these very books, yet neglected all the rules prescribed in them. He, therefore, drew up a memorial of their abuses, of which some relation is given in the History, as likewise of the harsh treatment he met with upon that occasion. However, as this step had made some noise, and might be imputed to ambition, or a desire of becoming popular, he resolved to live in a more retired manner than he had done hitherto; and, abstracting himself from all mixed company, confining himself wholly to the study and the duties of his function, he entered into such an ascetic course, as had well nigh put an end to his life; for his bad diet, joined to hard study, had so corrupted the mass of his blood, that in two successive fevers he was given over by the physicians.

Much consulted by the ministry in Scotland.

In the year 1668, as the government of Scotland, both in church and state, was put into the hands of moderate men, among whom Sir Robert Murray was a principal leader, our author was frequently sent for and consulted by them; he was afterwards employed, as one of the chief managers for the church, in negotiating the scheme of an accommodation, between the episcopal and pres-

* This was a story commonly well known at Salisbury, and which the editor learnt from Mr. Wastefield, a gentleman now living there.

byterian parties; of which a full account is given in the History. He was, upon that occasion, introduced to the Dutchess of Hamilton; who, though her inclinations lay toward presbytery, professed herself a friend to moderate counsels. By her he was invited, the year following, to Hamilton, where he contracted an acquaintance with the Regent of the University of Glasgow; who conceived such an esteem for him, that, their chair of divinity being vacant, he proposed our author as the person most proper to fill it; and he recommended this in so effectual a manner, that, in a few days after, he brought over to Hamilton the decrees of the University, electing him their professor. As this matter had been wholly transacted without his knowledge, so was he, for some time, in suspense what resolution to take; his friends were all earnest in persuading him to accept of it; his parishioners at Saltoun, for whom he had a most tender regard, were no less anxious to retain him; at length the authority of Archbishop Leighton prevailed, and he removed to Glasgow in the year 1669, where he continued four years and a half, in no small exercise of his patience. The presbyterian zealots hated him, as apprehending that his schemes of moderation would, in the end, prove the sure way of establishing episcopacy amongst them: the episcopal party, on the other hand, could not endure a man, who was for exempting the dissenters from their prosecutions.

Is made professor of divinity at Glasgow.

As his principal care, in this new station, was to form just and true notions in the students of divinity; he laid down a plan for that purpose, to which no other objection could be offered, but that it seemed to require the labour of four or five, instead of one man; yet he never failed executing every part of it, during his residence at Glasgow. On Monday, he made each of the students, in his turn, explain a head of divinity in Latin, and propound such theses from it, as he was to defend against the rest of the scholars; and this exercise concluded with our author's decision of the point, in a Latin oration. On Tuesdays, he gave them a prelection in the same language, wherein he purposed, in the course of eight years, to have gone through a complete system of divinity. On Wednesdays, he read them a lecture, for above an hour, by way of a critical commentary on St. Matthew's Gospel, which he finished before he quitted the chair. On Thursdays, the exercise was alternate; one Thursday he expounded a Hebrew psalm, comparing it with the Septuagint, the vulgar and the English version, and the next Thursday, he explained some portion of the ritual and constitution of the primitive church, making the apostolical canons his text, and reducing every article of practice, under the head of one or other of those canons. On Fridays, he made each of his

His conduct in that station.

scholars, in course, preach a short sermon, upon some text he assigned; and when it was ended, he observed upon any thing that was defective or amiss, shewing how the text ought to have been opened and applied. This was the labour of the mornings: in the evening, after prayer, he every day read them some parcel of Scripture, on which he made a short discourse, and when that was over, he examined into the progress of their several studies, encouraging them to propose their difficulties to him, upon the subjects they were then reading. This he performed during the whole time the schools were open; thereby answering the duty of a professor, with the assiduity of a schoolmaster; and, in order to acquit himself with credit, he was obliged to study hard from four till ten in the morning; the rest of the day being of necessity allotted, either to the use of his pupils, or to hearing the complaints of the clergy; who, finding he had an interest with the men in power, were not sparing in their applications to him.

He undertakes to write the Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton.

In times of vacation, our author made frequent visits to Hamilton; and was easily engaged, by the Dutchess, to undertake the task of examining and putting in order all the papers that related to her father's and her uncle's ministry: she had kept these carefully together, but had not hitherto found a person, whom she thought safe to be entrusted with the perusal of them; yet now she had so entire a confidence in him, that she put them all into his hands. The Earl (afterwards Duke) of Lauderdale no sooner heard that he was compiling Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton, than he wrote to Scotland, earnestly pressing him to come up to court, in order to receive such information from himself, concerning the transactions of those times, as he was able to furnish. Our author thereupon went to London, where he was received, by the Earl of Lauderdale, with such marks of confidence, as made it evident, that, had he pursued the common methods of cultivating an interest, he might have raised himself to a great fortune: but, as he was a constant enemy to all those artifices of a court, whereby men usually rise, so was he naturally of too frank a spirit, to bear with the Earl's imperious temper. All the use, therefore, he made of his freedom of access, was in negotiating and concluding a reconciliation between him and Duke Hamilton; who had assignations given him, on the revenues of the crown, in satisfaction of those pretensions, of which our author had found authentic vouchers, among the papers entrusted to his care; and the Duke, in return, promised to concur with the measures of the court, in the ensuing parliament. Four bishoprics in Scotland becoming vacant at this time, our author was offered his choice of them; but he declined accepting a station, for which he thought his years were unfit, in

He refuses a bishop-

which he foresaw he should be much entangled, and in all probability would be capable or doing little good. ric in Scotland.

Soon after his return to Glasgow, he married the Lady Margaret Kennedy, a daughter of the Earl of Cassilis, who lived in great intimacy and friendship with the Dutchess of Hamilton: she was a lady of distinguished piety and knowledge; her own sentiments inclined strongly towards the presbyterians, with whom she was in high credit and esteem; yet was she far from entering into the rigid and narrow zeal of some of their leaders. As there was some disparity in their ages, that it might remain without dispute, that this match was wholly owing to inclination, not to avarice or ambition, the day before their marriage, our author delivered the lady a deed, whereby he renounced all pretension to her fortune, which was very considerable, and must otherwise have fallen into his hands, she herself having no intention to secure it. His marriage with the Lady Margaret Kennedy.

In the year 1672, Duke Lauderdale was sent down, as the King's commissioner, to hold a parliament in Scotland, and our author was considered as the person, who had the greatest influence over him; which was wholly employed in doing good offices to needy suitors, and in preventing a breach between him and Duke Hamilton; for which he was much exclaimed at, by the party then opposing the court, who could have no hopes of prevailing, unless the latter would put himself at their head. About this time, he published his "Vindication of the Authority, Constitution, and Laws of the Church and State of Scotland;" wherein he strongly maintained the cause of episcopacy, and the illegality of resistance, merely on account of religion. This was thought, in that juncture, such a public service, that he was again courted to accept of a bishopric, with the promise of the next archbishopric that should be void; but he still persisted in his refusal. Again refuses a bishopric, with the promise of the next archbishopric.

In 1673, he was obliged to take another journey to London, in order to obtain a license for publishing his Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton; he went, likewise, with a full design to break off from farther meddling in matters of state; he saw that popery was at bottom the prevailing interest at court, and that the sacramental test, whereby the Duke of York, the Lord Clifford, and other papists in employment had been excluded, was a mere artifice of King Charles, to obtain money for carrying on the war that summer with Holland. He suspected that the designs of the court were both corrupt and desperate; he therefore used all the freedom, he decently could, with the Duke and Dutchess of Lauderdale; he pointed out to them the errors of their management in Scotland, and the ill effects it would have, both upon themselves and upon the whole nation; and when he saw no disposition to His favour at court.

rectify their measures, he rejected all offers of preferment made to himself; though he could not decline being sworn one of the King's chaplains, which, as it was a post of no profit, it was conferred upon him at his Majesty's express nomination, upon having heard him preach. As Duke Lauderdale's enemies were soon informed of the frankness with which he had remonstrated to his grace, against the methods of administration he was then pursuing; and as they knew his friendship and attachment to the Hamilton family, they industriously magnified his credit in Scotland to such a degree, that his Majesty often sent for him in private, and the Duke of York much oftener. He made no other use of the high favour shewn him by the latter than to introduce Dr. Stillingfleet to him; and afterwards to propose a conference, to be held in his Royal Highness's presence, between them two and the chief of the Romish priests: though there was little reason at that time to hope, that any arguments would be able to effect the Duke's conversion, and the very proposal of such a dispute, was in a great measure renouncing all pretensions to preferment. He likewise sought no other advantage from the great freedom with which the King received him, than only to awaken in that prince a sense of religion, and to rouse him from that lethargy of vice and indolence, in which his natural great talents seemed wholly buried. This is so much the reverse of the conduct of aspiring clergymen, it lies so directly out of the road to power, riches, or dignity, that I hope it may acquit him from all imputation of ambition.

His breach with Duke Lauderdale.

As soon as the Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton were licensed by Mr. Secretary Coventry; which was the longer delayed, because the King and many of the ministers were desirous to read them in manuscript; our author returned to Scotland: and on his arrival at Edinburgh, finding the animosity between the Dukes of Hamilton and Lauderdale risen to a height not to be composed, he retired to his station at Glasgow, and refused to stir from thence all that winter. This, joined to the jealousy, the favour shewn him at London had raised, drew upon him a storm, which pursued him for many years after, with the utmost violence. The measures of the court proving unsuccessful in parliament, Duke Lauderdale threw the load of his own miscarriage upon our author, whom he represented as the cause and instrument, under hand, of all the opposition he had met with. This accusation made it incumbent on him, once more to return to court in the year 1674. The King received him coldly, and ordered his name to be struck out of the list of chaplains; yet, at the Duke of York's entreaty, he admitted him to offer what he thought proper in his own justification; he thereupon gave his Majesty so clear and satisfactory an account of

his conduct, appealing for the truth of all his assertions to Duke Hamilton, that in the end the King seemed convinced of his innocence, and ordered him home to Glasgow. But the Duke of York dissuaded him from returning thither, till his peace should be entirely made; for he assured him, that otherwise he would be clapped up in prison, and detaind there perhaps as long as the same interest prevailed at court: his Royal Highness likewise used his utmost endeavours to have reconciled him with Duke Lauderdale; but that he found impracticable: the latter insisting, that our author should abandon his best friends, and discover all the secrets he had hitherto been in; and the other, as firmly persisting in his adherence to those, who had shewn him friendship, or reposed a confidence in him.

Is forced to quit his professorship at Glasgow.

Thus it became necessary, either by going back to Scotland, to put himself in the power of enemies, who were not likely to treat him with any regard to justice or his own innocence, or else to resign his professor's chair, and settle in England. He chose the latter, if it may be called a choice; and sought an establishment in London: in which he met with all the opposition the ministry could give him; particularly in one church (as he himself relates it in the History) where the electors were disposed to have chosen him, had they not been deterred by a very severe message in the King's name. Though the being thus in a manner turned a-drift, could not at the time but seem a misfortune, yet he ever spoke of it as the happiest event of his life. He was but thirty years old, and though the charms of ambition had not that influence over him, which is usual at those years; yet he thought it a signal blessing, that any accident had disentangled him, from the snares of so corrupt a court, in whose service he had been so far engaged, that he could not otherwise have been easily delivered from them.

Refuses a good benefice at London.

The situation he was now in, might surely have excused his embracing the first provision that offered; yet he could not be tempted by it, to overlook the nicest punctilios of justice or honour: resolved rather to suffer the utmost personal difficulties, than purchase preferment at the least expense of his character. He, therefore, generously declined accepting the living of St. Giles's, Cripplegate, which about this time was vacant;* it was in the gift of the Dean and Chapter of St. Paul's, who had expressed some inclination to bestow it upon Dr. Fowler (afterwards Bishop of Gloucester), but, being made acquainted with the circumstances of our author, and the hardships he had undergone, they sent him an offer of the be-

* This fact Mr. Mackney, a gentleman now living at Salisbury, assured me he had from the Bishop's own mouth. And the same was confirmed to me by the Reverend Mr. John Craig, who lived with Dr. Burnet at the time when it happened.

nefice: he thanked them for the favour, but said, that as he had been informed of their intention of conferring it upon so worthy a divine, he did not think himself at liberty to take it. After this, in the year 1675, he was recommended by the Lord Holles to the friendship of Sir Harbottle Grimston, Master of the Rolls, by whom he was appointed preacher to the chapel there; and, though the court sent first a bishop, and then Mr. Secretary Williamson, to persuade Sir Harbottle to dismiss him, as one highly unacceptable to the King, yet he persisted in the nomination he had made. By this means, our author obtained a settlement in London, in which he continued above nine years; he was soon after chosen a lecturer at St. Clement's, and grew to be one of the most followed preachers in town. His sermons had not in them the studied phrases or the rounded periods, which were then too much in vogue; but there was a force in his reasoning, a warmth in his expression, and a dignity in his manner, joined to a gracefulness in his person, which commanded attention; and as the heart always spoke in him, so it seldom failed of speaking to the hearts of his audience.

Is made chaplain at the Rolls, and lecturer at St. Clements.

As the apprehensions of popery grew daily stronger, the most eminent divines of the church of England signalized themselves in the Romish controversy: nothing of that kind was more taken notice of, than the account our author printed in the year 1676, of a conference, which himself and Dr. Stillingfleet were engaged in with Coleman and the principal of the Romish priests: this made him considered, as one who stood in the very front of the opposition to popery. His reputation, upon that account, was soon after raised to the highest pitch, by that great performance, the History of the Reformation; in which, as he took a method wholly new, so was it universally applauded. The first volume lay near a year, after it was finished, for the perusal and correction of friends; so that it was not published till the year 1679, when the affair of the popish plot was in agitation. This book procured our author an honour, never before or since paid to any writer; he had the thanks of both houses of parliament, with a desire that he would prosecute his undertaking, and complete that valuable work. Accordingly, in less than two years after he printed the second volume, which met with the same general approbation as the first; and such was his readiness in composing, that he wrote the historical part in the compass of six weeks, after all his materials were laid in order.

Writes the History of the Reformation.

As our author, though he had at this time no parochial cure, refused not his attendance to any sick person, who desired it; he was sent for, amongst others, to one, who had been engaged in a criminal amour with Wilmot, Earl of Rochester: the manner he treated her in, during her illness, gave that Lord a great curiosity of being acquainted with him: whereupon, for a whole winter, in a

His conversion of Wilmot, Earl of Rochester.

conversation of at least one evening in a week, he went over all those topics with him, upon which sceptics and men of loose morals are wont to attack the christian religion. The effect this had, first in convincing that Earl's judgment, and afterwards in making him a sincere penitent, is so fully related in the account of it published in 1681, that it will be needless to add any thing here upon that subject.*

Refuses the bishopric of Chichester.

During a great part of the time when the inquiry into the popish plot was on foot, our author was frequently sent for by King Charles, and consulted by him as to the state of the nation: his Majesty made him an offer of the bishopric of Chichester, then vacant, provided he would "entirely come into his interests." He answered, "that he did not know what might be meant by the ex- "pression; and he was unwilling to suffer any one, even to deceive "themselves by what he should say. He knew the oaths he was "to take on such an occasion, these he would religiously observe; "and desired to be excused from any further engagements or ge- "neral promises, which were liable to different constructions." But if his free access to the King did not procure him that prefer-

---

* The editor here subjoins a letter from that Lord, before his death; the original of which is in his hands.

"Woodstock Park, 25 June, 1680.

"My most honoured Dr. BURNET!

"My spirits and body decay so equally together, that I shall "write you a letter as weak as I am in person. I begin to value "churchmen above all men in the world, and you above all the "churchmen I know in it. If God be yet pleased to spare me "longer in this world, I hope in your conversation to be exalted "to that degree of piety, that the world may see, how much I ab- "hor what I so long loved, and how much I glory in repentance, "in God's service. Bestow your prayers upon me, that God "would spare my life, if it be his good will, to shew a true repent- "ance and amendment of life for the time to come. Or else, if "the Lord pleaseth to put an end to my worldly being now, that "he would mercifully accept of my death-bed repentance, and per- "form that promise he hath been pleased to make, that at what "time soever a sinner doth repent, he would receive him. Put up "these prayers, most dear Doctor, to Almighty God, for

"Your most obedient and
"languishing servant,
"ROCHESTER."

ment, which very few with the same opportunities would have missed, it engaged him to write his Majesty such a letter, as may perhaps offend the delicacy of some, yet in justice to his memory ought not to be suppressed.

" 29 Jan. $16\frac{7}{8}\frac{9}{0}$.

" May it please your MAJESTY,*

His letter to the King.

" I have not presumed to trouble your Majesty for some " months, not having any thing worthy your time to offer; and " now I choose rather this way, since the infinite duty I owe you " puts me under restraints in discourse, which I cannot so easily " overcome. What I shall now suggest to your Majesty, I do it " as in the presence of Almighty God, to whom I know I must give " an account of all my actions; I therefore beg you will be graci- " ously pleased to accept this most faithful zeal of your poor sub- " ject, who has no other design in it, than your good, and the " discharge of his own conscience.

" I must then first assure your Majesty, I never discovered any " thing like a design of raising rebellion among all those with " whom I converse; but I shall add, on the other hand, that most " people grow sullen, and are highly dissatisfied with you, and " distrustful of you. Formerly your ministers, or his Royal High- " ness, bore the blame of things that were ungrateful; but now " it falls upon yourself, and time, which cures most other distem- " pers, increases this. Your last speech makes many think, it " will be easy to fetch up petitions from all parts of England: this " is now under consultation, and is not yet determined; but I " find so many inclined to promote them, that as far as I can " judge, it will go that way. If your Majesty calls a new parlia- " ment, it is believed, that those who have promoted the petitions " will be generally elected; for the inferior sort of people are " much set upon them, and make their judgment of men from " their behaviour in that matter. The soberer sort of those, who " are ill pleased at your conduct, reckon that either the state of " your affairs beyond sea, or of your Exchequer at home, will ere " long necessitate your meeting your parliament; and that then " things must be rectified: and, therefore, they use their utmost " endeavours to keep all quiet. If your Majesty has a session in " April, for supporting your allies, I find it is resolved by many,

* The original of this letter is now in the editor's hand, wrote by the Bishop, with a memorandum how it was delivered, and when: and how it was received.

" that the money, necessary to maintain your alliances, shall be " put into the hands of the commissioners, to issue it as they shall " answer to the two houses; and these will be so chosen, that as " it is likely that the persons will be very unacceptable to you, so " they being trusted with the money, will be as a council of state, " to control all your councils. And as to your Exchequer, I do " not find any inclination to consider your necessity, unless many " things be done to put them into another disposition, than I can " observe in them. The things that will be demanded, will not " be of so easy a digestion, as that I can imagine you will ever be " brought to them, or indeed that it will be reasonable or honour- " able for you to grant them. So that, in this disorder of affairs, " it is easy to propose difficulties, but not so easy to find out that " which may remove them.

" There is one thing, and indeed the only thing, in which all " honest men agree, as that which can easily extricate you out of " all your troubles: it is not the change of a minister, or of a " council, a new alliance, or a session of parliament, but it is (and " suffer me, Sir, to speak it with a more than ordinary earnestness) " a change in your own heart, and in your course of life. And now, " Sir, if you do not with indignation throw this paper from you, " permit me (with all the humility of a subject prostrate at your " feet) to tell you, that all the distrust your people have of you, " all the necessities you now are under, all the indignation of " Heaven, that is upon you, and appears in the defeating all your " councils, flow from this, that you have not feared nor served " God, but have given yourself up to so many sinful pleasures. " Your Majesty may perhaps justly think, that many of those that " oppose you have no regard for religion, but the body of your " people consider it more than you can imagine. I do not desire " your Majesty to put on a hypocritical shew of religion, as Henry " the Third of France did, hoping thereby to have weathered the " storms of those times. No! that would be soon seen through; " and, as it would provoke God more, so it would increase jea- " lousies. No! Sir, it must be real, and the evidences of it signal: " all those about you who are the occasions of sin, chiefly the " women, must be removed, and your court be reformed. Sir, " if you will turn you to religion sincerely and seriously, you shall " quickly find a serene joy of another nature possess your mind, " than what arises from gross pleasures: God would be at peace " with you, and direct and bless all your counsels; all good men " would presently turn to you, and ill men would be ashamed, " and have a thin party. For I speak it knowingly, there is no- " thing has so alienated the body of your people from you, as

" what they have heard of your life, which disposes them to give " an easy belief to all other scandalous reports.

" Sir, this counsel is now almost as necessary for your affairs " as it is for your soul; and though you have highly offended that " God, who has been infinitely merciful to you, in preserving you " at Worcester fight, and during your long exile, and who brought " you back so miraculously, yet he is still good and gracious; and " will, upon your sincere repentance, and change of life, pardon " all your sins, and receive you into his favour. Oh, Sir, what if " you should die in the midst of all your sins! at the great tri- " bunal, where you must appear, there will be no regard to the " crown you now wear; but it will aggravate your punishment, " that being in so eminent a station, you have so much dishonour- " ed God. Sir, I hope you believe there is a God, and a life to " come, and that sin shall not pass unpunished. If your Majesty " will reflect upon your having now been twenty years upon the " throne, and in all that time how little you have glorified God, " how much you have provoked him, and that your ill example has " drawn so many after you to sin, that men are not now ashamed " of their vices, you cannot but think that God is offended with " you: and if you consider how ill your councils at home, and " your wars abroad have succeeded, and how much you have lost " the hearts of your people, you may reasonably conclude, this is " of God, who will not turn away his anger from you, till you " turn to him with your whole heart.

" I am no enthusiast, either in opinion or temper; yet I acknow- " ledge, I have been so pressed in my mind to make this address to " you, that I could have no ease till I did it: and since you were " pleased to direct me to send you, through Mr. Chiffinch's hands, " such informations as I thought fit to convey to you, I hope your " Majesty will not be offended, if I have made this use of that " liberty. I am sure I can have no other design in it, but your " good: for I know very well, this is not the method to serve any " ends of my own. I therefore throw myself at your feet, and " once more, in the name of God, whose servant I am, do most " humbly beseech your Majesty, to consider of what I have " written, and not to despise it for the meanness of the person " who has sent it; but to apply yourself to religion in earnest: " and I dare assure you of many blessings both temporal and spi- " ritual in this life, and of eternal glory in the life to come: but " if you will go on in your sins, the judgments of God will proba- " bly pursue you in this life, so that you may be a proverb to " after-ages; and, after this life, you will be for ever miserable; " and I, your poor subject that now am, shall be a witness against

" you in the great day, that I gave you this free and faithful
" warning.

" Sir, no person alive knows, that I have written to you to this
" purpose: and I choose this evening, hoping that your exercise to-
" morrow may put you into a disposition to weigh it more care-
" fully. I hope your Majesty will not be offended with this sin-
" cere expression of my duty to you; for I durst not have ven-
" tured on it, if I had not thought myself bound to it, both by the
" duty I owe to God, and that which will ever oblige me to be,

" May it please your Majesty, &c."

This is the letter, of which some mention is made in the second volume of the History, as likewise of the effect it produced: it conveys to the reader a much stronger idea of the author's character, than any description can give; and I presume, it will scarce be thought a step, which any clergyman would have taken, who aimed more at preferment than the strict discharge of his duty.

The unprejudiced part our author acted, during the whole time that the nation was inflamed with the discovery of the popish plot; his candid endeavours to have saved the lives of Staley and the Lord Stafford, both zealous papists; his temperate conduct in regard to the exclusion of the Duke of York, and the scheme of a prince regent, proposed by him in lieu of that exclusion; are all sufficiently related in the History: this only may be farther observed, that his behaviour, in this critical juncture, was so impartial, as to displease both the court and the country party; which, when animosities run high, will always be the fate of those few, who follow the dictates of their own judgment and conscience, without entering into the concerted measures of any one set of men. A character as valuable as it is rare.

His firm adherence to his friends.

In 1682, when the administration was wholly changed in favour of the Duke of York, the courtiers thought themselves at liberty to rail at our author; as if his writings and sermons against popery had been only calculated to facilitate the project of the exclusion. Yet so little did the court regard the reflections which were thrown upon him, that it being likely the mastership of the Temple would be soon vacant, the Earls of Hallifax and Clarendon obtained the King's promise of it for him; upon which he was again sent for by his Majesty, and received with peculiar marks of favour and kindness. But these were soon withdrawn, and he himself waved the promise made him, when he found it was expected he should break off correspondence with some of his best friends. And as, during the debates concerning the exclusion, he had lost all his in-

terest with Lord Shaftsbury and the country party, on account of his intimacy with the Earl of Hallifax, and his endeavours to justify, or at least to excuse the Earl's conduct in that affair; so now he chose rather to sacrifice all the advantages he might reap from that Lord's great power at court, than to abandon the society of the Earl of Essex, the Lord Russel, and Sir William Jones. As he was, at this time, much resorted to by persons of all ranks and parties, in order to avoid the necessity of returning visits, he built a laboratory, and for above a year went through a course of chemical experiments; which, as it served to enlarge his philosophical notions, and was in itself an useful, as well as an innocent amusement, so it furnished him with a proper excuse for staying much at home. The Earl (soon after created Marquis) of Hallifax complains of this retirement in a letter, which I shall here insert.

" Sir,* " Oct. 16, 1682.

" Though I was tender in advising you to wave any thing you " might think advantageous for you, yet since you have thought " fit to do it, I am at liberty to approve it; and I only desire you " will not make too hasty resolutions concerning yourself, and not be " carried so far by the sudden motions of a self-denying generosity, " as to shut the door against those advantages, which you may " expect with justice, and may receive without indecency. Only " a little patience is requisite, and in the mean time no greater re- " straint upon your behaviour and conversation, than every pru- " dent man, under your character and circumstances, would choose " voluntarily to impose on himself. For what concerns me, or " any part I might have, in endeavouring to serve you, I had ra- " ther you should hear it from any body than from myself; and " though you should never hear it from any body, I expect " from your justice you should suppose it. Your withdrawing " yourself from your old friends, on this corrupted side of the " town, is that which I can neither approve for my own sake, nor " for yours: for besides many other objections, such a total sepa- " ration will make you by degrees think less equally, both of men " and things, than you have hitherto professed to do, in what re- " lates to the public. I have no jealousies of this kind for myself " in particular, being resolved, at what distance soever, to deserve " your believing me unalterably

" Your faithful humble servant,

" Hallifax."

* The original letter is in the editor's hands.

Not long after this, a living worth 300*l.* a year, which was in the gift of the Earl of Essex, becoming void, he offered the presentation to our author, upon condition he would promise still to reside in London; adding, "that in the present posture "of affairs, his friends could not permit him to be absent from "the town." He thereupon told the Earl, "that in case he "was presented to a cure of souls, he must think himself under "such an obligation to residence, as no other considerations could "dispense with." And for this reason the benefice was given to another.

Refuses a living on the terms of not residing there.

In the year 1683, when the Rye Plot broke out, and the Earl of Essex and Lord Russel were taken into custody, all who knew his long and strict friendship with those great men, concluded he would have been involved in the same accusation. But as it had been his constant principle, that resistance was not lawful, on account of single acts of injustice or oppression, unless the very basis of the constitution was struck at; so, in order to avoid being drawn into secrets he could not approve, he had declared to all those he conversed with, that till he should be convinced that resistance was warrantable, he should think it his duty to disclose all consultations, which he was made privy to, tending to that end. By this declaration, his most intimate friends, when they entered into cabals of this nature, were sufficiently warned against communicating their designs to him. And this now proved his security.

How he avoided being involved in any plots.

His behaviour at the trial of the Lord Russel; his attendance on him in prison, and afterwards upon the scaffold, at the time of his execution; the examination he underwent before the council, in relation to that Lord's dying speech, and the boldness with which he there undertook to vindicate his memory; as also the indignation the court expressed against him, upon that occasion; are all fully set forth in the History. Thither I must likewise refer the reader, for an account of the short tour our author took to Paris, and of the unusual civilities there shewn him, by the King of France's express direction. His friends at court would indeed have persuaded him to a longer stay there; they apprehended great severities were preparing for him at home, which they represented in the strongest light: but neither their entreaties, nor the menaces of his enemies, could prevent his returning to London. He said, "that as he was conscious of no crime, which could be truly "laid to his charge, so he would not alarm himself, with the con-"tinual apprehension of what false witnesses might invent against "him; that how fatal soever his return might prove, he could not "think himself at liberty to be absent from the duties of his func-"tion." This objection was indeed soon after removed: for he

Is dismissed from his lecture and from the Rolls.

was, that very year, discharged from his lecture at St. Clement's, in pursuance of the King's mandate to Dr. Hascard, rector of that parish: and in December, 1684, by an extraordinary order from the Lord Keeper North to Sir Harbottle Grimston, he was forbid preaching any more in the chapel at the Rolls.

His travels beyond sea.

Thus at the time of King Charles's death, he was happily disengaged from all those ties, which might have rendered his stay in England any part of his duty. Upon King James's accession to the crown, therefore, he desired his leave to go out of the kingdom; which the Marquis of Hallifax easily obtained, the court regarding him as one, whom they had no prospect of gaining, and whom it was their interest therefore to keep out of the way. He first went to Paris, where he lived in great retirement, in order to avoid being involved in any of the conspiracies, which the Duke of Monmouth's friends were then forming in his favour. When that rebellion was at an end, having contracted an acquaintance with Brigadier Stouppe, a protestant officer then in the French service, he was prevailed upon to take a journey with him into Italy; though many of his friends thought it a bold venture, considering how remarkably he had signalized himself in the controversy with the Romish church. But as he was not himself of a constitution very subject to fear, so the advice of the Lord Montague, who was then at Paris, encouraged him to embrace this opportunity of seeing Rome.

The relation of these travels is so amply given in the letters our author published in the year 1687, that there will be no occasion to add any thing here concerning them; except as to one particular, which may serve as a proof, both of the great regard paid him abroad, and of his own uniform zeal for toleration. He was much caressed and esteemed by the principal men of Geneva: he saw they insisted strongly upon their consent of doctrine,* which they required all those to subscribe, who were admitted into orders. He therefore employed all the eloquence he was master of, and all the credit he had acquired amongst them, to obtain an alteration in this practice: he represented to them the folly and ill consequence of such subscriptions; whereby the honestest and worthiest men were frequently reduced to the necessity of quitting their native country, and seeking a subsistence elsewhere; whilst others of less virtue were induced to submit, and comply against their conscience, and even begin their ministry with mental equivoca-

* This is a formulary commonly known by the name of the Consensus.

tions. The warmth with which he expressed himself on this head was such, and such was the weight of his character, that the clergy at Geneva were afterwards released from these subscriptions, and only left subject to punishment or censure, in case of writing or preaching against the established doctrine.

Is well received by the Prince and Princess of Orange.

After a tour through the southern parts of France, then under persecution upon the repeal of the edict of Nantes, through Italy, Switzerland, and many places of Germany, our author came to Utrecht in the year 1686, with an intention to have settled in some quiet retreat within the Seven Provinces: but at his arrival there, he found letters from some of the principal ministers of state at the Hague, entreating him to fix upon no settlement, till he should have seen the Prince and Princess of Orange. When he was first admitted to an audience of them, he perceived that his friends in England, especially the Marquis of Hallifax and the Lady Russel, had given him such a character, as not only ensured him a most gracious reception, but soon after procured him an entire confidence. When he was made acquainted with the secret of their council, he advised the putting the fleet of Holland immediately into such order, as might give courage to their friends in Great Britain, in case matters there should come to extremities; he prevailed upon both their Highnesses, to write a letter to King James, in favour of the Bishop of London, who was then under suspension; he ventured to propose to the Princess, the explaining herself upon that nice but necessary point, of the share the Prince was to expect in the government, in case the British crown should devolve on her; and when it was determined to send over Mr. Dyckvelt as ambassador to England, our author was employed to draw his secret instructions, of which the rough draught is still extant, in his own hand.

King James insists on his being forbid that court.

The high favour now shewn him at the Hague alarmed King James, who was much incensed against him for the account he had printed of his travels; in which he had so strongly displayed the miseries those nations groan under where popery and arbitrary power prevail, that it seemed to have a sensible effect on the people of England. The King wrote two severe letters against him to the Princess of Orange; and when the Marquis d'Albeville was sent envoy to Holland, he had orders to enter upon no other matter of treaty, till our author was first forbid the court there; which, at his importunity, was done; but he continued to be trusted and employed in the same manner as before; Halewyn, Fagel, and the rest of the Dutch ministers consulting him daily.

Is prosecuted in Scot-

The report that he was then on the point of marrying a considerable fortune at the Hague, having reached the English court; in

land and England for high treason.

hopes to divert this, a prosecution of high treason was set on foot against him in Scotland. Before notice of this prosecution came to the states, he had been naturalized in order to his marriage: when, therefore, he undertook, in a letter to the Earl of Middleton, to answer all the matters laid to his charge, he added, "that "being now naturalized in Holland, his allegiance, during his "stay there, was transferred from his Majesty to the states." This expression was immediately laid hold of. So that, dropping the former prosecution, they now proceeded against him for these words, as guilty of high treason; and a sentence of outlawry passed on him. D'Albeville, thereupon, first demanded him to be delivered up; and when he saw this demand was like to prove ineffectual, he insisted that he should be banished the Seven Provinces, in pursuance of an article in the last treaty between the two nations, which related to rebels and fugitives, though it could not be pretended that he came within either of these descriptions. The states, in their answer to the British envoy's memorial, said, "That "as Dr. Burnet, by naturalization, was become a subject of their "own, they could not banish him, unless some crime was legally "proved upon him; if his Britannic Majesty had any thing to lay "to his charge, they would compel him to answer it; and if his "judges pronounced him guilty, they would punish him according "to their laws: this was all that in reason or justice could be de-"manded of them." As this answer put an end to all farther application to the states, so it gave occasion to some unwarrantable designs of seizing his person and even destroying him if he could not be taken. Of this our author had notice given him from several hands, and one in particular, by the following letter from Capt. Baxter, a gentleman of unquestioned honour and reputation, whose father was at that time steward to the Duke of Ormond's estate.

The states refuse to deliver him up.

Designs to seize upon him.

"DEAR SIR,* "Hague, March 14, 1688.

"Though I have no acquaintance with you, yet the esteem I "have for your character, and the benefit I have received by "your works, obliges me to tell you the proceedings against "you in England. I happened the other day to go into the "secretary's office, where I saw an order for 3000*l.* to be "paid the person that shall destroy you. I could hardly believe

* This letter is in the editor's hands, with the Bishop's own memorandum how he came to the knowledge of the person who wrote it, and of his character.

" my eyes, that I saw the paper, it seemed so strange to me: this " I communicated in private to my Lord Ossory, who told me it " was true, for he had it from Prince George. My Lord desired " me to be private in the thing, till I came to Holland; and then, " if I pleased, to tell you of it. Sir, I am your friend, and my ad- " vice to you is, to take an especial care of yourself, for no doubt " but that great sum will meet with a mercenary hand. Sir, you " shall never want a friend where I am—."

His marriage to Mrs. Scott.

Some months before this, our author had married Mrs. Mary Scott, a Dutch lady of a large fortune and noble extraction. Her ancestor, on the father's side, was a younger brother of the family of Buccleuch, who, upon a quarrel in Scotland, went over to Holland; his son was a brigadier-general at the siege of Middleburgh in the year 1574, and afterwards deputy for the province of Zealand in the assembly of the States General; his grandson, Apollonius Scott, who was this lady's grandfather, was president of the High Court of Justice at the Hague, and by marriage allied to the noblest houses in Zealand: on the mother's side, who was a De Ruyter, she was related to the principal families of Guelder. With these advantages of birth, she had those of an extremely agreeable person: she was well skilled in all sorts of music; drew and painted in great perfection; she spoke Dutch, English, and French equally well; she had a fine understanding, and a sweetness of temper, that charmed all her acquaintance; her knowledge in matters of religion was such, as might rather be expected from a student in divinity than from a lady. In her, our author, during the whole course of her life, found a religious, discreet, and loving friend, a dutiful wife, a prudent mistress of his family, a careful manager of his affairs, and a tender mother of his children.

His conduct at the Revolution.

The important share our author had in the whole conduct of the Revolution; his seasonable counsels in every step of that great affair; the early notice he gave of it to the court of Hanover, intimating that the success of this enterprise must naturally end in an entail of the British crown upon that illustrious house; the unreserved confidence reposed in him, both by the Prince of Orange and by the malecontents in England; the assistance he gave in drawing that Prince's declaration, and the other public papers, written to justify the undertaking; his courage in bearing a share in the hazard of that expedition, notwithstanding the peculiar circumstances of danger he was in; the association proposed and drawn by him at Exeter; the good offices he endeavoured to do King James, while detained at Feversham in the hands of a rude multitude; the care he took to protect the papists and jacobites from the insults of the army and populace, when the Dutch troops

arrived at London; his faithful adherence to the interests of the Princess of Orange, in the affair of the settlement of the crown: these, as well as the other signal services our author rendered his country, when the abdication of King James made it requisite to establish a new government, are too fully related in the History to need any farther mention here.

Declines the offer of the bishopric of Durham.

Dr. Crew, then Bishop of Durham, had acted such a part in the high commission in King James's reign, that he thought it would be no ill composition, if he could indemnify his person at the expense of his spiritual preferment; which he purposed to resign to our author, trusting to his generosity for an allowance of 1000*l.* a year out of the episcopal revenue, during his life: he sent the Lord Montague* with this proposal to the Prince of Orange; but when the message was carried to our author, he absolutely refused to accept of the see upon those terms, which he thought might justly be construed criminal. He was indeed so little anxious after his own preferment, that when the bishopric of Salisbury became void, as it did soon after King William and Queen Mary were established on the throne, he solicited for it in favour of his old friend, Dr. Lloyd, then Bishop of St. Asaph: the King answered him in a cold way, "That he had another person in view;" and the next day he himself was nominated to that see.

When the famous bill for declaring the rights and liberties of the subject, and settling the succession of the crown, was brought into the House of Lords, as our author had first intimated to the house of Hanover the probability of a limitation in their favour, King William, in preference to all his ministers, appointed him to be the person that should propose the naming the Dutchess (afterwards Electress) of Brunswick, next in succession after the Princess of Denmark and her issue. Though this settlement did not then take effect, otherwise than as it seemed implied in the exclusion of all papists; and was not explicitly established till after the Duke of Gloucester's death in 1701, (when our author had the farther merit of being chairman of the committee, to whom the bill was referred) yet it made that illustrious house from thenceforth consider him as one firmly attached to their interests, and with whom they might therefore enter into the strictest confidence. Accordingly,

His services to, and his

from that time her late Royal Highness the Princess Sophia began a correspondence with him, which lasted to her death, and of

---

* This is taken from the Bishop's MS. notes, and is confirmed by a letter, from one who was secretary of state in King William's time.

which above fifty letters are extant, all written in her own hand. Two of these I shall here insert, the one written in 1689, soon after the proposal of naming her in the act of succession had been made; the other in 1701, when that nomination took effect. correspondence with, the house of Hanover.

" MONSIEUR,*

" Comme j'ai toujours eu une " estime tres particuliere, pour " le merite de votre reverence, " et que j'ai cru la connoitre par " ses ecrits, V. R. pourra aise- " ment juger par la, combien les " marques de votre amitie m'ont " été agreables. Je vous as- " seure, que je les estime tres " particulierement, et que je " suis fort reconnoissante de la " ferveur, qu'il vous a plû te- " moigner pour mes interests, " ce qui est une aussi grande sa- " tisfaction pour ma personne, " que si vos bonnes intentions " eussent mieux reüssi. Car je " ne suis plus d'une age à pen- " ser à d'autre royaume, que ce- " lui des cieux; et pour mes " fils, ils doivent toujours estre " dediez au Roi et au royaume. " Monsieur Schutz m'a mandé " que V. R. etoit persuadé, que " sa Majesté auroit pour agrea- " ble, que j'en fis voir un en An- " gleterre; et comme mon se- " cond fils m'a voit deja mandé, " qu'il seroit bien aise d'aller, " apres la campagne, pour feli- " citer le Roi, sur son avene- " ment à la couronne, et qu'il " en demanderoit la permission " à l'Empereur, dont il est ma- " jor-general; j'ose prier V. R. " de l'assister de vos conseils,

" MY LORD,

" As I ever had a most parti- " cular esteem for your merit, " and have fancied myself ac- " quainted with you by your " writings, you may easily judge " by that, how agreeable the " marks you have given me of " your friendship must have " been. I assure you I esteem " them in a very particular man- " ner, and am very grateful for " the warmth, you have been " pleased to testify for my inte- " rests, which is as great a per- " sonal satisfaction to me, as if " your good intentions had been " more successful. For I am no " longer of an age to think of " any other kingdom, than that " of heaven; and as for my " sons, they ought always to be " devoted to the King and king- " dom. Mr. Schutz has inform- " ed me, that you were of opi- " nion, that his Majesty would " be pleased if I sent one of them " into England; and as my se- " cond son had already acquaint- " ed me, that he should be glad " to go, after the campaign, to " congratulate the King upon " his accession to the crown, " and that he would ask the " Emperor's leave for it, being a " major-general in his service; " I dare beg you to assist him

* The original letter is in the editor's hands.

" pour bien faire sa cour, lors
" qu'il fera ce voyage. S'il eut
" voulu changer de religion, il
" auroit fort bien reüssi dans
" ces affaires aupres de l'Empe-
" reur, mais il a trop de son on-
" cle, le Prince Rupert, pour
" n'estre pas ferme dans sa re-
" ligion. Il est vray qu'elle
" porte le nom de Luthere,
" mais nos ecclesiastiques d'Ha-
" novre la disent conforme à la
" religion Anglicane, et auroient
" voulu me donner le saint sacre-
" ment, dans la croyance où je
" suis. Mais je n'ai pas voulu
" donnier de scandale à ceux
" de ma religion, dont je crois
" que V. R. approuvera. Ce-
" pendant je dois la feliciter,
" qu'il a plu à Dieu de vous don-
" ner un roi et une reine d'un
" merite infini: je le prie de
" vous les conserver, et de don-
" ner à moi la satisfaction, de
" temoigner à vous, et à tout
" ce qui vous est cher, par des
" services agreables, combien je
" suis

" Tres affectionée
" à vous servir,
" SOPHIE PALATINE.

" with your advice, how to make
" his court well, when he takes
" that journey. If he would
" have changed his religion, he
" might have succeeded well in
" his affairs at the imperial
" court, but he has too much of
" his uncle, Prince Rupert, not
" to be firm in his religion. It is
" true, it bears the name of Lu-
" ther, but our divines at Hano-
" ver say it is conformable to
" that of the Church of England,
" and would have given me the
" holy sacrament in the belief
" I am in. But I would not give
" any scandal to those of my
" religion, which I believe you
" will approve. However, I ought
" to congratulate you, upon its
" having pleased God to give
" you a king and a queen of infi-
" nite merit: I pray him to pre-
" serve them to you, and to
" give me the satisfaction of
" testifying to you, and every
" one that is dear to you, by
" agreeable services, how much
" I am

" Most affectionate
" to serve you,
" SOPHIA PALATINE.

---

* " Herenhausen, 22 Juin, 1701.

" Vous avez bien de la bonté,
" Monsieur, de prendre part a
" tout ce qui regarde la gran-
" deur de la maison, où je suis
" entrée: et je dois vous re-
" mercier en particulier de l'af-
" fection, que vous m'avez te-

" Herenhausen, 22 June, 1701.

" You are very obliging, Sir,
" to take part in every thing
" that regards the grandeur of
" the house into which I am
" married; and I ought to thank
" you in particular for the affec-
" tion which you have testified

* The original is in the editor's hands.

" moigné, dans l'affaire de la suc-
" cession, qui exclut en meme
" temps tous les heritiers ca-
" tholiques, qui ont toujours
" causé tant de desordres en
" Angleterre. Je suis par mal-
" heur trop vielle, pour pouvoir
" jamais etre utile à la nation et
" à mes amis, ce qui me feroit
" pourtant beaucoup aimer la
" vie. Cependant je souhaiterois,
" que ceux qui viendront apres
" moi, se rendissent dignes de
" l'honneur, qu'ils auront: et
" que je puisse au moins trouver
" lieu de vous temoigner, par
" des services, l'estime que j'ai
" de votre merite.

" to me in the affair of the suc-
" cession, which excludes at the
" same time all catholic heirs,
" who have always caused so
" many disorders in England.
" I am unfortunately too old
" ever to be useful to the na-
" tion, and to my friends, which
" if I could be, it would make
" me much in love with life.
" However, I shall wish, that
" those who are to come after
" me may render themselves
" worthy of the honour they
" will have: and that I may at
" least find some occasion of
" testifying, by my services, the
" esteem I have for your merit.

" SOPHIE ELECTRICE." " SOPHIA ELECTRESS."

Our author maintained an unshaken credit with King William and Queen Mary, during their whole reign: indeed the King's favour was sometimes interrupted with short disgusts, at the uncourtly liberty he took of speaking his mind, even upon some subjects that he perceived were disagreeable; but the real esteem those princes had for him, will appear beyond contest, from several facts in the History, too numerous to be recapitulated here, and from some others, which I shall hereafter have occasion to mention. The use he made of this credit is the principal point a writer of his life must be concerned for: it is that alone must settle his real character, which I am satisfied has been too commonly mistaken; and never more egregiously, than by those who have represented him as an inveterate party-man. That he was stedfast to his first principles; that in all his conduct relating to the public, he was rigidly strict to these; is a truth too much to his honour, for me to dispute: but it will be easy to demonstrate, that his own particular way of thinking, as to party-matters, had no influence over him, either in his friendships, in his charities, or in his preferments, where the public was not immediately concerned. It might be tedious, I am sure it would be voluminous, here to insert all the evidences in my hands, from whence it appears, how frequently his whole interest was exerted in favour of men, who neither from their public nor their private conduct, had any reason to expect

His character as to party matters.

such services from him. *Some instances of this nature I shall have occasion elsewhere to produce; but I shall content myself here with one which is very remarkable, and may alone be sufficient to establish his reputation on this head. Some of the harshest treatment he had met with in the two former reigns had passed through the hands of the Earl of Rochester; no two men ever differed more widely in their principles, both in church and state; yet the first good offices done that Earl, with the King and Queen, (after all other applications for introduction had failed) their entire reconciliation to him, and the first advantages he reaped in consequence of that reconciliation, were owing to our author. And when the Earl of Clarendon was afterwards unhappily engaged in the conspiracy, against the government, in 1690; and some hotter whigs were for the severest methods, the Bishop became a hearty and successful advocate in his favour. These matters are but cursorily mentioned in the History, but will more fully appear from the four following original letters; the first written by the Countess of Ranelagh, the other three by the Earl of Rochester himself.

"My LORD,†

"Your Lordship knows that by my Lord Rochester's desiring "me to help him to thank you, for your forwardness to do him

---

*The History mentions the share the Bishop had in Sir John Fenwick's trial; this letter, of which the original is in the editor's hands, shews how ready he was to do acts of personal kindness to those whose designs he had the greatest aversion to.

"My LORD, "Newgate, January 20.

"My wife has acquainted me with your charitable assistance "yesterday, for an order for Bishop White to come to me, for "which I humbly thank your Lordship; but much to my trouble "to day, she tells me I am refused him. I cannot think the King "would do so hard a thing to a dying man, as to refuse him one, "he can have most satisfaction in, for the good of his soul. Since "I did not intend any offence to the government in asking for "him, your favour in procuriug an order for him to come to me "will much oblige

"Your Lordship's most humble Servant,

"J. FENWICK."

† The original is in the editor's hands.

" favours with their Majesties, (out of the sense he had, that he
" ought to be more grateful for them, because he had not at all de-
" served them from your Lordship) he had informed me, that you
" had done him such favours: and when, pursuant to his desire,
" I began to give you humble thanks for him (who is a person in
" whom I can be very sensibly obliged) I told your Lordship I was
" pleased in paying this duty, as much upon your account, as upon
" his Lordship's, as having attempted to conquer him by weapons,
" fit to be used by one of your profession and character; and I
" hoped he might be advantaged, as well by being gained by you,
" as by reaping good fruits of your meditation, with their Majes-
" ties. And now I present your Lordship, in the enclosed, with
" what appears to me an evidence; that my hopes of his making
" ingenuous returns, for your generous advances towards a friend-
" ship with him, were not groundless. Since he would sure ne-
" ver have pitched upon you, to manage an application of his,
" about an interest wherein the visible subsistence of his family is
" so deeply concerned, if he did not firmly believe the reality of
" your intentions towards him; though he have no merits of his
" towards you, or any thing else, but your christian beginnings to-
" wards him, to build that faith upon. Nor can he, in my poor
" opinion, give you a clearer proof of his being already overcome
" by you, than in choosing you to be the person, to whom he would
" in such an interest be obliged: since he thereby puts himself
" upon the peril of being faithfully yours, or a very unthankful
" man; which I do so much assure myself he will not be, that I
" humbly beg your Lordship to put this obligation upon him, to
" perfect what you have already begun to do for him, of a like na-
" ture, and to the same royal person. Who would not, I think, act
" unbecoming herself, nor the eminent station God has placed
" her in, in assisting five innocent children, who have the honour
" to be related to her royal mother, who did still, with great ten-
" derness, consider her own family, when she was most raised
" above it; especially when, in assisting them, her Majesty will
" need only to concern herself, to preserve a property, made theirs
" by the law of England, which as Queen of this kingdom she is
" obliged to maintain.

" I send your Lordship my Lord Rochester's letter to me, that
" you may see he has thoughts that justify what I have said here
" for him, and has expressed them much better than I can do; so
" that as an argument to gain your pardon, for this confused scrib-
" ble of mine, I present you with his good writing. I am,

" Your Lordship's humble and affectionate servant,

" July 13th, 1689." " K. RANELAGH."

" My Lord,*

" The good offices, your Lordship has told me, you have endeavoured to do me with the Queen, of your own accord and generosity, incline me to be desirous to be obliged to your Lordship, for the favour of presenting the inclosed petition to her Majesty. Your Lordship will see, by the reading it, the occasion and the subject of it; and I am sure I need not suggest any thing to your own kind thoughts, to add at the delivery of it, save only this, which I thought not proper to touch in the petition, that I have certainly as good a title in law to it, as any man has to any thing he possesses: as likewise that the pension is appropriated, to be paid out of a part of the revenue, which never was designed by any act of parliament, for any public use of the government: which I think has something of weight and reason, to distinguish it from those pensions, that are placed on the more public branches of the revenue.

" I know not, whether the Queen can do me any good in this affair, but I will believe her Majesty cannot but wish she could: however, I think I should have been very wanting to my children, if I had not laid this case most humbly before your Majesty; lest at one time or other, she herself might say, I had been too negligent in not making applications to her; which having now done, I leave the rest, with all possible submission, to her own judgment, and to the reflections, that some good natured moments may incline her to make towards my family. I should say a great deal to your Lordship, for my own confidence, in addressing all this to your Lordship, some passages of my life having been such, as may very properly give it that name: but, I think, whatever you would be content to hear on that subject, will be better expressed by the person, who does me the honour to deliver this to your Lordship, from

" My Lord,

" Your Lordship's most obedient servant,

" July 13, 1689." " ROCHESTER."

" My Lord,†

" Upon what account soever it is, that your Lordship is pleased to let me hear from you, I take it to be something of good fortune, whatsoever ill cause there may be in it too. Therefore I humbly thank your Lordship for the honour of yours of the 18th from Salisbury; which was sent me to this pretty place, where I

* The original is in the editor's hands.

† The original is in the editor's hands.

" love to be, as much as you do at your palace; and though I can-
" not do so much good to others, as your Lordship does there to
" all that are near you, yet I do more to myself, than I can do any
" where else. Quid sentire putas, quid credis, amice, precari? Sit
" mihi quod nunc est, etiam minus, ut mihi vivam quod superest
" ævi. Forgive this transgressional rapture, and receive my
" thanks, which I pay your Lordship again, for your kind letter.
" For indeed I do take it very kindly, that you were so much con-
" cerned, as to give me a kind hint of that unseasonable discourse,
" you came to be acquainted with, when you were last in Lon-
" don: I will make the best use of it I can, to prevent the like
" for the future, if I have any credit. And in the mean time I
" must make use of this opportunity, to calm and soften your re-
" sentments, towards this friend of mine, as you call him in the
" beginning of your letter. I will allow you as a servant to
" the King and Queen, and a subject to their crown, to have as
" great a detestation of the contrivance, as you can wish; and,
" upon my word, I can accompany you in it. But when I consi-
" der you, as once you were, a concerned friend of this Lord,
" to have a respect for his family, and particularly for my father,
" who lost not only all the honours and preferments of this world,
" but even the comforts of it too, for the integrity and uprightness
" of his heart: you must forgive me, if I conjure you, by all that
" is sacred in this generation in which we live together, by the
" character that you bear, and by the religion you profess, that
" you do not (as much as in you lies) suffer this next heir of my
" good father's name and honour, to go down with sorrow to the
" grave. I would not flatter myself, that your Lordship should
" be moved with any fondness of mine, to endeavour to bring
" to pass, what is not fit for a wise and a good man to propose;
" that would be to make a very ill use of your friendship to me,
" and I would rather be corrected myself in my own desires, than
" expose your Lordship on such an account. But I hope that
" they, who are the supreme directors of this matter under God,
" may in their great wisdom and goodness judge, that it may
" prove as much to their honour and safety too, to pass over this
" particular, as if they should pursue the strictest measures of
" justice in it. Though I am a brother, if I did not, upon
" the greatest reflection I can make, think I should be of the same
" opinion, if I were none, I would not press this matter upon
" you. For I cannot but think, that the Queen would do, and
" would be glad to avow it too, a very great thing for the memory
" of that gentleman, so long in his grave. It is upon his account,
" I am begging of your Lordship, to do all that is possible, to pre-

" serve every part and branch and member of his family, from the " least transient stain of infamy and reproach. And if God was " prevailed with by Abraham, to have saved a whole city for the " sake of ten righteous men, I hope there may be as charitable an " inclination, to spare the *debris* of our broken family, for the " sake of him who was the raiser of it.

" I ask your Lordship's pardon, for being thus importunate; for " I have great need of your help, and I hope I shall have it from " you. Losses of many and good friends I have borne, and submitted " with patience to the pleasure of Almighty God: but a calamity " of this nature, that I now deprecate, has in it something so fright- " ful, and on some accounts so unnatural; that I beg you for " God's sake, from an angry man yourself, grow an advocate for " me and for the family on this account. I am ever,

" My Lord,

" Your Lordship's most faithful humble servant,

" New Park, March 21, 1690-91." " ROCHESTER."

" My LORD,*

" I was warm, I confess, in the last letter I gave your Lordship the " trouble of, and I thank you for reproving the vehemence of my " style, in your last of the 28th; I am grown cooler, and acknow- " ledge my fault; neither did I commit it with an apprehension that " your Lordship was inexorable, or that it would be so much as " needful to desire your assistance in that matter. But you may " remember, you had used a word to me, when you were here, *an* " *attainder*; that I acknowledge sounded very harsh to me, and " when I had reflected a little more upon it, as likewise that your " Lordship did not use to speak by chance, and consequently that " you had good ground for what you said, I own it heated me all " over; which made me express my thoughts to you, with more " transport than was fit, and I will say no more of them, for fear " of running into new excesses. What your Lordship proposes for " my Lord Clarendon to desire, is perfectly agreeable to my mind; " but I know not, whether it be not a little too early, and that " such a petition might be presented with a better grace, if he " were once out of the Tower upon bail, than it would be " while he is under this close confinement. But as your Lord- " ship says, the affair of Mons must for the present put a stop to " every man's private thoughts, for that is a matter of such vast

---

* The original is in the editor's hands.

" importance to the public, that it is but very fit, that all particular considerations should give way to it, and wait the determination of that great point; I cannot but believe the French are masters of it before now, because all the letters, that came by the last post, that I could hear of, looked upon it as a thing impracticable to relieve it, but we have had no letters since Saturday. What the French will do next, whether send their men into quarters for two months, or try to follow their blow, is what men are now most anxious about. One of my old friends, with whom of late I have renewed my acquaintance, says upon all these mighty occasions, *Prudens futuri temporis exitum Caliginosa nocte premit Deus ridetque si mortalis ultra fas trepidat.* But I confess to you, I cannot be quite so overcome with philosophy as not to be concerned beforehand, at what this dark night is to bring forth. One private concern, in the midst of all these public ones, has given me a great deal of uneasiness, and I doubt not will do so to your Lordship, when I tell you how very ill my Lady Ranelagh has been these two or three days with a fever, which has almost quite destroyed her; I am afraid still for her: the last night she had a little rest; but she is so weak, and, you know, of late has been so very tender, that I am in great pain for her. I know your Lordship will be troubled to lose a very good friend and humble servant of your own, as well as a most wonderful good person to all that knew her. For my own part, I know nobody alive to whom I have so many obligations, which I am sorry to see how little I can return, when there is most need of serving her. Amongst all her favours, one that I shall never forget was, her desire and endeavours, not only to renew for me the acquaintance I formerly had with your Lordship, but to knit it closer into a friendship; in which I am always to own your Lordship's ready concurrence; and I hope I shall not fail as faithfully to perform all the part that belongs to,

" My Lord,

" Your Lordship's most faithful humble servant,

" April 2, 1691." " ROCHESTER."

Hitherto the reader has viewed our author, as a divine, only in the private character of a minister in his parish, a professor in his chair, or a preacher in his lecture; but we must now observe his conduct in a higher function. As soon as the session of parliament in 1689 was ended, he went down to his diocese; where he formed such a plan, for executing the duties of his episcopal office, as he seldom afterwards had occasion to alter.

His labours in his diocese, and episcopal function.

His primary visitation could not only be regulated by the practice of his predecessors, who contented themselves with formal triennial visitations of their diocese, in which they used always to confirm; but when he perceived the hurry, the disorder and noise, that attended these public meetings, he thought them wholly unfit for solemn acts of devotion: they seemed much properer for the exercise of an ordinary's jurisdiction according to law, than for the performance of the more christian functions of a bishop: these were inconsistent with that pomp and shew which perhaps the other required. He had always looked upon confirmation as the likeliest means of reviving a spirit of Christianity; if men could be brought to consider it, not as a mere ceremony, but as an act whereby a man became a Christian from his own choice; since upon attaining to the use of reason, he thereby renewed for himself a vow, which others had only made for him at baptism. He wrote a short Directory, containing proper rules how to prepare the youth upon such occasions: this he printed, and sent copies of it, some months beforehand, to the minister of every parish, where he intended to confirm. He every summer took a tour, for six weeks or two months, through some district of his bishopric, daily preaching and confirming from church to church, so as in the compass of three years (besides his formal triennial visitation) to go through all the principal livings in his diocese. The clergy, near the places he passed through, generally attended on him; therefore, to avoid being burthensome in these circuits, he entertained them all at his own charge. He likewise for many years, entered into conferences with them, upon the chief heads of divinity: one of which he usually opened at their meeting, in a discourse that lasted near two hours; and then encouraged those present, to start such questions or difficulties upon it, as occurred to them. Four of these discourses against infidelity, Socinianism, popery, and schism, were printed in 1694. When our author had published his Exposition of the Thirty-nine Articles, conferences of this nature seemed in some measure needless: he therefore discontinued them, in order to apply himself wholly to the work of confirmation. To be more useful in it, he disposed his annual progress, during the last ten years of his life, in the following manner. He went through five or six of the considerable market-towns every year: he fixed himself for a whole week in each of them: and though he went out every morning to preach and confirm in some parish within seven or eight miles of the place, yet at the evening-prayer, for six days together, he catechised the youth of the town, in the principal church there, expounding to them some portion of the Church Catechism every day, till he had gone through

the whole: and on Sunday he confirmed those who had been thus examined and instructed, and then inviting them all to dine with him, he gave to each an useful present of books. As the country flocked in from all parts to hear him, he was in hopes this would encourage the clergy to catechise more, and would raise an emulation in christian knowledge among the inferior sort of people, who were ignorant to a scandal.

In the intervals of parliament, when the Bishop was not upon this progress, his usual residence was at Salisbury; there he preached the Thursday's lecture, founded at St. Thomas's Church, during the whole time of his stay; he likewise preached and confirmed every Sunday morning,* in some church of that city, or of the neighbourhood round about it: and in the evening he had a lecture in his own chapel, to which great crowds resorted, wherein he explained some portion of Scripture, out of the gospels and epistles in the Liturgy. He generally came down from London some days before Lent, on purpose to prepare the youth of the two great schools for confirmation, by catechising them every week, during that season, in the cathedral church, and instructing them in the same manner as he did those in the other towns of his diocese; and to render this task of instruction more easy to the rest of his clergy, he at length published an Explanation of the Church Catechism in the year 1710.

The Bishop's consistorial court being much cried out against, as a grievance both to the clergy and laity, he endeavoured to reform it, and for some years went thither in person; but though he might do some little good by this attendance, it was so little, that he at last gave it over; for the true foundation of complaints was, the dilatory course of proceedings, and the exorbitant fees, which the Bishop had no authority to correct: nay, he could not even discharge poor suitors, who were oppressed there with vexatious

---

* He was so punctual in this, that no change of weather could ever induce him to disappoint any congregation where he was expected: and this assiduity had well nigh cost him his life in the year 1698. For, having appointed to preach and confirm at the parish church of Dinton, within twelve miles of Salisbury, on a prefixed Sunday; the rains that fell on that day, and for some days before, had so swelled a brook, which he was to cross, that his coach was overturned in the water, and his own life hardly saved by a miller, who jumped in and drew the Bishop out of the water; for which seasonable service our author paid him a yearly gratuity all the rest of his life.

prosecutions, any otherwise than by paying their fees himself, as he frequently did.

No part of the episcopal office was more strictly attended to by him than the examination of those who came for orders: in this matter the law has left the Bishop entirely at liberty to admit or refuse. He never turned them over to the care of a chaplain or archdeacon, farther than to try their skill in the learned languages. He examined them himself as to the proofs of the christian religion, the authority of the Scriptures, and the nature of the gospel-covenant. If they were deficient in those, he dismissed them at once, with proper directions how to be better prepared for a second trial: but if they were competently knowing in these essential points, he went through the other heads of divinity with less strictness. When he was once satisfied with their capacity, he next directed his discourse to their conscience: he laid before them the baseness of taking up a sacred profession merely for the lucre or subsistence it might afford; he gave them a distinct view of all the branches of the pastoral care, (of which he published a Treatise, for the use of his diocese, in 1692;) and endeavoured strongly to dissuade them from entering into holy orders, unless they were firmly resolved to perform all the duties of their function; more particularly to lead such lives as might not contradict the doctrines they were to teach. A day or two before ordination, he submitted all those whom he had accepted to the examination of the dean and prebendaries, that so he might have their approbation.

In the admission of presentees, he could not be so strict, the law having in some measure taken the judgment of their qualifications out of the ordinary; yet in this he went unusual lengths, of which I shall mention one singular instance.* In the latter part of the reign of Queen Anne, the Lord Chancellor presented the younger son of a noble family in Oxfordshire to a parsonage within his diocese, which was in the gift of the crown: Upon trial, our author found him so ignorant, that he refused to institute him; the ministry threatened him with a law-suit, but finding him resolute they at length acquiesced under the refusal. Thereupon the Bishop sent for the young gentleman, and told him, "That as his "patrons had given up the contest, and he had no design to do "him any personal injury, if he could prevail on his friends to "keep the benefice vacant, he himself would undertake the charge "of qualifying him for it." Accordingly he took such happy

* This I had from Mr. Mackney, as a fact well known to himself, and to some others now alive.

pains in his instruction, that some months after, the presentee passed examination with applause, and had institution given him to the living.

As the pastoral care, and the admitting none to it who were not duly qualified, was always uppermost in his thoughts, he concluded that he could not render a more useful service to religion, to the church, and more especially to his own diocese, than by forming under his eye a number of divines, well instructed in all the articles of their duty. He resolved, therefore, at his own charge, to maintain a small nursery of students in divinity at Salisbury, who might follow their studies, till he should be able to provide for them. They were ten in number, to each of whom he allowed a salary of 30*l.* a year: they were admitted to him once every day, to give an account of their progress in learning, to propose to him such difficulties as they met with, in the course of their reading, and to hear a lecture from him, upon some speculative or practical point of divinity, or on some part of the pastoral function, which lasted above an hour: during the Bishop's absence, the learned Dr. Whitby supplied his place, in overlooking and directing their studies. By this means, our author educated several young clergymen, who proved an honour to the church; but as this came to be considered as a present provision, with sure expectations of a future settlement, he was continually importuned, and sometimes imposed upon, as to the persons recommended to be of this number: and the foundation itself was so maliciously exclaimed at, as a designed affront upon the method of education at Oxford, that he was prevailed upon, after some years, to lay it wholly aside.

Our author was a warm and constant enemy to pluralities of livings, not indeed where the two churches lay near each other, and were but poorly endowed, for in that case he rather encouraged them; as knowing the "labourer was worthy his hire." But whensoever non-residence was the consequence of a plurality, he used his utmost endeavours to prevent it, and in some cases even hazarded a suspension rather than give institution. In his charges to the clergy, he exclaimed against pluralities, as a sacrilegious robbery of the revenues of the church: a remarkable effect of his zeal upon this subject may not be improper to be here related.* In his first visitation at Salisbury, he urged the authority of St. Bernard, who, being consulted by one of his followers, whether he might not accept of two benefices, replied, "And how will you "be able to serve them both?"—"I intend (answered the priest)

* This fact was told me by Mr. Wastefield, and is well known at Salisbury.

" to officiate in one of them by a deputy."—" Will your deputy be " damned for you too? (cried the Saint.) Believe me, you may " serve your cure by proxy, but you must be damned in person." This expression so affected Mr. Kelsey, a pious and worthy clergyman there present, that he immediately resigned the rectory of Bemerton, worth 200*l.* a year, which he then held with one of a greater value. Nor was this christian act of self-denial without its reward; for though their principles in church matters were very opposite, the Bishop conceived such an esteem for him, from this action, that he not only prevailed with the chapter to elect him a canon, but likewise made him Archdeacon of Sarum, and gave him one of the best prebends in the church.

In the point of residence, our author was so strict that he never would permit his own chaplains to attend upon him, after they were once preferred to a cure of souls, but obliged them to be constantly resident at their livings. Indeed he considered himself as under the same obligation, as pastor of the whole diocese, and never would be absent from it, but during his necessary attendance on parliament; from which, as soon as the principal business of the nation was dispatched, he always obtained leave to depart, in order to return to his function. And though King William, upon his going over to Ireland or Flanders, always enjoined him to attend upon Queen Mary, and assist her with his faithful counsel on all emergencies; yet he would not, upon such occasions, accept of lodgings at Whitehall, but hired a house at Windsor, in order to be within his own bishopric, and yet near enough to the court, to pay his duty twice a week, or oftener, if business required it.

His universal principle of toleration extends to nonjurors.

No principle was more deeply rooted in him than that of toleration; it was not confined to any sect or nation, it was as universal as Christianity itself: he exerted it in favour of a nonjuring meeting-house at Salisbury, which he obtained the royal permission to connive at; and when the preacher there, Dr. Beach, by a seditious and treasonable sermon had incurred the sentence of the law, our author not only saved him from punishment, but even procured his pardon, without the terms of a public recantation, upon which it was first granted; as may be collected from the following letters, the one from the Earl of Nottingham, then secretary of state, the other from Dr. Beach himself.

" My Lord,* " Whitehall, 29th March, 1692.

" I have acquainted the Queen, at the cabinet council, with " what your Lordship writes in behalf of Dr. Beach; and though

* The original is in the editor's hands.

" her Majesty is always inclined to shew mercy, and especially " to such as your Lordship recommends to her favour; yet since " the crime and the scandal of it has been very public, her Majesty " thinks the acknowledgment of it should be so too: and there- " fore would have him make it in the church. When this is " done, your Lordship's intercession will easily prevail. I am, " with great respect, " My Lord,

" Your Lordship's most humble and faithful servant,

" NOTTINGHAM."

" My LORD,*

" With all due deference of honour, and with all the respectful " regard, that can be correspondent to the no less generous, than " acceptable message, which I received from your Lordship by " Dr. Geddes, I humbly tender this to your Lordship, hoping " it may be favourably received, in lieu of my personal attend- " ance, which shall be readily paid (as it is due) at any time. Dr. " Geddes has delivered me the desirable tidings of your Lord- " ship's free resolution, to rescue me from the farther prosecution " of that unhappy verdict I labour under. It is my desire, being " freed from this troublesome storm, to live in peace and quiet, " without disturbance of the government in general, and of any " person in particular: and I cannot but deeply respect your oblig- " ing readiness to relieve me, because it is not clogged with any " bitter conditions or reserves that would lessen the favour. " What your Lordship has resolved, is what I humbly desire, and " do not doubt but your Lordship will pursue. The sooner the " favour can be accomplished, and with the less noise before " term, the more it will be endeared to, and challenge all grati- " tude from, " My Lord,

" Your much obliged and obedient servant,

" WM. BEACH."

Yet when this spirit of moderation, of which the nonjurors felt the good effects, was extended to the dissenters, our author's enemies represented him, as betraying the church into their hands; though he was really taking the most effectual means to bring them over, not indeed by compulsion, but by the more christian methods of charity and persuasion: in which he was so successful, that many dissenting families in his diocese were by him brought

---

* The original is in the editor's hands.

over to the communion of our church, in which they still continue; and of two presbyterian preachers, who were well supported when he first came to Salisbury, one was soon after obliged to quit the place, and the other but poorly subsisted in it.

His scheme for augmenting poor livings in his own diocese.

He perceived that the chief strength of the sectaries lay in the market-towns; the livings there were most commonly in the gift of the lord chancellor; and as the Lord Somers, during his enjoyment of the seals, left the nomination to those in the diocese of Sarum to the Bishop; he endeavoured to place in them none but learned, pious, and moderate divines, as being the best qualified to prevent the growth of schism. But as the benefices were generally small, and a poor church will be too often served by as poor a clerk; our author determined to obviate this difficulty, by bestowing on these cures the prebends in his gift, as they became vacant; and, until such vacancy happened, out of his own income he allowed the minister of every such church a pension of 20*l.* a year:* when the prebend itself was conferred upon him, the Bishop insisted on his giving a bond to resign it, if ever he quitted the living. Though this matter had been laid before the most eminent prelates and divines of our church, as well as the most learned among the canonists, who highly approved the design; yet it was so warmly opposed by some of the clergy, that in order to raise no farther strife in the church, our author was prevailed on to relinquish this project, and give up all the bonds he had taken. But as he could not, without the tenderest concern, behold the destitute condition of these poor benefices, most of which were attended with the largest cure of souls; so his disappointment in this scheme, he had formed for his own bishopric, only gave occasion to a more universal plan, which he projected for the improvement of all the small livings in England, and which was liable to no exception. This he pressed forward with so much success, that it terminated at length in an act of parliament, passed in the second year of Queen Anne, "for the Augmentation of the Maintenance of the poor Clergy."

His scheme for augmenting all the poor livings in England.

He had first laid this proposal before Queen Mary, who had undertaken to obtain the King's approbation and consent; after her death, the prospect of peace in 1696, and the actual conclusion of it in 1697, seemed to furnish a proper opportunity, for offering the same scheme to King William, which he did by the two following memorials.

---

* This appears from his steward's accounts, and was confirmed to me by Mr. Wastefield.

MEMORIAL concerning the First Fruits and Tenths. Given in to the King in January, 1696.*

" The tenths and first fruits were first laid on by popes, on " pretence of supporting the holy war; in the twenty-sixth year " of the reign of King Henry the Eighth, these were given to the " crown; and since that time have been granted away in pensions " by dormant warrants. They are now in the hands of the Duke " of St. Albans, Countess of Plymouth, Countess of Bristol, Earl " of Bath, Earl of Oxford, and a few others. This revenue may " justly be called in question, as unlawful and sacrilegious in its " nature; the applying it to a good use is the best way to justify it.

" The condition of many livings in this kingdom is most mise- " rable; many have not 20*l.* and in some places, three of them " put together do not amount to 40*l.* a year. A poor clergy- " man may be scandalous, but he must be contemptible and ig- " norant. To this, in a great measure, we owe the atheism and " impiety, the sects and divisions, that are spread over the nation.

" It would be a noble demonstration, both of zeal for the " honour of God and religion, and affection for the church of " England, if the King would appropriate this revenue, to the rais- " ing of the livings in this nation to some just proportion, be- " ginning at those in corporations, and those within the King's " gift, but not excluding others, upon condition that the King " shall have his turn in presenting, in proportion to the augmen- " tation that shall be made by this provision.

" A corporation might be settled, as was from the reign of " Queen Elizabeth down to that of Charles the First, with power " to receive the gifts of charitable persons, to the same pious " end: and all bishops, deans, and chapters, might be obliged to " pay towards it a fourth or fifth of every fine that they received.

" This, by the blessing of God, would make the concerns of " religion and of the church put on another face, it would much " raise his Majesty's name and character in the present and in all " succeeding ages; by this the King gives away nothing that is " in his own possession; he only gives away the power of grant- " ing such new pensions as may be vacant in his time And there " is little doubt to be made, (besides a blessing from God, which " may be expected upon so noble a design) that this would be " made up to the crown by parliament: and would also give such " an impression of the King as would have good effect on all his " affairs."

---

* The Memorial in the Bishop's own hand, with a memorandum when it was delivered, is in the editor's hands.

A Second MEMORIAL concerning the Tenths and First Fruits. Given in to the King in December, 1697.*

"It is humbly proposed, that his Majesty would be pleased to "consider, how proper it will be at this time, to declare his reso- "lution of applying the first fruits and tenths to mending the "state of the poor livings in England.

"The peace being now concluded, this will be a noble begin- "ning of his Majesty's reign in peace, and a suitable return to "God, for his great blessings on his royal person and affairs; it "will gain him the hearts of all true friends of the church of "England; and, since the boroughs are generally the worst "served, their livings being universally very small, this may pro- "bably have a great effect on all the King's affairs, perhaps on "the suceeeding elections of parliament.

"If his Majesty be resolved to do it, it is humbly suggested, "that he would declare his resolution in the Treasury, and appoint "the commissioners to acquaint the House of Commons with it, "who will no doubt very quickly make it up to the crown. Upon "this, it is proposed, that the King will order a commission for "managing this fund, and making it most effectual to the end "intended by it.

"The persons proper for such a commission, would be the two "Archbishops, with two other bishops, the Lord Chancellor, the "Lord Privy Seal, the two Secretaries of State, the First Commis- "sioner of the Treasury, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, the "two Chief Justices, the Chief Baron, and the King's Attorney- "General."

Though this proposal was highly acceptable to the King; though it was strongly seconded by the Princess of Denmark, who desired copies to be given her of the two foregoing memorials; yet underhand it met with such opposition amongst the ministry, as for a time obstructed the execution of it. The Bishop would not however be discouraged in it; but renewed his solicitations upon this head so powerfully in the year 1701, that nothing but the death of King William could have prevented its then taking effect. He had concerted his measures upon this occasion, with the Earl of Godolphin (who afterwards carried this design into execution) and with the Lord Somers, whose letter upon that subject I shall here insert.

* The Memorial in the Bishop's own hand, with a memorandum when he delivered it, is in the editor's hands.

" My Lord,* " 22d Nov. 1701.

" I acknowledge the honour of your Lordship's letter of the " 17th with great thankfulness; I wish it may lie in my power to " contribute to the excellent design you propose; no man will " enter into it more willingly, nor shall labour in it more heartily. " The point of the first fruits and tenths is what I have proposed " several times, with much earnestness, but without success. When " I have the happiness of seeing your Lordship, we shall, I hope, " discourse at large upon the whole subject. In the mean time " allow me to assure you, that I am with great and sincere respect,

" My Lord,

" Your Lordship's most obedient humble servant,

" Somers."

Having thus given a short account of every principal part of our author's conduct, that properly relates to his episcopal character, of which I thought the reader would be best able to judge, if it were laid before him in one general view, without any strict regard to the series of time; I shall now return to the thread of my narration, by relating the other remarkable incidents of his life, in the order in which they happened.

The death of Queen Mary and of Archbishop Tillotson.

The year 1694 proved greatly unfortunate to him, I might have said to the whole nation, by the death of Archbishop Tillotson; a name too well known to need an encomium; whose funeral sermon our author preached, and whose vindication he undertook, against a writer who had virulently attacked his memory. This great loss to the church was soon after followed by a greater, that of the excellent Queen Mary, who had always honoured our author with a high degree of favour and confidence. The strong impression her uncommon talents and shining qualities had made upon him, occasioned that Essay on her Character, which he published in the year 1695.

He is one of the ecclesiastical commission to recommend to preferments.

During her life the affairs and promotions in the church had wholly passed through her hands; it was an article of government for which the King thought himself unqualified, yet was unwilling to commit to the care of his ministers: upon her death, therefore, a commission was granted to the two archbishops, to our author, and to three other prelates; whereby they, or any three of them, were appointed to recommend to all bishoprics, deaneries, or other vacant preferments in the church, signifying the same to his Majesty by writing, under their hands: and during the King's ab-

* The original is in the editor's hands.

sence beyond sea, they were empowered, of their own authority, to present to all benefices in the gift of the crown, that were under the value of 140*l.* a year. A like commission was granted in the year 1700, and the Bishop of Salisbury continued still to be of the number. It would be tedious here to enumerate the several marks King William gave him of his friendship, during the whole course of his reign; but though he obtained of his Majesty employments, pensions, and gratuities for others, even to the value of 10,000*l.* to one person now living; yet there was not a single instance wherein he solicited a favour for himself or his family: on the contrary, he declined preferment when it was offered to him.

Is made preceptor to the Duke of Gloucester.

In the year 1698, when it became necessary to settle the Duke of Gloucester's family, the King sent the Earl of Sunderland with a message to the Princess of Denmark, acquainting her, "That "he put the whole management of her son's household into her "hands, but that he owed the care of his education to himself "and his people, and therefore would name the persons for that "purpose." Accordingly the Earl of Marlborough being nominated his governor, the Bishop of Salisbury was appointed his preceptor. He was then retired into his diocese, having lately lost his wife by the small-pox. He took that occasion, therefore, to wave the offer of this important charge; though he was assured that the Princess had testified her approbation of the King's choice. He wrote to the Earl of Sunderland, to use his interest, that he might be excused, and in return received from him the following letter:—

Which he endeavours to decline.

"My Lord,* "June 29.

"I am extremely troubled for your loss, it being, by all that I "have heard, a very great one: but you must not leave serving "the public upon any private consideration. I intend to be in "town next week, and if I have any credit at all, you may be "assured that you shall be sent for, and shall come thither, unless "you will fall out with all your friends, and with the King in the "first place. I am, with great truth,

"My Lord,

"Your most faithful humble servant,

"SUNDERLAND."

Our author wrote likewise to his friend Archbishop Tennison, desiring him to wait on the King in his name, and entreat his Majesty to allow him to decline this employment: the Archbishop

* The original letter is in the editor's hands.

replied, and offered many arguments to persuade him to accept it; which only produced a second letter, stronger than the former, and to the same purpose: to which his Grace, by King William's direction, returned the following answer:—

"My Lord,* "Lambeth, June 28, 1698.

"I received your second, in which you seem to insist on the "contents of the first; upon that account, I waited on the "King, not being willing to decline doing what you so earnestly "pressed. The King expressed himself with great tenderness "upon this subject; he commanded me to let you understand, "that he had sent for you before this time, if this misfortune had "not happened; and that he still desires you to come, as soon as "with decency you can. He looks upon you as a divine, who, "in such cases, had comforted many, and thinks it will look best "not to suffer such a cross to get such power over you, as to "make you decline so public a service. He spoke to this effect "without my urging my private opinion, which is what it was in "my first. I heartily pray for you, I pity you as my own brother, "but I cannot bring myself in this, to be of your Lordship's "opinion. It is true, if no steps had been made in this affair, "your excuse would the easier have made its way; but seeing "things are so far advanced, it seems not proper to go back. If "upon this, that hopeful Prince shall fall into such hands as are "unfit, your Lordship would then reflect upon your having de-"clined the service with pain and grief. Pray, next post, let me "have some answer, our good master the King may be pleased "with. I am, "My Lord,

"Your affectionate brother,

"Thos. Cantuar."

As the rest of the Bishop's friends concurred in the same strain, earnestly pressing him not to refuse a station, wherein he might do his country such signal service, as in the right education of the Duke of Gloucester; he thought it might be construed obstinacy not to submit. He therefore signified his compliance, in his answer to the Archbishop of Canterbury, who thereupon wrote him another letter, which I shall here insert.

"My Lord,† "Kensington, July 4, 1698.

"Late last night the King spoke again about your coming up; "the time you mention (Friday fortnight) he thinks much too

* The original is in the editor's hands.

† The original is in the editor's hands.

" long; he therefore commanded me to send an express to you,
" in order to your coming up as soon as possibly you can: he
" having time, little enough to settle that matter, before his going
" beyond sea, which will not now be long; because the parlia-
" ment may speedily end, perhaps this day. He considers very
" graciously the commendableness of your submission in these
" circumstances, which is indeed worthy of you. Pray hasten as
" much as you possibly can, and may God bring you safely
" hither. I am " Your affectionate brother,

" THO. CANTUAR."

" P. S. The parliament rises to-morrow, and the King goes soon
" to Windsor, where you may wait on his Majesty."

* When our author, upon his arrival at Windsor, had his first audience of the King, he assured his Majesty, it was no longer his intention to decline so honourable an employment, as the educating a prince so nearly related to the crown, since his royal master thought him worthy of that trust; but as the discharge of his duty in this station must confine him constantly to court, which was inconsistent with his episcopal function, he desired leave to resign his bishopric. The King was much surprised at the proposal, to which he would by no means consent: however, finding our author persisted in it, he was at length prevailed on to agree that the Duke should reside all the summer at Windsor, and that the Bishop should have ten weeks allowed him every year to visit the other parts of his diocese.

The method he pursued in the Duke of Gloucester's education, and the amazing progress made in it, during the short time that prince was under his care, are mentioned in the History: to which I shall only add, that he conducted himself in such a manner, that the Princess of Denmark ever after retained a peculiar regard for him, of which he received some sensible marks when she came to the throne, even at times when he was engaged in a public opposition to the measures of her ministers.

His marriage with Mrs. Berkeley.

The assiduous attendance our author was obliged to, whilst he was preceptor to the Duke, and the tender age of his own children, made it requisite to look out for a proper mistress to his family. He fixed upon Mrs. Berkeley, a lady of uncommon degrees of knowledge, piety, and virtue; as may appear from her

* This fact was related to the editor by Mr. Mackney, who then attended the Bishop to Windsor, and had it from his own mouth.

Method of Devotion, which bore several impressions in her lifetime; and was reprinted after her death, with an account of her life, by Dr. Goodwyn (the late Archbishop of Cashels in Ireland), which renders it unnecessary here to enlarge upon her character.

He writes an Exposition of the Thirty-nine Articles.

In the year 1699, our author published his Exposition of the Thirty-nine Articles of the Church of England. He was first engaged in this undertaking by Queen Mary, who had so highly approved of his Four Discourses to the Clergy, and his Treatise of the Pastoral Care, that she, as well as Archbishop Tillotson, judged no man so proper as himself, to render this important service to the church. At their entreaty, therefore, he undertook this laborious task, which he performed in less than the compass of a year, though he kept it by him five years for correction. It was first revised, and in many places altered by Dr. Tillotson, whose opinion of this performance will best be learnt from one of his own letters.

"My Lord,* "Lambeth-House, Oct. 23, 1674.

"I have with great pleasure and satisfaction read over the great "volume you sent me, and am astonished to see so vast a work "begun and finished in so short a time. In the article of the "Trinity you have said all that I think can be said on so obscure "and difficult an argument. The Socinians have just now pub-"lished an Answer to us all, but I have not had a sight of it. "The negative articles against the church of Rome you have "very fully explained, and with great learning and judgment. "Concerning these, you will meet with no opposition amongst "ourselves. The greatest danger was to be apprehended from "the points in difference between the Calvinists and remonstrants, "in which you have shewn not only great skill and moderation, "but great prudence, in contenting yourself to represent both "sides impartially, without any positive declaration of your own "judgment. The account given of Athanasius's Creed, seems to "me nowise satisfactory; I wish we were well rid of it. I pray "God long to preserve your Lordship, to do more such services "to the church. I am,

"My Lord,

"Yours most affectionately,

"Jo. Cant."

This work was afterwards perused and approved by Archbishop Tennison, Archbishop Sharp, Bishop Stillingfleet, Patrick, Lloyd,

* An attested copy of this letter, in the hand-writing of the present Archbishop of Dublin, is in the editor's hands.

Hall, and Williams; the last of these strongly recommended the considering them only as articles of peace, in which men were bound to acquiesce without contradiction; not as articles of faith, which they were obliged to believe. There might perhaps be reason to wish, that they had only been imposed as such, but there was nothing in our constitution to warrant an expositor in giving that sense to them: the book likewise passed through the hands of many learned men in both universities, and was generally applauded. Upon its first appearance in print, it was universally well received: those who had been employed to criticise every work the Bishop had published for some years, were silent as to this. Indeed, when the convocation met, and the two houses were warmly engaged in disputes relating to their respective privileges, in which our author bore a considerable share, the lower house, in resentment, brought up a general censure of his Exposition, but refused to point out the particulars upon which it was grounded: though the upper house remonstrated, how necessary that was, in order to enable them to concur in the censure, which they could not pretend to do till they were informed of the reasons for it.

For five or six years before his death, our author grew more abstracted from the world, than the situation he had been in, during the former parts of his life, had permitted. To avoid the distraction of useless visits, he settled in St. John's Court, in Clerkenwell, and kept up only an intercourse with his most select and intimate acquaintance: their names will be an honour to his memory, and therefore I beg leave to mention the most considerable amongst them. Such were the late Dukes of Marlborough, Newcastle, and Shrewsbury; the Earls of Godolphin, Cowper, and Hallifax; the Lord Somers and Pelham; the present Dutchess Dowager of Marlborough; the Dukes of Montrose and Roxburgh; the Lord Townshend, the Lord King, the Master of the Rolls, Sir Joseph Jekyll, the Lord Chief Justice Eyre, and Mr. Baillie, of Jerviswood, who, as he was his near relation, so he always lived with him in the friendship and freedom of a brother.

His diligence in his calling whilst in London.

I have said nothing in relation to the part our author acted in parliament, in convocation, or in the several matters of state, wherein he was consulted and employed; this is fully and impartially set forth in the History itself. Yet I ought to inform the reader, that the Bishop's necessary attendance on the House of Lords, in the winter season, was not a means of abating his diligence in the duties of his calling, though it diverted the exercise of it from the proper scene, his diocese. For, whilst he staid in town, he failed not of preaching every Sunday morning, in some church or other in London; and as he was much followed, he was generally engaged for

charity sermons, at which he himself was always a liberal contributor: in the Sunday evening, he had a lecture in his own house, upon some select portion of Scripture; to which many persons of distinction resorted, though at first it was only intended for the benefit of his own family.

As he lived to see the turn which the affairs of Great Britain, I might say of Europe, took upon the death of Queen Anne, for whom he had always the highest personal veneration, but whom he thought unwarily engaged in measures which might have proved fatal; I need not say, with what comfort he saw a succession take place, of which he himself had been the first mover, and a family established, in whose interests he had been so stedfast and zealous, and by whom he had been so much entrusted. He published a third volume, as a supplement to his two former, of the History of the Reformation, at the time of his late Majesty's arrival in England, to whom it was dedicated. And, as if his life had only been prolonged to see this great work complete, and the protestant interest in a fair prospect of security, he died soon after.

Writes a third volume as a supplement to his History of the Reformation.

Thus I have endeavoured to give some account of our author's behaviour, in all the different stations he passed through in public: it may be expected, I should say something of him in domestic life.

His domestic character.

His time, the only treasure of which he seemed covetous, was employed in one regular and uniform manner. His constant health permitted him to be an early riser; he was seldom in bed later than five o'clock in the morning during the summer, or than six in the winter. Private meditation took up the two first hours and the last half hour of the day. His first and last appearance to his family was at the morning and evening prayers, which were always read by himself, though his chaplains were present. He drank his tea in company with his children, and took that opportunity of instructing them in religion; he went through the Old and New Testament with them three times, giving his own comment upon some portion of it, for an hour every morning. When this was over, he retired to his study, where he seldom spent less than six, often more than eight hours in a day. The rest of his time was taken up with business, exercise, and necessary rest, or bestowed on friendly visits and cheerful meals. As he kept an open table, in which there was plenty without luxury, so no man was more pleased with innocent mirth there, no man encouraged it more, or had a larger fund of entertainment to contribute towards it. His equipage, like his table, was decent and plain; and all his expenses denoted a temper generous, but not profuse. The episcopal palace, when he came to Salisbury, was thought one of the worst; and when he died, was one of the best in England.

His time, how employed.

An affectionate husband.

The character I have given his wives, will scarce make it an addition to his, that he was a most affectionate husband. His tender care of the first, during a course of sickness that lasted for many years, and his fond love to the other two, and the deep concern he expressed for their loss, were no more than their just due, from one of his humanity, gratitude, and discernment.

His care of his children's education.

His love to his children, perhaps accompanied with too much indulgence, was not exerted in laying up for them a hoard of wealth out of the revenues of the church, but in giving them a noble education; though the charge of it was wholly maintained out of his private fortune. At seven years old, he entered his sons into Latin, giving each of them a distinct tutor, who had a salary of 40*l.* a year, which was never lessened on account of any prebend the Bishop gave him. After five or six years had perfected his sons in the learned languages, he sent them to the University; the eldest a gentleman commoner to Trinity College in Cambridge, the other two commoners to Merton College in Oxford; where, besides the college tutor, they had a private one, to assist them in their learning, and to overlook their behaviour. In the year 1706, he sent them abroad for two years to finish their studies at Leyden; from whence two of them took a tour through Germany, Switzerland, and Italy. The eldest and youngest, by their own choice, were bred to the law, and the second to divinity.

His firmness in his friendships.

In his friendships, our author was warm, open-hearted, and constant: from those I have taken the liberty to mention, the reader will perceive, that they were formed upon the most prudent choice, and I cannot find an instance of any one friend he ever lost, but by death. It is a common, perhaps a just observation, that a hearty friend is apt to be as hearty an enemy; yet this rule did not hold in our author. For though his station, his principles, but above all his stedfast adherence to the Hanover succession, raised him many enemies; yet he no sooner had it in his power to take severe revenges on them, than he endeavoured, by the kindest good offices, to repay all their injuries, and overcome them by returning good for evil. I have already given some instances of this nature here, and many more will occur to the reader in the History.

His conduct to those in employment under him.

The Bishop was a kind and bountiful master to his servants, whom he never changed, but with regret and through necessity: friendly and obliging to all in employment under him, and peculiarly happy in the choice of them; especially in that of the steward to the bishopric and his courts, William Wastefield, Esq. (a gentleman of a plentiful fortune at the time of his accepting this post), and in that of his domestic steward, Mr. Mackney. These were both men of approved worth and integrity, firmly attached to his

interests, and were treated by him, as they well deserved, with friendship and confidence. To them I must appeal for the truth of many facts here related, particularly those concerning his labours in his diocese; from them I likewise had an account of his extensive charities.

His charities.

This was indeed a principal article of his expense, impossible now to fix as to all the particulars; our author being as secret as he was liberal in those charities, which he distributed with his own hands: yet the greatest part of them could not be hid from the persons who were entrusted with the management of his affairs. His gifts, for the augmentation of small livings, of 100*l.* at a time; his constant pensions to poor clergymen, to their widows, to students for their education at the universities, and to industrious families that were struggling with the world; the frequent sums given by him towards the repairs or building of churches and vicarage houses; his liberal contribution to all public collections, to the support of charity-schools (one of which for fifty children at Salisbury was wholly maintained by him), and the many apprentices at different times put out to trades at his charge; were charities that could not be wholly concealed. Nor were his alms confined to one nation, sect, or party; want and merit in the object were the only measures of his liberality. Thus when Mr. Martin (minister of Compton Chamberlein), for refusing to take the oaths to the government, soon after the Revolution, had forfeited his prebend in the church of Sarum, the Bishop, out of his own income, paid him the yearly value of it, during his life. His usual allowance for charity was 500*l.* a year, which he often exceeded, particularly in the two years that he was preceptor to the Duke of Gloucester, in which time this article amounted to 2,100*l.* In a word, no object of Christian compassion ever came within his knowledge without receiving a proportionable relief. He looked upon himself, with regard to his episcopal revenue, as a mere trustee for the church, bound to expend the whole, in the maintenance of a decent figure suitable to his station, in hospitality, and in acts of charity. And he had so faithfully balanced this account, that at his death, no more of the income of his bishopric remained to his family,* than what was barely sufficient for the payment of his debts.

His care of the revenue of the see.

But if he was thus liberal of his own purse, he was not the less strict in preserving the revenues of his see, for the benefit of his

* This Mr. Mackney, his steward, assured me appeared in his accounts.

successors, of which this remarkable instance may suffice.* One of his predecessors had converted a large estate at Monckton Farley, held of the Bishop, from a lease of one and twenty years, into an estate for three lives, and had received a valuable consideration for so doing. Our author resolved, if possible, to restore it to the former tenure, as being much more advantageous to the see: when, therefore, one of the lives fell, he refused to renew; and when, the other two lives being very unhealthy, Sir John Talbot offered him 1000*l.* for the renewal of that one life, and the change of the other two, he still persisted in his refusal: till at length the tenant, apprehending that the whole estate would have fallen in, agreed to accept of a lease for one and twenty years, for which the Bishop would take no more than 400*l.* fine to himself; but made it part of his agreement, that the tenant should pay 10*l.* yearly rent, to the minister of the parish, as a perpetual augmentation to that poor living, besides the usual reserved rent to the see.

His death. In March 1714-15, being the seventy-second year of his age, our author was taken ill of a violent cold, which soon turned to a pleuretic fever: he was attended in it, by his worthy friend and relation Dr. Cheyne, who treated him with the utmost care and skill: but finding the distemper grew to a height which seemed to baffle all remedies, he called for the assistance of Sir Hans Sloane and Dr. Mead, who quickly found his case was desperate. His character was too well known, to induce any one to conceal from him the danger his life was in. He bore the notice of it with that calm resignation to Providence, which had always supported him under the severest trials. As he preserved his senses to the last, so he employed the precious remnant of life in continual acts of devotion, and in giving the best advice to his family; of whom he took leave, in a manner that shewed the utmost tenderness, accompanied with the firmest constancy of mind. And whilst he was so little sensible of the terrors of death, as to embrace its approach with joy, he could not but express a concern for the grief he saw it caused in others. He died on the seventeenth day of that month.

It would be a presumption in me to attempt the drawing his character, when it has been done by so elegant a hand, as that of the late Marquis of Hallifax: as this beautiful piece, I be-

---

* This I had from the minister of Monckton Farley, and many others at the time, and it was confirmed to me since by Mr. Wastefield and Mr. Mackney.

lieve, has never been made public, the reader will pardon my inserting it here.

His character, by the Marquis of Hallifax.

" Dr. Burnet* is like all men who are above the ordinary level, " seldom spoke of in a mean, he must either be railed at or ad- " mired; he has a swiftness of imagination that no other man " comes up to: and as our nature hardly allows us to have " enough of any thing, without having too much, he cannot at all " times so hold in his thoughts, but that at some time they may " run away with him; as it is hard for a vessel, that is brimful, " when in motion, not to run over; and therefore the variety of " matter, that he ever carries about him, may throw out more " than an unkind critic would allow of. His first thoughts may " sometimes require more digestion, not from a defect in his judg- " ment, but from the abundance of his fancy, which furnishes too " fast for him. His friends love him too well to see small faults; " or, if they do, think that his greater talents give him a privilege " of straying from the strict rules of caution, and exempt him " from the ordinary rules of censure. He produces so fast, that " what is well in his writings calls for admiration, and what is in- " correct deserves an excuse; he may in some things require " grains of allowance, which those only can deny him, who are " unknown or unjust to him. He is not quicker in discerning " other men's faults, than he is forgiving them; so ready, or ra- " ther glad to acknowledge his own, that from blemishes they " become ornaments. All the repeated provocations of his in- " decent adversaries have had no other effect than the setting his " good-nature in so much a better light; since his anger never yet " went farther than to pity them. That heat, which in most other " men raises sharpness and satire, in him glows into warmth for " his friends, and compassion for those in want and misery. As " dull men have quick eyes in discerning the smaller faults of " those that nature has made superior to them, they do not miss " one blot he makes: and being beholden only to their barrenness " for their discretion, they fall upon the errors which arise out of " his abundance; and by a mistake into which their malice betrays " them, they think that by finding a mote in his eye, they hide " the beams that are in their own. His quickness makes writing " so easy a thing to him, that his spirits are neither wasted nor " soured by it: the soil is not forced, every thing grows, and

---

* The copy from which this is printed, was taken from one given to the Bishop, in the Marquis of Hallifax's own hand-writing, which was in the editor's hands, but is at present mislaid.

" brings forth without pangs; which distinguishes as much what
" he does, from that which smells of the lamp, as a good palate
" will discern between fruit which comes from a rich mould, and
" that which tastes of the uncleanly pains that have been be-
" stowed upon it. He makes many enemies, by setting an ill-
" natured example of living, which they are not inclined to fol-
" low. His indifference for preferment, his contempt not only of
" splendour, but of all unnecessary plenty, his degrading himself
" into the lowest and most painful duties of his calling, are such
" unprelatical qualities, that let him be never so orthodox in other
" things, in these he must be a dissenter. Virtues of such a
" stamp are so many heresies in the opinion of those divines who
" have softened the primitive injunctions, so as to make them suit
" better with the present frailty of mankind. No wonder then if
" they are angry, since it is in their own defence; or that, from a
" principle of self-preservation they should endeavour to suppress
" a man, whose parts are a shame, and whose life is a scandal to
" them."

A LIST

OF

BISHOP BURNET'S WORKS.

A Dialogue between a Conformist and Nonconformist - - 1669
A Vindication of the Constitution of the Church and State of Scotland - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - 1672
The Mystery of Iniquity Unveiled - - - - - - - - - 1673
An Account given by T. Ken, a Jesuit, of the Truth of Religion, Examined - - - - - - - - - - - - 1674
Memoirs of Duke Hamilton, in folio - - - - - - - - 1676
An Account of a Conference with Coleman, &c. - - - 1676
The History of the Reformation. First volume - - - - 1679
Second volume - - - - - - - - - - - - - - 1681
Third volume - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - 1715
The Abridgement of the History of the Reformation - - 1682
An Account of the Earl of Rochester's Death - - - - - 1681
The Life of Sir Matthew Hale - - - - - - - - - - 1682
The Method of Conversion by the Clergy of France Examined 1682
The History of the Regale - - - - - - - - - - - 1682
The Translation of Sir Thomas More's Utopia - - - - 1683
The Life of Bishop Bedell - - - - - - - - - - - - 1685
The Translation of Lactantius's Deaths of the Persecutors 1687
Letters concerning Dr. Burnet's Travels - - - - - - 1687
The Pastoral Care - - - - - - - - - - - - - - 1692
Four Discourses to his Clergy - - - - - - - - - - 1694
Essay on the Character of Queen Mary - - - - - - 1695
Vindication of Archbishop Tillotson - - - - - - - - 1696
Exposition of the Thirty-Nine Articles of the Church of England - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - 1700
A Collection of Sermons and Pamphlets, in three volumes in quarto - - - - - - - - - - - From 1678 to 1706
The Church Catechism Explained - - - - - - - - - 1710
Sermons preached on several Occasions - - - - - - - 1713
The History of his Own Time; two volumes in folio. A Posthumous Work.

PREFACE.

I AM now beginning to review and write over again the History of my Own Time, which I first undertook twenty years ago,* and have been continuing it from year to year ever since: and I see some reason to review it all. I had while I was very young a greater knowledge of affairs than is usual at that age; for my father, who had been engaged in great friendships with men of both sides, living then retired from all business, as he took my education wholly into his own hands, so he took a sort of pleasure to relate to me the series of all public affairs. And he was a man so eminent for probity and true piety that I had all reason to believe him, so I saw such an impartial sense of things in him, that I had as little reason to doubt his judgment as his sincerity. For though he adhered so firmly to the King and his side, that he was the singular instance in Scotland of a man of some note who, from the beginning to the end of the war, never once owned or submitted to the new form of government set up all that while; yet he did very freely complain of the errors of the King's government, and of the bishops of Scotland. So that upon this foundation, I set out at first to look into the secret conduct of affairs among us.

---

* This History he writ some time before the year 1705, but how long, he has not any where told; only it appears it was then finished, because in the beginning of the reign of King William and Queen Mary he dates the continuation of his History on the first day of May, 1705.

I fell into great acquaintance and friendships with several persons who either were or had been ministers of state, from whom, when the secret of affairs was over, I studied to know as many particulars as I could draw from them. I saw a great deal more among the papers of the Dukes of Hamilton than was properly a part of their memoirs, or fit to be told at that time: for when a licence was to be obtained, and a work was to be published fit for that family to own, things foreign to their ministry, or hurtful to any other families, were not to be intermixed with the account I then gave of the late wars. And now for above thirty years I have lived in such intimacy with all who have had the chief conduct of affairs, and have been so much trusted, and on so many important occasions employed by them, that I have been able to penetrate far into the true secrets of counsels and designs.

This made me twenty years ago write down a relation of all that I had known to that time: where I was in the dark, I passed over all, and only opened those transactions that I had particular occasions to know. My chief design in writing was to give a true view of men and of counsels, leaving public transactions to gazettes and the public historians of the times. I writ with a design to make both myself and my readers wiser and better, and to lay open the good and bad of all sides and parties, as clearly and impartially as I myself understood it, concealing nothing that I thought fit to be known, and representing things in their natural colours without art or disguise, without any regard to kindred or friends, to parties or interests: for I do solemnly say this to the world, and make my humble appeal upon it to the great God of truth, that I tell the truth on all occasions, as fully and

freely as upon my best inquiry I have been able to find it out. Where things appear doubtful, I deliver them with the same uncertainty to the world.

Some may perhaps think, that instead of favouring my own profession, I have been more severe upon them than was needful. But my zeal for the true interest of religion and of the clergy, made me more careful to undeceive good and well meaning men of my own order and profession for the future, and to deliver them from common prejudices and mistaken notions, than to hide or excuse the faults of those who will be perhaps gone off the stage before this work appear on it. I have given the characters of men very impartially and copiously; for nothing guides one's judgment more truly in a relation of matters of fact, than the knowing the tempers and principles of the chief actors.

If I have dwelt too long on the affairs of Scotland, some allowance is to be made to the affection all men bear to their native country. I alter nothing of what I wrote in the first draught of this work, only I have left out a great deal that was personal to myself, and to those I am descended from: so that this is upon the matter the same work with very little change made in it.

I look on the perfecting of this work, and the carrying it on through the remaining part of my life, as the greatest service I can do to God and to the world; and therefore I set about it with great care and caution. For I reckon a lie in history to be as much a greater sin than a lie in common discourse, as the one is like to be more lasting and more generally known than the other. I find that the long experience I have had of the baseness, the malice, and the falsehood of mankind, has inclined me to be apt to think generally the worst both of

men and of parties: and indeed the peevishness, the ill nature, and the ambition of many clergymen, has sharpened my spirits perhaps too much against them: so I warn my reader to take all that I say on these heads with some grains of allowance, though I have watched over myself and my pen so carefully, that I hope there is no great occasion for this apology.

I have shewed this History to several of my friends, who were either very partial to me, or they esteemed that this work (chiefly when it should be over and over again retouched and polished by me, which very probably I shall be doing as long as I live) might prove of some use to the world. I have on design avoided all laboured periods of artificial strains, and have writ in as clear and plain a style as was possible, choosing rather a copious enlargement than a dark conciseness.

And now, O my God, the God of my life, and of all my mercies, I offer this work to thee, to whose honour it is chiefly intended; that thereby I may awaken the world to just reflections on their own errors and follies, and call on them to acknowledge thy providence, to adore it, and ever to depend on it.

CONTENTS

OF THE

FIRST VOLUME.

THE AUTHOR'S LIFE.

	Page
His birth and parentage	iv
His education	v
He is admitted as a probationer	ib.
Refuses a presentation to a living	vi
His father's death, and his further pursuit of his studies	ib.
His journey to England	viii
Delays accepting a good benefice	ib.
His travels into Holland and France	ib.
Is settled as minister at Saltoun, and his conduct there	ix
Much consulted by the ministry in Scotland	x
Is made professor of divinity at Glasgow	xi
His conduct in that station	ib.
He undertakes to write the Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton	xii
He refuses a bishopric in Scotland	ib.
His marriage with the Lady Margaret Kennedy	xiii
Again refuses a bishopric, with the promise of the next archbishopric	ib.
His favour at court	ib.
His breach with Duke Lauderdale	xiv
Is forced to quit his professorship at Glasgow	xv
Refuses a good benefice at London	ib.
Is made chaplain at the Rolls, and lecturer at St. Clements	xvi
Writes the History of the Reformation	ib.
His conversion of Wilmot, Earl of Rochester	ib.
Refuses the bishopric of Chichester	xvii
His letter to the King	xviii
His firm adherence to his friends	xxi
Refuses a living on the terms of not residing there	xxiii
How he avoided being involved in any plots	ib.
Is dismissed from his lecture and from the Rolls	xxiv
His travels beyond sea	ib.
Is well received by the Prince and Princess of Orange	xxv
King James insists on his being forbid that court	ib.
Is prosecuted in Scotland and England for high treason	ib.
The states refuse to deliver him up	xxvi
Designs to seize upon him	ib.
His marriage to Mrs. Scott	xxvii
His conduct at the Revolution	ib.
Declines the offer of the bishopric of Durham	xxviii
Is made bishop of Salisbury	ib.
His services to, and his correspondence with, the house of Hanover	ib.
His character as to party matters	xxxi
His labours in his diocese, and in the episcopal function	xxxviii
His universal principle of toleration extends to nonjurors	xlii
His scheme for augmenting poor livings in his own diocese	xliv
His scheme for augmenting all the poor livings in England	ib.
The death of Queen Mary and of Archbishop Tillotson	xlvii
He is one of the ecclesiastical commission to recommend to preferments	ib.
Is made preceptor to the Duke of Gloucester	xlviii
Which he endeavours to decline	ib.

	Page
His marriage with Mrs. Berkeley	l
He writes an Exposition of the Thirty-nine Articles of the church of England	li
His diligence in his calling whilst in London	lii
Writes a third volume as a supplement to the History of the Reformation	liii
His domestic character	ib.
His time, how employed	ib.
An affectionate husband	liv
His care of his children's education	ib.
His firmness in his friendships	ib.
His conduct to those in employment under him	ib.
His charities	lv
His care of the revenue of the see	ib.
His death	lvi
His character by the late Marquis of Hallifax	lvii
List of his Works	lix
Preface	lxi

BOOK I.

	Page
The distractions during King James's minority	1
The practices of the house of Guise	2
King James in the interest of England	3
A censure of Spotswood's history	ib.
King James studied to gain the papists	4
And to secure the succession to the crown of England	ib.
That King's errors in government	5
He set up episcopacy in Scotland	ib.
With a design to carry matters farther	6
Errors of the bishops	ib.
Prince Henry was believed to be poisoned	7
The gunpowder plot	ib.
King James was afraid of the Jesuits	8
The Elector Palatine's marriage	9
The affairs of Bohemia	ib.
The disorders in Holland	10
Some passages of the religion of some princes	11
King James parted with the cautionary towns	12
King James broke the greatness of the crown	ib.
Other errors in his reign	13
His death	14
The puritans gained ground	15
Gowry's conspiracy	ib.
King Charles at first a friend to the puritans	17
He designed to recover the tythes and church lands in Scotland to the crown	ib.
He was crowned in Scotland	18
Balmerinoch's trial	20
He was condemned	26
But pardoned	24
A liturgy prepared	ib.
The feebleness of the government	25
Saville's forgery prevailed on the Scots	26
The characters of the chief of the covenanters	ib.
The Scots came into England	27
Great discontents in England	28
The ill state of the King's affairs	ib.
An account of the Earl of Strafford's being given up to the King	31
The new model of the presbytery in Scotland	32
The chief ministers of the party	33
Their studies, and other methods	34
Their great severity	35
Conditions offered to the Scots	ib.
Montrose's undertakings	36
Good advices given to the King	38
But not followed	39
Antrim's correspondence with the King and Queen	40
The original of the Irish massacre	42
Cromwell argues with the Scots concerning the King's death	43
The opposition of the general assembly to the parliament	ib.
The ministers made an insurrection	44
The treaty in the Isle of Wight	45
Cromwell's dissimulation	46
The men chiefly engaged in taking the King's life	48
The King's behaviour	ib.
The affair of Rochelle	49
A design of making the Spanish Netherlands a commonwealth	50
The ill effects of violent counsels	51
The account of Εἰκὼν Βασιλικὴ	52
The Scots treat with King Charles the Second	53
Montrose's offers	54
And death	ib.
The defeat at Dunbar	56
Disputes about the admitting all persons to serve their country	57

CONTENTS.

	Page
Great hardships put on the King	59
Scotland was subdued by Monk	60
A body stood out in the highlands	61
Sir Robert Murray's character	62
Messages sent to the King	63
The state of Scotland during the usurpation	64
Disputes among the covenanters	ib.
Methods taken on both sides	66
Some of Cromwell's maxims	68
His design for the kingship	72
Cromwell's engagement with France	75
The King turned papist	78
Cromwell's design on the West Indies	79
His zeal for the protestant religion	82
A great design for the interest of the protestant religion	83
Some passages in Cromwell's life	ib.
His moderation in government	85
His public spirit	86
All the world was afraid of him	87
The ruin of his family	88
Great disorders followed	90
All turn to the King's side	92
Care taken to manage the army	93
A new parliament	95
They called home the King without a treaty	96

BOOK II.

1660.

Many went over to the Hague	98
The nation war over-run with vice and drunkenness	99
The King's character	ib.
Clarendon's character	101
Ormond's character	102
Southampton's character	ib.
Shaftsbury's character	103
Anglesey's character	104
Hollis's character	105
Manchester's character	ib.
Roberts's character	ib.
Clarges's character	106
Morrice's character	ib.
Nicolas's character	ib.
Arlington's character	ib.
Buckingham's character	107
Bristol's character	108
Lauderdale's character	ib.
Crawford's character	110
Rothes's character	ib.
Tweedale's character	ib.
Duke Hamilton's character	110
Kincairdin's character	111
The general character of the old cavaliers	112
Primrose's character	ib.
Fletcher's character	ib.
Advices offered in Scotch affairs	113
For a general indemnity	ib.
Argyle sent to the Tower	114
The citadels in Scotland demolished	115
Disputes concerning episcopacy	116
A ministry settled in Scotland	118
A council proposed to sit at court for Scotch affairs	119
The committee of estates meet in Scotland	121
A parliament in Scotland	123

1661.

The lords of the articles	ib.
The acts passed in this session	125
An act rescinding all parliaments since the year 1633	127
It was not liked by the King	129
The presbyterians in great disorder	130
Argyle's attainder	132
And execution	136
The execution of Guthry, a minister	137
Some others were proceeded against	138
Midletoun gave an account of all that had passed in parliament to the King	139
It was resolved to set up episcopacy in Scotland	142
Men sought out to be bishops	144
Bishop Leightoun's character	146
The Scotch bishops consecrated	152

1662.

The meetings of the presbyteries forbidden	154
The new bishops came down to Scotland	156
They were brought into parliament	ib.
Scruples about the oath of supremacy	158
Debates about an act of indemnity	160
It was desired that some might be incapacitated	162
Lorn condemned	163
Some incapacitated by ballot	164
The King was displeased with this	166
Great pains taken to excuse Midletoun	167
The presbyterian ministers silenced	168

CONTENTS.

Page

A general character of them . . . 171
Prejudices infused against episcopacy 173

1660.

The affairs of England . . . 174
Clarendon's just and moderate notions 176
Venner's fury . . . . . ib.
The trial and execution of the regicides 178

1661.

Vane's character 180
And execution 181
The King gave himself up to his pleasures . . . . . ib.
The act of indemnity maintained . 182

1662.

The King's marriage 183
An alliance proposed from France 184
The Duke of York's marriage . 185
The Duke's character . . . . ib.
The Dutchess's character . . . 188
The Duke of Gloucester's character ib.
The prospect of the royal family much changed 189
Schomberg went through England to Portugal . . . . . ib.
Dunkirk sold to the French . . 190
Tangier a part of the Queen's portion 191
The manner of the King's marriage 192
The King lived in an avowed course of lewdness 193

1660.

The settlement of Ireland . . . ib.
The bishops who had then the greatest credit 195
Debates concerning the uniting with the presbyterians 196
A treaty in the Savoy 198

1661.

The terms of conformity made harder 201
The act of uniformity 202
The great fines then raised on the church estates ill applied . . 205
Divines called latitudinarians . 206
Hobbs's Leviathan 207
A character of some divines . . 209
The way of preaching which then prevailed 211

Page

1662.

The act of uniformity executed with rigour 212
The Royal Society 213
Consultations among the papists . 214
A declaration for toleration . . ib.
Designed for the papists . . . 215

1663.

Bristol's designs 217
He accused Clarendon in the House of Lords . . . . . ib.
A plot discovered 219
The design of a war with the states 220
The affairs of Scotland . . . 221
Midletoun was accused by Lauderdale . . . . . ib.
And turned out of all 224
Waristoun's execution 225
An act against conventicles . . 226
The constitution of a national synod ib.
An act offering an army to the King 227

1664.

Sharp drove very violently . . . 228
Lauderdale gave way to it . . . ib.
Burnet, Archbishop of Glasgow . 229
A view of the stat of affairs in Holland and France . . . . ib.
Sharp aspired to be chancellor of Scotland 231
Rothes had the whole power of Scotland put in his hands . . . 232

1665.

Illegal and severe proceedings in Scotland 233
Turner executed the laws in a military way 234
Sharp studies to bring Midletoun into business again 236
More forces raised in Scotland . 237

1666.

Some eminent clergymen in Scotland offended at these proceedings 238
Some of the grievances of the clergy laid before the bishops . . 241

1664.

Affairs in England 242
The Dutch war . . . . . ib.

Page

1665.

The plague broke out at the same time 242
The victory at sea not followed . ib.
An account of the affairs in Holland 244
An account of the affairs of Berghen 246
The parliament at Oxford . . . 249
The designs of the commonwealth party 251
The Duke of York's jealousy . . 252
His amours 253

1666.

The fleet was almost quite lost, and happily saved by Prince Rupert 954
The fire of London 255
It was charged on the papists . ib.
A strong presumption of it . . 256
Disorders in Scotland 259
A rebellion in the west . . . 260
The defeat given the rebels at Pentland-hill 261
Severe proceedings against the prisoners 262

1667.

The King is more gentle than the bishops 264
A change of counsel, and more moderation in the government . 265
The Dutch fleet came into the Frith 268
And went to Chatham, and burnt our fleet 269
A great change in Lauderdale's temper 272
Scotland was very well governed . 274
Great complaints made of the clergy 275
Affairs in England 276
Clarendon's disgrace 277
Southampton's death . . . . ib.
The Irish sought the protection of France 279
The Duke of Richmond's marriage 280
Bridgman made lord keeper . . 281
The French King's pretensions to Flanders 282
Clarendon's integrity 283
He was impeached in the House of Commons 284
The King desired he would go beyond sea 285
He was banished by act of parliament . . . . . ib.
The character of his two sons . 286

Page

The King was much offended with the bishops 288

1668.

A treaty for a comprehension of the presbyterians . . . . . ib.
The city of London rebuilt . . . 290
Designs for putting away the Queen ib.
A divorce enacted for adultery . 291
A great dissolution of morals in court 292
Many libels writ by the best wits of that time 294
Sir William Coventry's character . 296
The government of Ireland changed ib.
The committee of Brook House . 297
Hallifax's character 298

1669.

Many parliament men gained by the court 299
Coventry's nose was cut . . . 301
A new prosecution of conventicles ib.
The King went commonly to the House of Lords 302
The Prince of Orange came to the King 304
The affairs of Scotland 305
A treaty for an accommodation with the presbyterians in Scotland . ib.
An indulgence proposed . . . 308
An attempt to murder Sharp . . 309
Sharp proposed the indulging some ministers that did not conform . 310
Propositions for the union of the two kingdoms 312
The King gave orders for the indulgence 313
This complained of as against law . 315
A parliament in Scotland . . . 316
The supremacy carried very high . 317
An act for the county militia . . 318
Burnet turned out, and Leightoun made Archbishop of Glasgow . 320
The state I found things in at Glasgow . . . . . ib.
A committee of council sent round the west 321

1670.

Instructions for accommodation . 322
Leightoun's advices to his clergy . 323
A conference between Leightoun and some presbyterians 324
New severities against conventicles 326

	Page
The reformed religion	326
The presbyterians resolved to reject the offers made them	327
Some conferences upon that subject	330
At last they refused to accept of the concessions	331
Censures passed upon this whole matter	332
1671.	
The Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton was writ by me at that time	ib.
A farther indulgence proposed	334
Foreign affairs	335
An alliance with France set on foot	ib.
The Dutchess of Orleans came to Dover	336
Soon after poisoned	337
Some of her intrigues	ib.
Some of the intrigues	ib.
The treaty with France negotiated	339
Lockhart sent to France	340
Pretended reasons for the Dutch war	ib.
1672.	
The shutting up of the Exchequer	342
The attempt on the Dutch Smyrna fleet	ib.
A declaration for toleration	343
The presbyterians gave the King thanks for the toleration	344
The Dutchess of York died	345
The first crisis of the protestant religion	346
The second crisis	347
The third crisis	ib.
The Spanish fleet came not as at first intended	349
The fourth crisis	350
Differences between Prince Maurice of Orange and Barnevelt	352
Prince Henry Frederick's wise government	354
His son's heat	ib.
The errors of De Wit's government	356
The Prince of Orange made general	358
The fifth crisis	359
The French success	ib.
But followed by an ill management	360
The Dutch in great extremities	361
Ambassadors sent to England	362
The tragical end of De Wit	363
The Prince of Orange made stadtholder	364
The English ambassadors were wholly in the interest of France	365
The character of Fagel	366
Prince Waldeck	ib.
Dickvelt	ib.
And Halewyn	367
The Prince studied to correct the errors he fell in at first	368
Van Beuning's character	ib.
Errors committed by the town of Amsterdam	369
The Prince animates the states to continue the war	370
The French King goes back to Paris	371
The Dutch favoured by some extraordinary Providence	373
Ossory intended to surprise Helvoetsluys	ib.
An army from Utrecht came on the ice to Holland	374
Painevine's sentence	375
A French mistress made Dutchess of Portsmouth	376
The affairs of Scotland	377
Lauderdale's great insolence	ib.
He expected addresses for a toleration	379
Designs from Holland to raise a rebellion in Scotland	380
A farther indulgence	381
Leightoun resolved to retire, and to leave his see	ib.
BOOK III.	
1673.	
Great jealousies of the King	384
Schomberg brought to command the army	ib.
The court was much divided	385
A session of parliament	ib.
The declaration was voted illegal	386
A bill for a new test	387
The prudence of the dissenters	ib.
Debates in the House of Lords	388
The variety of opinions in the King's council	389
The French advise the King to yield to the parliament	ib.
The King went into that suddenly	390
Clifford disgraced	ib.
Osborn made lord treasurer	391
A great supply was given	ib.

Page

The Duke laid down all his commissions 392
The Duke treats for a second marriage 393
A treaty opened at Cologne . . 394
Lord Sunderland's character . ib.
The treaty broke off . . . 395
The affairs of Scotland . . ib.
Lauderdale's design . . . 396
The King liked my Memoirs . 397
And shewed me great favour . ib.
My conversation with the Duke . 398
I carried Doctor Stillingfleet to him 400
The Duke's marriage opposed by the Commons 402
A parliament in Scotland . . 404
A party formed against Lauderdale 405
He offers to redress grievances in council 406

1674.

A dispute raised about the lords of the articles 407
The proceedings in the parliament of England . . . . . ib.
Finch's character . . . . . ib.
A peace concluded with the states 409
The King became the mediator of the peace 411
The Dutchess's character . . ib.
Coleman's character . . . . ib.
The affairs of Scotland . . 412
The parliament was prorogued . ib.
Dalrymple's character . . 413
The clergy was much provoked . ib.
A great distraction in Scotland . 414
Lauderdale's proceedings there . ib.
I was disgraced 415
The ministers turned to the church party 417

Page

Correspondence with Holland discovered 418
Jealousies of the Prince of Orange 420
Drummond was ordered to prison ib.
The battle of Seneff . . . 421
Arlington went to Holland . . 422
Temple sent ambassador to Holland 423

1675.

Affairs in England . . . 424
I was examined by the House of Commons . . . . . ib.
Sir Harbottle Grimstone's character 426
Danby attacked, but in vain . . 428
Seymour's character 429
Debates concerning a test . . 430
A dispute about appeals and privileges 432
The sessions broke up on it . . ib.
A session of parliament . . . 433
The characters of some parliament men 434

1676.

A long interval between the sessions of parliament 437
An account of some passages of Lockhart's courage in France . ib.
Management in France . . 439
The character of some bishops . 440
The projects of the papists . . 442
Coleman's intrigues . . . . ib.
A conference between Coleman and some divines 444
I undertook to write the History of our Reformation . . . 445
The Earl of Essex's character . 446
His employment in Denmark . ib.
And his government of Ireland . 447
The affairs of Scotland . . 449

THE

HISTORY,

&c.

BOOK I.

A summary recapitulation of the state of affairs in Scotland, both in Church and State; from the beginning of the troubles, to the Restoration of King Charles the Second, 1660.

THE mischiefs of civil wars are so great and lasting, and the effects of them branching out by many accidents that were not thought on at first, much less intended, into such mischievous consequences, that I have thought it an inquiry that might be of great use, both to prince and people, to look carefully into the first beginnings and occasions of them, to observe their progress, and the errors of both hands, the provocations that were given, and the jealousies that were raised by these, together with the excesses into which both sides have run by turns. And though the wars be over long ago, yet since they have left among us so many seeds of lasting feuds and animosities, which upon every turn are apt to ferment and to break out anew, it will be an useful as well as a pleasant inquiry to look back to the first original of them, and to observe by what degrees and accidents they gathered strength, and at last broke forth into a flame.

The distractions during King James's minority.

The Reformation of Scotland was popular and parliamentary: the crown was, during that time, either on the head of a queen that was absent, or of a king that was an infant. During his minority matters were carried on by the several regents, so as was most agreeable to the prevailing humour of the nation. But when King James grew to be of age, he found two parties in the kingdom: the one was of those who wished well to the interest of the Queen his mother, then a prisoner in England: these were either professed papists, or men believed to be indifferent as to all religions; the rest were her inveterate enemies,

zealous for the Reformation, and fixed in a dependence on the crown of England, and in a jealousy of France. When that King saw that those who were most in his interests were likewise jealous of his authority, and apt to encroach upon it, he hearkened first to the insinuations of his mother's party, who were always infusing in him a jealousy of these his friends; saying, that by ruining his mother, and setting him in her room while a year old, they had ruined monarchy, and made the crown subject and precarious, and had put him in a very unnatural posture, of being seized of his mother's crown while she was in exile and a prisoner; adding, that he was but a king in name, the power being in the hands of those who were under the management of the Queen of England.

The practices of the house of Guise,

Their insinuations would have been of less force, if the house of Guise, who were his cousin-germans, had not been engaged in great designs, of transferring the crown of France from the house of Bourbon to themselves; in order to which it was necessary to embroil England, and to draw the King of Scotland into their interests. So under the pretence of keeping up the old alliances between France and Scotland, they sent creatures of their own to be ambassadors there; and they sent also a graceful young man, who, as he was the King's nearest kinsman by his father, was of so agreeable a temper that he became his favourite, and was made by him Duke of Lenox. He was known to be a papist, though he pretended he changed his religion, and became in profession a protestant.

The court of England discovered all these artifices of the Guisians, who were then the most implacable enemies of the Reformation, and were managing all that train of plots against Queen Elizabeth, that in conclusion proved fatal to the Queen of Scots. And when the English ministers saw the inclinations of the young King lay so strongly that way, that all their applications to gain him were ineffectual, they infused such a jealousy of him into all their party in Scotland, that both nobility and clergy were much alarmed at it.

But King James learnt early that piece of kingcraft, of disguising, or at least denying every thing that was observed in his behaviour that gave offence.

The main instance in which the French management

appeared was, that he could not be prevailed on to enter into any treaty of marriage. It was not safe to talk of marrying a papist; and, as long as the Duke of Guise lived, the King, though then three and twenty, and the only person of his family, would hearken to no proposition for marrying a protestant.

King James in the interest of England.

But when the Duke of Guise was killed at Blois, and that Henry the Third was murdered soon after, so that Henry the Fourth came in his room, King James was no more in a French management; so presently after he married a daughter of Denmark, and ever after that he was wholly managed by Queen Elizabeth and her ministers. I have seen many letters among Walsingham's papers that discover the commerce between the house of Guise and him:* but the most valuable of these is a long paper of instructions to one Sir Richard Wigmore, a great man for hunting, and for all such sports, to which King James was out of measure addicted. The Queen affronted him publicly; upon which he pretended he could live no longer in England, and therefore withdrew to Scotland: but all this was a contrivance of Walsingham's, who thought him a fit person to get into that King's favour; so that affront was designed to give him the more credit. He was very particularly instructed in all the proper methods to gain upon the King's confidence, and to observe and give an account of all he saw in him; which he did very faithfully. By these instructions it appears that Walsingham thought that King was either inclined to turn papist, or to be of no religion; and when the court of England saw that they could not depend on him, they raised all possible opposition to him in Scotland, infusing strong jealousies into those who were enough inclined to receive them.

A censure of Spotswood's history.

This is the great defect that runs through Archbishop Spotswood's history, where much of the rude opposition that King met with, particularly from the assemblies of the kirk, is set forth; but the true ground of all the jealousies they were possessed with is suppressed by him. After his marriage they studied to remove these suspicions all that was possible; and he granted the kirk all the laws they desired, and got his temporal authority to be better

* That is, between the house of Guise and King James.

established than it was before: yet as the jealousies of his fickleness in religion were never quite removed, so they gave him many new disgusts: they wrought in him a most inveterate hatred of presbytery, and of the power of the kirk; and he fearing an opposition in his succeeding to the crown of England from the papist party, which, though it had little strength in the House of Commons, yet was very great in the House of Lords, and was very considerable in all the northern parts, and among the body of the people, employed several persons who were known to be papists, though they complied outwardly. The chief of these were Elphinston, secretary of state, whom he made Lord Balmerinoch; and Seaton, afterwards chancellor and Earl of Dunfermling: by their means he studied to assure the papists that he would connive at them. A letter was also written to the Pope by him, giving assurance of this, which, when it came to be published by Bellarmin, upon the prosecution of the recusants after the discovery of the gunpowder plot, Balmerinoch did affirm, that he out of zeal to the King's service got his hand to it, having put it in the bundle of papers that were signed in course, without the King's knowing any thing of it. Yet when that discovery drew no other severity but the turning him out of office, and the passing a sentence condemning him to die for it, (which was presently pardoned, and he was, after a short confinement, restored to his liberty) all men believed that the King knew of the letter, and that the pretended confession of the secretary was only collusion, to lay the jealousies of the King's favouring popery, which still hung upon him notwithstanding his writing on the Revelation, and his affecting to enter on all occasions into controversy, asserting in particular that the Pope was Antichrist.

King James studied to gain the papists.

As he took these methods to manage the popish party, he was much more careful to secure to himself the body of the English nation. Cecil, afterwards Earl of Salisbury, secretary to Queen Elizabeth, entered into a particular confidence with him; and this was managed by his ambassador, Bruce, a younger brother of a noble family in Scotland, who carried the matter with such address and secrecy, that all the great men of England, without knowing of one another's doing it, and without the Queen's

And to secure the succession to the crown of England.

suspecting any thing concerning it, signed in writing an engagement to assert and stand by the King of Scots right of succession. This great service was rewarded by making him master of the rolls, and a peer of Scotland: and as the King did raise Cecil and his friends to the greatest posts and dignities, so he raised Bruce's family here in England.

That King's errors in government.

When that King came to the crown of England, he discovered his hatred to the Scottish kirk on many occasions, in which he gratified his resentment without consulting his interests. He ought to have put his utmost strength to the finishing what he but faintly begun for the union of both kingdoms, which was lost by his unreasonable partiality, in pretending that Scotland ought to be considered in this union as the third part of the isle of Great Britain, if not more. So high a demand ruined the design. But when that failed, he should then have studied to keep the affections of that nation firm to him: and certainly he, being secure of that kingdom, might have so managed matters, as to have prevented that disjointing which happened afterwards, both in his own reign, and more tragically in his son's. He thought to effect this by his profuse bounty to many of the nobility of that kingdom, and to his domestic servants: but as most of these settling in England were of no further use to him in that design, so his setting up episcopacy in Scotland, and his constant aversion to the kirk, how right soever it might be in itself, was a great error in policy; for the poorer that kingdom was, it was both the more easy to gain them, and the more dangerous to offend them. So the terror which the affections of the Scotch nation might have justly given the English was soon lost, by his engaging the whole government to support that which was then very contrary to the bent and genius of the nation.

He set up episcopacy in Scotland.

But though he set up bishops, he had no revenues to give them, but what he was to purchase for them. During his minority all the tithes and the church lands were vested in the crown: but this was only in order to the granting them away to the men that bore the chief sway. It is true, when he came of age he, according to the law of Scotland, passed a general revocation of allt hat had been done in his infancy; and by this he could have resumed

all those grants. He, and after him his son, succeeded in one part of his design; for by act of parliament a court was erected that was to examine and sequester a third part of the tithes in every parish, and so make a competent provision out of them to those who served the cure, which had been reserved in the great alienation for the service of the church. This was carried at first to a proportion of about thirty pounds a year, and was afterwards, in his son's time, raised to about fifty pounds a year; which, considering the plenty and way of living in that country, is a very liberal provision, and is equal in value to thrice that sum in the southern parts of England. In this he had both the clergy and the body of the people on his side: but he could not so easily provide for the bishops; they were at first forced to hold their former cures, with some small addition.

With a design to carry matters farther.

But as they assumed, at their first setting up, little more authority than that of a constant president of the presbyters, so they met with much rough opposition. The King intended to carry on a conformity in matters of religion with England, and he begun to buy in from the grantees many of the estates that belonged to the bishoprics. It was also enacted, that a form of prayer should be drawn for Scotland: and the King was authorized to appoint the habits in which the divine offices were to be performed. Some of the chief holy days were ordered to be observed. The sacrament was to be received kneeling, and to be given to the sick. Confirmation was enacted; as also the use of the cross in baptism. These things were first passed in general assemblies, which were composed of bishops and the deputies chosen by the clergy, who sat all in one house, and in it they reckoned the bishops only as single votes. Great opposition was made to all these steps, and the whole force of the government was strained to carry elections to those meetings, or to take off those who were chosen; in which it was thought that no sort of practice was omitted. It was pretended, that some were frighted, and others were corrupted.

Errors of the bishops.

The bishops themselves did their part very ill. They generally grew haughty: they neglected their functions, and were often at court, and lost all esteem with the people. Some few, that were stricter and more learned, did lean so grossly to popery, that the heat and violence of the Refor-

mation became the main subject of their sermons and discourses. King James grew weary of this opposition, or was so apprehensive of the ill effects that it might have, that, what through sloth or fear, and what by reason of the great disorder into which his ill conduct brought his affairs in England in his latter years, he went no further in his designs on Scotland.

He had three children. His eldest, Prince Henry, was a prince of great hopes; but so very little like his father, that he was rather feared than loved by him. He was so zealous a protestant, that when his father was entertaining propositions of marrying him to popish princesses, once to the archdutchess, and at another time to a daughter of Savoy, he, in a letter that he wrote to the king on the 12th of that October in which he died, (the original of which Sir William Cook shewed me) desired, that if his father married him that way, it might be with the youngest person of the two, of whose conversion he might have hope; and that any liberty she might be allowed for her religion, might be in the privatest manner possible. Whether this aversion to popery hastened his death or not I cannot tell. Colonel Titus assured me that he had it from King Charles the First's own mouth, that he was well assured he was poisoned by the Earl of Somerset's means. It is certain, that from the time of the gunpowder plot, King James was so struck with the terror of that danger he was then so near, that ever after he had no mind to provoke the Jesuits; for he saw what they were capable of.

Prince Henry was believed to be poisoned.

And since I name that conspiracy, which the papists in our days have had the impudence to deny, and to pretend it was an artifice of Cecil's to engage some desperate men into a plot, which he managed so, that he could discover it when he pleased, I will mention what I myself saw, and had for some time in my possession. Sir Everard Digby died for being of the conspiracy: he was the father of the famous Sir Kenelm Digby. The family being ruined upon the death of Sir Kenelm's son, when the executors were looking out for writings to make out the titles of the estates they were to sell, they were directed by an old servant to a cupboard that was very artificially hid, in which some papers lay that she had observed Sir Kenelm was oft reading. They, looking into it, found a velvet bag, within which

The gunpowder plot

there were two other silk bags (so carefully were those relics kept): and there was within these a collection of all the letters that Sir Everard writ during his imprisonment. In these he expresses great trouble, because he heard some of their friends blamed their undertaking: he highly magnifies it; and says, if he had many lives he would willingly have sacrificed them all in carrying it on. In one paper he says, they had taken that care that there were not above two or three worth saving, to whom they had not given notice to keep out of the way: and in none of those papers does he express any sort of remorse for that, which he had been engaged in, and for which he suffered.

King James was afraid of the Jesuits.

Upon the discovery of that plot there was a general prosecution of all papists set on foot: but King James was very uneasy at it; which was much increased by what Sir Dudley Carlton told him upon his return from Spain, where he had been ambassador (which I had from the Lord Hollis, who said to me, that Sir Dudley Carlton told it to himself, and was much troubled when he saw it had an effect contrary to what he had intended). When he came home, he found the King at Theobald's, hunting in a very careless and unguarded manner: and, upon that, in order to the putting him on a more careful looking to himself, he told the King he must either give over that way of hunting, or stop another hunting that he was engaged in, which was priest-hunting; for he had intelligence in Spain that the priests were comforting themselves with this, that if he went on against them, they would soon get rid of him. Queen Elizabeth was a woman of form, and was always so well attended, that all their plots against her failed, and were never brought to any effect; but a prince who was always in woods or forests would be easily overtaken. The King sent for him in private to inquire more particularly into this; and he saw it had made a great impression on him, but wrought otherwise than he intended: for the King, who resolved to gratify his humour in hunting and in a careless and irregular way of life, did immediately order all that prosecution to be let fall. I have the minutes of the council-books of the year 1606, which are full of orders to discharge and transport priests; sometimes ten in a day. From thence to his dying day he continued always writing and talking against popery, but acting for it. He married

his only daughter to a protestant prince, one of the most zealous and sincere of them all, the Elector Palatine; upon which a great revolution happened in the affairs of Germany. The eldest branch of the house of Austria retained some of the impressions that their father, Maximilian II. studied to infuse into them, who, as he was certainly one of the best and wisest princes of these latter ages, so he was unalterably fixed in his opinion against persecution for matters of conscience: his own sentiments were so very favourable to the protestant doctrine, that he was thought inwardly theirs. His brother Charles of Grats was, on the other hand, wholly managed by the Jesuits, and was a zealous patron of theirs, and as zealously supported by them. Rodolph and Matthias reigned one after another, but without issue. Their brother Albert was then dying in Flanders: so Spain, with the popish interest, joined to advance Ferdinand, the son of Charles of Grats; and he forced Matthias to resign the crown of Bohemia to him, and got himself to be elected king. But his government became quickly severe: he resolved to extirpate the protestants, and began to break through the privileges that were secured to them by the laws of that kingdom.

The Elector Palatine's marriage.

This occasioned a general insurrection, which was followed by an assembly of the states; who, together with those of Silesia, Moravia, and Lusatia, joined in deposing Ferdinand: and they offered their crown first to the Duke of Saxony, who refused it; and then to the Elector Palatine, who accepted of it, being encouraged to it by his two uncles, Maurice, Prince of Orange, and the Duke of Boullion. But he did not ask the advice of King James: he only gave him notice of it when he had accepted the offer. Here was the probablest occasion that has been offered since the Reformation for its full establishment.

The affairs of Bohemia.

The English nation was much inclined to support it; and it was expected that so near a conjunction might have prevailed on the King: but he had an invincible aversion to war; and was so possessed of the opinion of a divine right in all kings, that he could not bear that even an elective and limited king should be called in question by his subjects; so he would never acknowledge his son-in-law king, nor give him any assistance for the support of his new dignity. And though it was also reckoned on, that France

would enter into any design that should bring down the house of Austria, and Spain by consequence, yet even that was diverted by the means of De Luynes, a worthless but absolute favourite, whom the Archdutchess Isabella, Princess of the Spanish Netherlands gained, to oblige the King* into a neutrality by giving him the richest heiress then in Flanders, the daughter of Peguiney, left to her disposal, whom he married to his brother.

The disorders in Holland.

Thus poor Frederick was left without any assistance. The jealousy that the Lutherans had of the ascendant that the Calvinists might gain by this accession, had an unhappy share in the coldness which all the princes of that confession shewed towards him; though Saxony only declared for Ferdinand, who likewise engaged the Duke of Bavaria at the head of a catholic league to maintain his interests. Maurice, Prince of Orange, had embroiled Holland by the espousing the controversy about the decrees of God in opposition to the Arminian party, and by erecting a new and illegal court by the authority of the States General to judge of the affairs of the province of Holland; which was plainly contrary to their constitution, by which every province is a sovereignty within itself, not at all subordinate to the states general, who act only as plenipotentiaries of the several provinces to maintain their union and their common concerns. By that assembly Barnevelt was condemned and executed; Grotius and others were condemned to perpetual imprisonment: and an assembly of the ministers of the several provinces met at Dort by the same authority, and condemned and deprived the Arminians. Maurice's enemies gave it out that he managed all this on design to make himself master of the provinces, and to put those who were like to oppose him out of the way: but though this seem a wild and groundless imagination, and not possible to be compassed; yet it is certain that he looked on Barnevelt and his party as men who were so jealous of him and of a military power, that as they had forced the truce with Spain, so they would be very unwilling to begin a new war; though the disputes about Juliers and Cleves had almost engaged them, and the truce was now near expiring; at the end of which he hoped, if de-

* It is plain here must be meant by *King* the King of France.

livered from the opposition that he might look for from that party, to begin the war anew. By these means there was a great fermentation over all the provinces, so that Maurice was not then in condition to give the elected King any considerable assistance; though indeed he needed it much, for his conduct was very weak. He affected the grandeur of a regal court, and the magnificence of a crowned head too early: and his Queen set up some of the gay diversions that she had been accustomed to in her father's court, such as balls and masks, which very much disgusted the good Bohemians, who thought that a revolution made on the account of religion ought to have put on a greater appearance of seriousness and simplicity. These particulars I had from the children of some who belonged to that court. The elected King was quickly overthrown, and driven, not only out of those his new dominions, but likewise out of his hereditary countries: he fled to Holland, where he ended his days. I will go no farther in a matter so well known as King James's ill conduct in the whole series of that war, and that unheard-of practice of sending his only son through France into Spain, of which the relations we have are so full that I can add nothing to them.

Some passages of the religion of some princes.

I will only here tell some particulars with relation to Germany, that Fabricius, the wisest divine I knew among them, told me he had from Charles Lewis the Elector Palatine's own mouth. He said, Frederick II. who first reformed the palatinate, whose life is so curiously writ by Thomas Hubert of Liege, resolved to shake off popery, and to set up Lutheranism in his country: but a counsellor of his said to him, that the Lutherans would always depend chiefly on the house of Saxony; so it would not become him, who was the first elector, to be only the second in the party; it was more for his dignity to become a Calvinist; he would be the head of that party: it would give him a great interest in Switzerland, and make the Huguenots of France and in the Netherlands depend on him. He was by that determined to declare for the Helvetian confession: but upon the ruin of his family the Duke of Newburgh had an interview with the Elector of Brandenburgh about their concerns in Juliers and Cleves, and he persuaded that Elector to turn Calvinist; for since their family was fallen, nothing would more contribute to raise the other

than the espousing that side, which would naturally come under his protection: but he added, that for himself he had turned papist, since his little principality lay so near both Austria and Bavaria. This that Elector told with a sort of pleasure, when he made it appear that other Princes had no more sense of religion than he himself had.

King James parted with the cautionary towns.

Other circumstances concurred to make King James's reign inglorious. The states having borrowed great sums of money of Queen Elizabeth, they gave her the Brill and Flushing, with some other places of less note, in pawn till the money should be repaid. Soon after his coming to the crown of England he entered into secret treaties with Spain, in order to the forcing the states to a peace: one article was, that, if they were obstinate he would deliver these places to the Spaniards. When the truce was made, Barnevelt, though he had promoted it, yet knowing the secret article, he saw they were very unsafe while the keys of Holland and Zealand were in the hands of a prince, who might perhaps sell them, or make an ill use of them: so he persuaded the states to redeem the mortgage by repaying the money that England had lent, for which these places were put into their hands; and he came over himself to treat about it. King James, who was profuse upon his favourites and servants, was delighted with the prospect of so much money; and immediately, without calling a parliament to advise with them about it, he did yield to the proposition: so the money was paid, and the places were evacuated. But his profuseness drew two other things upon him, which broke the whole authority of the crown, and the dependence of the nation upon it. The crown had a great estate over all England, which was all let out upon leases for years, and a small rent was reserved. So most of the great families of the nation were the tenants of the crown, and a great many boroughs were depending on the estates so held. The renewal of these leases brought in fines to the crown, and to the great officers: besides that, the fear of being denied a renewal kept all in a dependence on the crown. King James obtained of his parliament a power of granting, that is selling, those estates for ever, with the reserve of the old quit-rent; and all the money raised by this was profusely squandered away. Another main part of the regal authority was the wards, which anciently the

King James broke the greatness of the crown.

crown took into their own management. Our kings were, according to the first institution, the guardians of the wards; they bred them up in their courts, and disposed of them in marriage as they thought fit; afterwards, they compounded, or forgave them, or gave them to some branches of the family, or to provide the younger children: but they proceeded in this very gently; and the chief care after the Reformation was to breed the wards protestants. Still all were under a great dependence by this means. Much money was not raised this way; but families were often at mercy, and were used according to their behaviour. King James granted these generally to his servants and favourites; and they made the most of them: so that what was before a dependence on the crown, and was moderately compounded for, became then a most exacting oppression, by which several families were ruined. This went on in King Charles's time in the same method. Our kings thought they gave little when they disposed of a ward, because they made little of them: all this raised such an outcry, that Mr. Pierpoint at the restoration gathered so many instances of these, and represented them so effectually to that House of Commons that called home King Charles the Second, that he persuaded them to redeem themselves by an offer of excise, which indeed produces a much greater revenue, but took away the dependence in which all families were held by the dread of leaving their heirs exposed to so great a danger. Pierpoint valued himself to me upon this service he did his country, at a time when things were so little considered on either hand, that the court did not seem to apprehend the value of what they parted with, nor the country of what they purchased.

Other errors in his reign.

Besides these public actings, King James suffered much in the opinion of all people by his strange way of using one of the greatest men of that age, Sir Walter Raleigh; against whom the proceedings at first were much censured, but the last part of them was thought both barbarous and illegal. The whole business of the Earl of Somerset's rise and fall, of the Countess of Essex and Overbury, the putting the inferior persons to death for that infamous poisoning, and the sparing the principals, both the Earl of Somerset and his lady were so odious and inhuman, that it quite sunk the reputation of a reign, that on many other accounts

was already much exposed to contempt and censure; which was the more sensible, because it succeeded such a glorious and happy one. King James in the end of his reign was become weary of the Duke of Buckingham, who treated him with such an air of insolent contempt, that he seemed at last resolved to throw him off, but could not think of taking the load of government on himself, and so resolved to bring the Earl of Somerset again into favour, as that lord reported it to some from whom I had it. He met with him in the night in the gardens at Theobalds; two bed-chamber men were only in the secret: the King embraced him tenderly and with many tears: the Earl of Somerset believed the secret was not well kept; for soon after the King was taken ill with some fits of an ague, and died of it. My father was then in London, and did very much suspect an ill practice in the matter: but perhaps Dr. Craig, my mother's uncle, who was one of the King's physicians, possessed him with these apprehensions; for he was disgraced for saying he believed the King was poisoned: it is certain no king could die less lamented or less esteemed than he was. This sunk the credit of the bishops of Scotland, who, as they were his creatures, so they were obliged to a great dependence on him, and were thought guilty of gross and abject flattery towards him. His reign in England was a continued course of mean practices. The first condemnation of Sir Walter Raleigh was very black; but the executing him, after so many years, and after an employment that had been given him, was counted a barbarous sacrificing him to the Spaniards. The rise and fall of the Earl of Somerset, and the swift progress of the Duke of Buckingham's greatness, were things that exposed him to the censure of all the world: I have seen the originals of about twenty letters that he wrote to the Prince and that Duke while they were in Spain, which shew meanness as well as a fondness that render him very contemptible. The great figure the crown of England had made in Queen Elizabeth's time, who had rendered herself the arbiter of Christendom, and was the wonder of the age, was so much eclipsed if not quite darkened during this reign, that King James was become the scorn of the age; and, while hungry writers flattered him out of measure at home, he was despised by all abroad as a pedant without true judgment, courage, or steadiness,

His death.

subject to his favourites, and delivered up to the counsels, or rather the corruption of Spain.

The puritans gained credit, as the King and the bishops lost it. They put on external appearances of great strictness and gravity: they took more pains in their parishes than those who adhered to the bishops, and were often preaching against the vices of the court; for which they were sometimes punished, though very gently, which raised their reputation, and drew presents to them that made up their sufferings abundantly. They begun some particular methods of getting their people to meet privately with them: and in these meetings they gave great vent to extemporary prayer, which was looked on as a sort of inspiration; and by these means they grew very popular. They were very factious and insolent; and both in their sermons and prayers were always mixing severe reflections on their enemies. Some of them boldly gave out very many predictions; particularly two of them, who were held prophets, Davison and Bruce. Some of the things that they foretold came to pass: but my father, who knew them both, told me of many of their predictions, that he himself heard them throw out, which had no effect; but all these were forgot; and if some more probable guessings which they delivered as prophecies were accomplished, these were much magnified. They were very spiteful against all those who differed from them; and were wanting in no methods that could procure them either good usage, or good presents. Of this my father had great occasion to see many instances; for my great grandmother, who was a very rich woman, and much engaged to them, was most obsequiously courted by them. Bruce lived concealed in her house for some years: and they all found such advantages in their submissions to her, that she was counted for many years the chief support of the party—her name was Rachel Arnot. She was daughter to Sir John Arnot, a man in great favour, and lord treasurer deputy. Her husband, Johnstoun, was the greatest merchant at that time, and left her an estate of 2000*l.* a year, to be disposed of among his children as she pleased: and my father, marrying her eldest grandchild, saw a great way into all the methods of the puritans.

The puritans gained ground.

Gowry's conspiracy was by them charged on the King, as a contrivance of his to get rid of that Earl, who was then

Gowry's conspiracy.

held in great esteem: but my father, who had taken great pains to inquire into all the particulars of that matter, did always believe it was a real conspiracy. One thing, which none of the historians have taken any notice of, and might have induced the Earl of Gowry to have wished to put King James out of the way, but in such a disguised manner, that he should seem rather to have escaped out of a snare himself than to have laid one for the King, was this: upon the King's death, he stood next to the succession to the crown of England; for King Henry the Seventh's daughter, that was married to King James the Fourth, did after his death marry Dowglas, Earl of Angus: but they could not agree; so a pre-contract was proved against him: upon which, by a sentence from Rome, the marriage was voided, with a clause in favour of the issue, since born under a marriage *de facto* and *bonâ fide*. Lady Margaret Dowglas was the child so provided for. I did peruse the original bull confirming the divorce. After that, the Queen Dowager married one Francis Steward, and had by him a son made Lord Methuen by King James the Fifth. In the patent he is called Frater noster uterinus: he had only a daughter, who was mother or grandmother to the Earl of Gowry; so that by this he might be glad to put the king out of the way, that so he might stand next to the succession of the crown of England. He had a brother then a child, who, when he grew up, and found he could not carry the name of Ruthen, which by an act of parliament made after this conspiracy none might carry, he went and lived beyond sea; and it was given out that he had the philosopher's stone. He had two sons, who died without issue, and one daughter married to Sir Anthony Vandike, the famous picture-drawer, whose children, according to his pedigree, stood very near to the succession of the crown. It was not easy to persuade the nation of the truth of that conspiracy; for, eight years before that time, King James, on a secret jealousy of the Earl of Murray, then esteemed the handsomest man of Scotland, set on the Marquis of Huntly, who was his mortal enemy, to murder him; and by a writing all in his own hand, he promised to save him harmless for it. He set the house in which he was on fire; and the Earl flying away, was followed and murdered, and Huntly sent Gordon of Buckey with the news to the King: soon

after, all who were concerned in that vile fact were pardoned, which laid the King open to much censure: and this made the matter of Gowry to be the less believed.

King Charles at first a friend to the puritizans.

When King Charles succeeded to the crown, he was at first thought favourable to the puritans; for his tutor, and all his court, were of that way: and Dr. Preston, then the head of the party, came up in the coach from Theobalds to London with the King and the Duke of Buckingham, which being against the rules of the court, gave great offence: but it was said the King was so overcharged with grief, that he wanted the company of so wise and so great a man. It was also given out, that the Duke of Buckingham offered Dr. Preston the great seal; but he was wiser than to accept of it. I will go no further into the beginning of that reign with relation to English affairs, which are fully opened by others; only I will tell one particular, which I had from the Earl of Lothian, who was bred up in the court, and whose father, the Earl of Ancram, was gentleman of the bedchamber, though himself was ever much hated by the King. He told me, that King Charles was much offended with King James's light and familiar way, which was the effect of hunting and drinking, on which occasions he was very apt to forget his dignity, and to break out into great indecencies: on the other hand, the solemn gravity of the court of Spain was more suited to his own temper, which was sullen even to a moroseness. This led him to a grave reserved deportment, in which he forgot the civilities and the affability that the nation naturally loved, to which they had been long accustomed; nor did he, in his outward deportment, take any pains to oblige any persons whatsoever: so far from that, he had such an ungracious way of shewing favour, that the manner of bestowing it was almost as mortifying as the favour was obliging. I turn now to the affairs of Scotland, which are but little known.

He designed to recover the tithes and church lands in Scotland to the crown.

The King resolved to carry on two designs that his father had set on foot, but had let the prosecution of them fall in the last years of his reign. The first of these was about the recovery of the tithes and church lands: he resolved to prosecute his father's revocation, and to avoid all the grants made in his minority, and to create titular abbots as lords of parliament, but lords, as bishops, only for life: and that the two great families of Hamilton and Lenox might be

good examples to the rest of the nation, he, by a secret purchase, and with English money, bought the abbey of Aberbroth of the former, and the lordship of Glasgow of the latter, and gave these to the two archbishoprics. These lords made a shew of zeal, after a good bargain, and surrendered them to the King. He also purchased several estates of less value to the several sees; and all men who pretended to favour at court offered their church lands to sale at a low rate.

In the third year of his reign, the Earl of Nithisdale, then believed a papist, which he afterwards professed, having married a niece of the Duke of Buckingham's, was sent down with a power to take the surrender of all church lands, and to assure all who did readily surrender, that the King would take it kindly, and use them all very well; but that he would proceed with all rigour against those who would not submit their rights to his disposal. Upon his coming down, those who were most concerned in those grants met at Edinburgh, and agreed, that when they were called together, if no other argument did prevail to make the Earl of Nithisdale desist, they would fall upon him and all his party, in the old Scotish manner, and knock them on the head. Primrose told me one of these lords, Belhaven, of the name of Dowglas, who was blind, bid them set him by one of the party, and he would make sure of one. So he was set next the Earl of Dumfries: he was all the while holding him fast; and when the other asked him what he meant by that, he said, ever since the blindness was come on him he was in such fear of falling, that he could not help the holding fast to those who were next to him: he had all the while a poniard in his other hand, with which he had certainly stabbed Dumfries, if any disorder had happened. The appearance at that time was so great, and so much heat was raised upon it, that the Earl of Nithisdale would not open all his instructions, but came back to court, looking on the service as desperate: so a stop was put to it for some time.

He was crowned in Scotland.

In the year 1633 the King came down in person to be crowned. In some conventions of the states that had been held before that, all the money that the King had asked was given; and some petitions were offered setting forth grievances, which those whom the King employed had as-

sured them should be redressed: but nothing was done, and all was put off till the King should come down in person. His entry and coronation were managed with such magnificence, that the country suffered much by it: all was entertainment and show. When the parliament sat, the lords of the articles prepared an act, declaring the royal prerogative, as it had been asserted by law in the year 1606; to which an addition was made of another act, passed in the year 1609, by which King James was empowered to prescribe apparel to churchmen with their own consent. This was a personal thing to King James, in consideration of his great learning and experience, of which he had made no use during the rest of his reign. And in the year 1617, when he held a parliament there in person, an act was prepared by the lords of the articles, authorizing all things that should thereafter be determined in ecclesiastical affairs by his majesty, with consent of a competent number of the clergy, to have the strength and power of a law. But the King either apprehended that great opposition would be made to passing the act, or that great trouble would follow on the execution of it: so when the rubric of the act was read, he ordered it to be suppressed, though passed in the articles. In this act of 1633 these acts of 1606 and 1609 were drawn into one. To this great opposition was made by the Earl of Rothes, who desired the acts might be divided: but the King said, it was now one act, and he must either vote for it, or against it. He said, he was for the prerogative as much as any man, but that addition was contrary to the liberties of the church, and he thought no determination ought to be made in such matters without the consent of the clergy, at least without their being heard. The King bid him argue no more, but give his vote: so he voted, not content. Some few lords offered to argue; but the King stopped them, and commanded them to vote. Almost the whole Commons voted in the negative: so that the act was indeed rejected by the majority; which the King knew, for he had called for a list of the numbers, and with his own pen had marked every man's vote: yet the clerk of register, who gathers and declares the votes, said it was carried in the affirmative. The Earl of Rothes affirmed it went for the negative: so the King said, the clerk of register's declaration must be

held good, unless the Earl of Rothes would go to the bar and accuse him of falsifying the record of parliament, which was capital; and, in that case, if he should fail in the proof he was liable to the same punishment: so he would not venture on that. Thus the act was published, though in truth it was rejected. The King expressed a high displeasure at all who had concurred in that opposition. Upon that the lords had many meetings: they reckoned that now all their liberties were gone, and a parliament was but a piece of pageantry, if the clerk of register might declare as he pleased how the vote went, and that no scrutiny were allowed. Upon that, Hague, the King's solicitor, a zealous man of that party, drew a petition to be signed by the lords, and to be offered by them to the King, setting forth all their grievances, and praying redress: he shewed this to some of them, and among others to the Lord Balmerinoch, who liked the main of it, but was for altering it in some particulars: he spoke of it to the Earl of Rothes, in the presence of the Earl of Cassilis and some others: none of them approved of it. The Earl of Rothes carried it to the King; and told him, that there was a design to offer a petition, in order to the explaining and justifying their proceedings, and that he had a copy to shew him: but the King would not look upon it, and ordered him to put a stop to it, for he would receive no such petition. The Earl of Rothes told this to Balmerinoch; so the thing was laid aside, only he kept a copy of it, and interlined it in some places with his own hand. While the King was in Scotland he erected a new bishopric at Edinburgh, and made one Forbes bishop, who was a very learned and pious man: he had a strange faculty of preaching five or six hours at a time; his way of life and devotion was thought monastic, and his learning lay in antiquity: he studied to be a reconciler between papists and protestants, leaning rather to the first, as appears by his Considerationes Modestæ: he was a very simple man, and knew little of the world; so he fell into several errors in conduct, but died soon after, suspected of popery, which suspicion was increased by his son's turning papist. The King left Scotland much discontented, but resolved to prosecute the design of recovering the church lands: and Sir Thomas Hope, a subtile lawyer, who was believed to un-

Balmerinoch's trial.

derstand that matter beyond all the men of his profession, though in all respects he was a zealous puritan, was made the King's advocate, upon his undertaking to bring all the church lands back to the crown; yet he proceeded in that matter so slowly, that it was believed he acted in concert with the party that opposed it. Enough was already done to alarm all that were possessed of the church lands; and they, to engage the whole country in their quarrel, took care to infuse it into all people, but chiefly into the preachers, that all was done to make way for popery. The winter after the King was in Scotland, Balmerinoch was thinking how to make the petition more acceptable; and in order to that, he shewed it to one Dunmoor, a lawyer, in whom he trusted, and desired his opinion of it, and suffered him to carry it home with him, but charged him to shew it to no person, and to take no copy of it. He shewed it, under a promise of secrecy, to one Hay, of Naughton, and told him from whom he had it. Hay, on looking at the paper, and seeing it a matter of some consequence, carried it to Spotswood, Archbishop of St. Andrew's; who apprehending it was going about for hands, was alarmed at it, and went immediately to London, beginning his journey, as he often did, on a Sunday, which was a very odious thing in that country. There are laws in Scotland, loosely worded, that make it capital to spread lies of the King or his government, or to alienate his subjects from him. It was also made capital to know of any that do it, and not discover them: but this last was never once put into execution. The petition was thought within this act; so an order was sent down for committing Lord Balmerinoch. The reason of it being for some time kept secret, it was thought done because of his vote in parliament: but after some consultation a special commission was sent down for the trial. In Scotland there is a court for the trial of peers, distinct from the jury, who are to be fifteen, and the majority determine the verdict; the fact being only referred to the jury, or assize, as they call it, the law is judged by the court; and if the majority of the jury are peers, the rest may be gentlemen. At this time, a private gentleman of the name of Steward was become so considerable, that he was raised by several degrees to be made Earl of Traquair and lord treasurer, and was in great favour; but suffered

afterwards such a reverse of fortune, that I saw him so low that he wanted bread, and was forced to beg, and it was believed died of hunger. He was a man of great parts, but of too much craft: he was thought the capablest man for business, and the best speaker in that kingdom. So he was charged with the care of the Lord Balmerinoch's trial; but when the ground of the prosecution was known, Hague, who drew the petition, writ a letter to the Lord Balmerinoch, in which he owned that he drew the petition without any direction or assistance from him: and upon that he went over to Holland. The court was created by a special commission: in the naming of judges there appeared too visibly a design to have that lord's life, for they were either very weak or very poor. Much pains was taken to have a jury, in which so great partiality appeared, that when the Lord Balmerinoch was upon his challenges, and excepted to the Earl of Dumfries, for his having said, that if he were of his jury, though he were as innocent as St. Paul, he would find him guilty, some of the judges said, that was only a rash word; yet the King's advocate allowed the challenge, if proved, which was done. The next called on was the Earl of Lauderdale, father to the Duke of that title: with him the Lord Balmerinoch had been long in enmity; yet, instead of challenging him, he said he was *omni exceptione major*. It was long considered upon what the prisoner should be tried; for his hand interlining the paper, which did plainly soften it, was not thought evidence that he drew it, or that he was accessary to it; and they had no other proof against him, nor could they from that infer that he was the divulger, since it did appear it was only shewed by him to a lawyer for counsel. So it was settled on to insist on this, that the paper tended to alienate the subjects from their duty to the King, and that he, knowing who was the author of it, did not discover him, which by law was capital. The court judged the paper to be seditious, and to be a lie of the King and his government: the other point was clear, that he knowing the author, did not discover him. He pleaded for himself, that the statute for discovery had never been put in execution; that it could never be meant but of matters that were notoriously seditious; that till the court judged so he did not take this paper to be of that nature, but considered it as a paper full

of duty, designed to set himself and some others right in the King's opinion; that upon the first sight of it, though he approved of the main, yet he disliked some expressions in it; that he communicated the matter to the Earl of Rothes, who told the King of the design; and that, upon the King's saying he would receive no such petition, it was quite laid aside: this was attested by the Earl of Rothes. A long debate had been much insisted on, whether the Earl of Traquair or the King's ministers might be of the jury or not; but the court gave it in their favour. When the jury was shut up, Gordon of Buckey, who was one of them, being then very ancient, who forty-three years before had assisted in the murder of the Earl of Murray, and was thought upon this occasion a sure man, spoke first of all, excusing his presumption in being the first that broke the silence. He desired they would all consider what they were about; it was a matter of blood, and they would feel the weight of that as long as they lived: he had in his youth been drawn in to shed blood, for which he had the King's pardon, but it cost him more to obtain God's pardon: it had given him many sorrowful hours, both day and night; and, as he spoke this, the tears ran over his face. This struck a damp on them all: but the Earl of Traquair took up the argument, and said, they had it not before them whether the law was a hard law or not, nor had they the nature of the paper before them, which was judged by the court to be leasing-making; they were only to consider whether the prisoner had discovered the contriver of the paper or not. Upon this the Earl of Lauderdale took up the argument against him, and urged, that severe laws, never executed, were looked on as made only to terrify people; that though after the court's having judged the paper to be seditious it would be capital to conceal the author, yet before such judgment the thing could not be thought so evident that he was bound to reveal it. Upon these heads those lords argued the matter many hours: but when it went to the vote, seven acquitted, but eight cast him: so sentence was given. Upon this many meetings were held, and it was resolved either to force the prison to set him at liberty, or, if that failed, to revenge his death both on the court and on the eight jurors; some undertaking to kill them, and others to burn their houses. When

He was condemned.

the Earl of Traquair understood this, he went to court, and told the King, that the Lord Balmerinoch's life was in his hands, but the execution was in no sort adviseable: so he procured his pardon, for which the party was often reproached with his ingratitude; but he thought he had been much wronged in the prosecution, and so little regarded in the pardon, that he never looked on himself as under any obligation on that account. My father knew the whole steps of this matter, having been the Earl of Lauderdale's most particular friend: he often told me, that the ruin of the King's affairs in Scotland was in a great measure owing to that prosecution; and he carefully preserved the petition itself, and the papers relating to the trial, of which I never saw any copy besides those which I have; and that raised in me a desire of seeing the whole record, which was copied for me, and is now in my hands. It is a little volume, and contains, according to the Scotch method, the whole abstract of all the pleadings, and all the evidence that was given, and is indeed a very noble piece, full of curious matter.

But pardoned.

A liturgy prepared.

When the design of recovering the tithes went on, though but slowly, another design made a greater progress. The bishops of Scotland fell on the framing of a liturgy and a body of canons for the worship and government of that church. These were never examined in any public assembly of the clergy; all was managed by three or four aspiring bishops, Maxwell, Sidserfe, Whitford, and Banautine, the Bishops of Ross, Galloway, Dunblane, and Aberdeen. Maxwell did also accuse the Earl of Traquair, as cold in the King's service, and as managing the treasury deceitfully; and he was aspiring to that office. Spotswood, Archbishop of St. Andrew's, then lord chancellor, was a prudent and mild man, but of no great decency in his course of life. The Earl of Traquair, seeing himself so pushed at, was more earnest than the bishops themselves in promoting the new model of worship and discipline, and by that he recovered the ground he had lost with the King and with Archbishop Laud: he also assisted the bishops in obtaining commissions, subaltern to the high commission court, in their several dioceses, which were thought little different from the courts of inquisition. Sidserfe set this up in Galloway; and a complaint being made in council

of his proceedings, he gave the Earl of Argyle the lie in full council. He was, after all, a very learned and good man, but strangely heated in those matters. And they all were so lifted up with the King's zeal, and so encouraged by Archbishop Laud, that they lost all temper; of which I knew Sidserfe made great acknowledgments in his old age.

The feebleness of the government.

But the unaccountable part of the King's proceedings was, that all this while, when he was endeavouring to recover so great a part of the property of Scotland as the church lands and tithes were, from men that were not like to part with them willingly, and was going to change the whole constitution of that church and kingdom, he raised no force to maintain what he was about to do, but trusted the whole management to the civil execution; by this all people saw the weakness of the government, at the same time that they complained of its rigour. All that came down from court complained of the King's inexorable stiffness, and of the progress popery was making; of the Queen's power with the King; of the favour shewed the Pope's nuncios, and of the many proselytes who were daily falling off to the church of Rome. The Earl of Traquair infused this more effectually, though more covertly, than any other man could do: and when the country formed the first opposition they made to the King's proclamations, and protested against them, he drew the first protestation, as Primrose assured me; though he designed no more than to put a stop to the credit the bishops had, and to the fury of their proceedings; but the matter went much farther than he seemed to intend, for he himself was fatally caught in the snare laid for others. A troop of horse and a regiment of foot had prevented all that followed, or rather had by all appearance established an arbitrary government in that kingdom: but, to speak in the language of a great man, those who conducted matters at that time, had as little of the prudence of the serpent as of the innocence of the dove: and, as my father often told me, he and many others who adhered in the sequel firmly to the King's interest, were then much troubled at the whole conduct of affairs, as being neither wise, legal, nor just. I will go no farther in opening the beginnings of the troubles of Scotland; of these a full account will be found in the Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton. The violence with which that king-

dom did almost unanimously engage against the administration may easily convince one, that the provocation must have been very great to draw on such an entire and vehement concurrence against it.

Saville's forgery prevailed on the Scots.

After the first pacification, upon the new disputes that arose, when the Earl of Lowdun and Dumferling were sent up with the petition from the covenanters, the Lord Saville came to them, and informed them of many particulars, by which they saw the King was highly irritated against them: he took great pains to persuade them to come with their army into England; they very unwillingly hearkened to that proposition, and looked on it as a design from the court to ensnare them, making the Scots invade England, by which this nation might have been provoked to assist the King to conquer Scotland. It is true, he hated the Earl of Strafford so much, that they saw no cause to suspect him; so they entered into a treaty with him about it. The Lord Saville assured them, he spake to them in the name of the most considerable men in England; and he shewed them an engagement under their hands to join with them, if they would come into England, and refuse any treaty but what should be confirmed by a parliament of England. They desired leave to send this paper into Scotland, to which, after much seeming difficulty, he consented: so a cane was hollowed, and this was put within it; and one Frost, afterwards secretary to the committee of both kingdoms, was sent down with it as a poor traveller: it was to be communicated only to three persons, the Earls of Rothes and Argyle, and to Waristoun, the three chief confidents of the covenanters. The Earl of Rothes was a man of pleasure, but of a most obliging temper; his affairs were low. Spotswood had once made the bargain between the King and him before the troubles; but the Earl of Traquair broke it, seeing he was to be raised above himself. The Earl of Rothes had all the arts of making himself popular; only there was too much levity in his temper, and too much liberty in his course of life. The Earl of Argyle was a more solemn sort of a man, grave and sober, free of all scandalous vices, of an invincible calmness of temper, and a pretender to high degrees of piety: he was much set on raising his own family to be a sort of king of the highlands.

The characters of the chief of the covenanters.

Waristoun was my own uncle: he was a man of great

application, could seldom sleep above three hours in the twenty-four: he had studied the law carefully, and had a great quickness of thought, with an extraordinary memory. He went into very high notions of lengthened devotions, in which he continued many hours a day: he would often pray in his family two hours at a time, and had an exhausted copiousness that way: what thought soever struck his fancy, during those effusions, he looked on it as an answer of prayer, and was wholly determined by it: he looked on the covenant as the setting Christ on his throne, and so was out of measure zealous in it. He had no regard to the raising himself or his family, though he had thirteen children; but presbytery was to him more than all the world. He had a readiness and vehemence of speaking that made him very considerable in public assemblies, and he had a fruitful invention, so that he was at all times furnished with expedients. To these three only this paper was to be shewed upon an oath of secrecy, and it was to be deposited in Waristoun's hands. They were only allowed to publish to the nation, that they were sure of a very great and unexpected assistance, which, though it was to be kept secret, would appear in due time. This they published, and it was looked on as an artifice to draw in the nation; but it was afterwards found to be a cheat indeed, but a cheat of Lord Saville's, who had forged all these subscriptions.

The Scots marched with a very sorry equipage: every soldier carried a week's provision of oatmeal, and they had a drove of cattle with them for their food. They had also an invention of guns of white iron, tinned, and done about with leather, and corded so that they could serve for two or three discharges. These were light, and were carried on horses; and when they came to Newburn, the English army that defended the ford was surprised with a discharge of artillery. Some thought it magic; and all were put in such disorder, that the whole army did run with so great precipitation, that Sir Thomas Fairfax, who had a command in it, did not stick to own, that till he passed the Tees his legs trembled under him. This struck many of the enthusiasts of the King's side, as much as it exalted the Scots; who were next day possessed of Newcastle, and so were masters not only of Northumberland and the

The Scots came into England.

bishopric of Duresme, but of the collieries; by which, if they had not been in a good understanding with the city of London, they could have distressed them extremely: but all the use the city made of this was, to raise a great outcry, and to complain of the war, since it was now in the power of the Scots to starve them. Upon that, petitions were sent from the city and from some counties to the King, praying a treaty with the Scots. The Lord Wharton and the Lord Howard, of Escrick, undertook to deliver some of these, which they did, and were clapped up upon it. A council of war was held, and it was resolved on, as the Lord Wharton told me, to shoot them at the head of the army, as movers of sedition. This was chiefly pressed by the Earl of Strafford. Duke Hamilton spoke nothing till the council rose; and then he asked Strafford if he was sure of the army, who seemed surprised at the question: but he, upon inquiry, understood that very probably a general mutiny, if not a total revolt, would have followed, if any such execution had been attempted. This success of the Scots ruined the King's affairs; and by it the necessity of the union of the two kingdoms may appear very evident, for nothing but a superior army, able to beat the Scots, can hinder their doing this at any time; and the seizing the collieries must immediately bring the city of London into great distress. Two armies were now in the north as a load on the King, besides all the other grievances. The Lord Saville's forgery came to be discovered. The King knew it; and yet he was brought afterwards to trust him, and to advance him to be Earl of Sussex. The King pressed my uncle to deliver him the letter, who excused himself upon his oath; and not knowing what use might be made of it, he cut out every subscription, and sent it to the person for whom it was forged. The imitation was so exact, that every man, as soon as he saw his hand simply by itself, acknowledged that he could not have denied it.

Great discontents in England.

The King was now in great straits: he had laid up 700,000*l.* before the troubles in Scotland began; and yet had raised no guards nor force in England, but trusted a very illegal administration to a legal execution. His treasure was now exhausted; his subjects were highly irritated; the ministry were all frightened, being exposed to the anger and justice of the parliament; so that he had brought himself into

The ill state of the King's affairs.

great distress, but had not the dexterity to extricate himself out of it. He loved high and rough methods, but had neither the skill to conduct them, nor the height of genius to manage them. He hated all that offered prudent and moderate counsels: he thought it flowed from a meanness of spirit, and a care to preserve themselves by sacrificing his authority, or from republican principles: and even when he saw it was necessary to follow such advices, yet he hated those that gave them. His heart was wholly turned to the gaining the two armies: in order to that he gained the Earl of Rothes entirely, who hoped, by the King's mediation, to have married the Countess of Devonshire, a rich and magnificent lady, that lived long in the greatest state of any in that age; he also gained the Earl of Montrose, who was a young man well learned, who had travelled, but had taken upon him the port of a hero too much. When he was beyond sea he travelled with the Earl of Denbigh; and they consulted all the astrologers they could hear of. I plainly saw the Earl of Denbigh relied on what had been told him to his dying day; and the rather, because the Earl of Montrose was promised a glorious fortune for some time, but all was to be overthrown in conclusion. When the Earl of Montrose returned from his travels, he was not considered by the King as he thought he deserved; so he studied to render himself popular in Scotland, and he was the first man in the opposition they made during the first war: he both advised and drew the letter to the King of France, for which the Lord Lowdun, who signed it, was imprisoned in the Tower of London. But the Earl of Lauderdale, as he himself told me, when it came to his turn to sign that letter, found false French in it; for instead of *rayons de soleil,* he had writ *raye de soleil,* which in French signifies a sort of fish; and so the matter went no farther at that time, and the treaty came on so soon after, that it was never again taken up. The Earl of Montrose was gained by the King at Berwick, and undertook to do great services: he either fancied, or at least he made the King fancy, that he could turn the whole kingdom; yet, indeed, he could do nothing. He was again trying to make a new party, and he kept a correspondence with the King when he lay at Newcastle, and was pretending he had a great interest among the covenanters, whereas

at that time he had none at all. All these little plottings came to be either known, or at least suspected. The Queen was a woman of great vivacity in conversation, and loved all her life long to be in intrigues of all sorts, but was not so secret in them as such times and such affairs required. She was a woman of no manner of judgment; she was bad at contrivance, but much worse in the execution; but by the liveliness of her discourse she made always a great impression on the King; and to her little practices, as well as to the King's own temper, the sequel of all his misfortunes was owing. I know it was a maxim infused into his sons, which I have often heard from King James, that he was undone by his concessions. This is true in some respect; for his passing the act, that the parliament should sit during pleasure, was indeed his ruin, to which he was drawn by the Queen. But if he had not made great concessions, he had sunk without being able to make a struggle for it, and could not have divided the nation, or engaged so many to have stood by him; since by the concessions that he made, especially that of the triennial parliaments, the honest and quiet part of the nation was satisfied, and thought their religion and liberties were secured; so they broke off from* those violenter propositions that occasioned the war.

The truth was, the King did not come into those concessions seasonably, nor with a good grace; all appeared to be extorted from him. There were also grounds, whether true or plausible, to make it to be believed, that he intended not to stand to them any longer than he lay under that force, that visibly drew them from him, contrary to his own inclinations. The proofs that appeared of some particulars, that made this seem true, made other things that were whispered to be more readily believed; for in all critical times there are deceitful people of both sides, that pretend to merit by making discoveries, on condition that no use shall be made of them as witnesses, which is one of the most pestiferous ways of calumny possible. Almost the whole court had been concerned in one illegal grant or another; so these courtiers, to get their faults passed over,

* It seems clearer, if instead of *broke off from*, the sentence ran *would not go into*.

were as so many spies upon the King and Queen: they told all they heard, and perhaps not without large additions, to the leading men of the House of Commons. This inflamed the jealousy, and pushed them on to the making still new demands. One eminent passage was told me by the Lord Hollis:—

An account of the Earl of Strafford's being given up by the King.

The Earl of Strafford had married his sister; so, though in that parliament he was one of the hottest men of the party, yet when that matter was before them he always withdrew. When the bill of attainder was passed, the King sent for him, to know what he could do to save the Earl of Strafford. Hollis answered, that if the King pleased, since the execution of the law was in him, he might legally grant him a reprieve, which must be good in law; but he would not advise it. That which he proposed was, that Lord Strafford should send him a petition for a short respite, to settle his affairs and to prepare for death; upon which he advised the King to come next day with the petition in his hands, and lay it before the two houses, with a speech which he drew for the King; and Hollis said to him, he would try his interest among his friends to get them to consnet to it. He prepared a great many by assuring them, that if they would save Lord Strafford, he would wholly become theirs, in consequence of his first principles; and that he might do them much more service by being preserved, than he could do if made an example upon such new and doubtful points. In this he had wrought on so many, that he believed if the King's party had struck into it he might have saved him. It was carried to the Queen, as if Hollis had engaged that the Earl of Strafford should accuse her, and discover all he knew; so the Queen, not only diverted the King from going to the parliament, changing the speech into a message, all writ with the King's own hand, and sent to the House of Lords by the Prince of Wales (which Hollis had said would have perhaps done as well, the King being apt to spoil things by an unacceptable manner): but, to the wonder of the whole world, the Queen prevailed with him to add that mean postscript, "If he must die, it were charity to reprieve him till Saturday;" which was a very unhandsome giving up of the whole message. When it was communicated to both houses, the whole court party was

plainly against it; and so he fell truly by the Queen's means.

The mentioning this makes me add one particular concerning Archbishop Laud. When his impeachment was brought to the Lords' bar, he, apprehending how it would end, sent over Warner, Bishop of Rochester, with the keys of his closet and cabinet, that he might destroy or put out of the way all papers that might either hurt himself or any body else. He was at that work for three hours, till upon Laud's being committed to the black rod, a messenger went over to seal up his closet, who came after all was withdrawn. Among the writings he took away, it is believed the original Magna Charta, passed by King John, in the mead near Staines, was one. This was found among Warner's papers by his executor; and that descended to his son and executor, Colonel Lee, who gave it to me: so it is now in my hands, and it came very fairly to me. For this conveyance of it we have nothing but conjecture.

I do not intend to prosecute the history of the wars. I have told a great deal relating to them in the Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton. Rushworth's Collections contain many excellent materials; and now the first volume of the Earl of Clarendon's History gives a faithful representation of the beginnings of the troubles, though written in favour of the court, and full of the best excuses that such ill things were capable of: I shall therefore only set out what I had particular reason to know, and what is not to be met with in books.

The new model of the presbytery in Scotland.

The kirk was now settled in Scotland with a new mixture of ruling elders; which, though they were taken from the Geneva pattern, to assist, or rather to be a check on the ministers in the managing the parochial discipline, yet these never came to their assemblies till the year 1638, when they thought it necessary to make them first go and carry all the elections of the ministers at the several presbyteries, and next come themselves and sit in the assemblies. The nobility and chief gentry offered themselves upon that occasion; and the ministers, since they saw they were like to act in opposition to the King's orders, were glad to have so great a support. But the elders that now came to assist them beginning to take, as the ministers thought, too much on them, they grew weary of such imperious masters; so

they studied to work up the inferior people to much zeal; and, as they wrought any up to some measure of heat and knowledge, they brought them also into their eldership, and so got a majority of hot zealots who depended on them: one out of these was deputed to attend on the judicatories. They had synods of all the clergy, in one or more counties, who met twice a year, and a general assembly met once a year; and, at parting, that body named some, called the commission of the kirk, who were to sit in the intervals to prepare matters for the next assembly, and to look into all the concerns of the church, to give warning of dangers, and to inspect all proceedings of the state, as far as related to the matters of religion: by these means they became terrible to all their enemies. In their sermons, and chiefly in their prayers, all that passed in the state was canvassed: men were as good as named, and either recommended or complained of to God, as they were acceptable or odious to them. This grew up in time to an insufferable degree of boldness. The way that was given to it, when the King and the bishops were their common themes, made that afterwards the humour could not be restrained; and it grew so petulant, that the pulpit was a scene of news and passion. For some years this was managed with great appearances of fervour, by men of age and some authority; but when the younger and hotter zealots took it up, it became odious to almost all sorts of people, except some sour enthusiasts, who thought all their impertinence was zeal and an effect of inspiration, which flowed naturally from the conceit of extemporary prayers being praying by the Spirit.

The chief ministers of the party.

Henderson, a minister of Edinburgh, was by much the wisest and gravest of them all; but as all his performances that I have seen are flat and heavy, so he found it was an easier thing to raise a flame than to quench it. He studied to keep his party to him, yet he found he could not moderate the heat of some fiery spirits; so when he saw he could follow them no more, but that they had got the people out of his hands, he sunk both in body and mind, and died soon after. The person next to him was Douglas, believed to be descended from the royal family, though the wrong way: there appeared an air of greatness in him, that made all that saw him inclined enough to believe he was of no ordinary descent. He was a reserved man: he had the

Scriptures by heart to the exactness of a Jew, for he was as a concordance: he was too calm and two grave for the furious men, but yet he was much depended on for his prudence. I knew him in his old age, and saw plainly he was a slave to his popularity, and durst not own the free thoughts he had of some things for fear of offending the people.

I will not run out in giving the characters of the other leading preachers among them, such as Dickson, Blair, Rutherford, Baily, Cant, and the two Gillispys. They were men all of a sort: they affected great sublimities in devotion: they poured themselves out in their prayers with a loud voice, and often with many tears. They had but an ordinary proportion of learning among them; something of Hebrew, and very little Greek: books of controversy with the papists, but above all with the Arminians, was the height of their study. A way of preaching by doctrine, reason, and use, was what they set up on; and some of them affected a strain of stating cases of conscience, not with relation to moral actions, but to some reflections on their condition and temper: that was occasioned chiefly by their conceit of praying by the Spirit, which every one could not attain to, or keep up to the same heat in, at all times. The learning they recommended to their young divines were some German systems, some commentators on the scripture, books of controversy, and practical books: they were so careful to oblige them to make their round in these, that if they had no men of great learning among them, yet none were very ignorant; as if they had thought an equality in learning was necessary to keep up the parity of their government. None could be suffered to preach as expectants (as they called them), but after a trial or two in private before the ministers alone; then two or three sermons were to be preached in public, some more learnedly, some more practically; then a head in divinity was to be common placed in Latin, and the person was to maintain theses upon it: he was also to be tried in Greek and Hebrew, and in scripture chronology. The questionary trial came last, every minister asking such questions as he pleased: when any had passed through all these with approbation, which was done in a course of three or four months, he was allowed to preach when invited; and if he was presented or

Their studies, and other methods.

called to a church, he was to pass through a new set of the same trials. This made that there was a small circle of knowledge in which they were generally well instructed. True morality was little studied or esteemed by them: they took much pains among their people to maintain their authority; they affected all the ways of familiarity that were like to gain on them.

Their great severity.

They forced all people to sign the covenant; and the greatest part of the episcopal clergy, among whom were two bishops, came to them, and renounced their former principles, and desired to be received into their body. At first they received all that offered themselves, but afterwards they repented of this; and the violent men among them were ever pressing the purging of the kirk, as they called it; that is, the ejecting all the episcopal clergy. Then they took up the term of malignants, by which all who differed from them were distinguished: but the strictness of piety and good life, which had gained them so much reputation before the war, began to wear off; and instead of that, a fierceness of temper, and a copiousness of many long sermons, and much longer prayers, came to be the distinction of the party. This they carried even to the saying grace before and after meat sometimes to the length of a whole hour: but as every new war broke out, there was a visible abatement of even the outward shews of piety: thus the war corrupted both sides. When the war broke out in England, the Scots had a great mind to go into it. The decayed nobility, the military men, and the ministers, were violently set on it. They saw what good quarters they had in the north of England, and they hoped the umpirage of the war would fall into their hands. The division appearing so near an equality in England, they reckoned they would turn the scales, and so be courted on both sides; and they did not doubt to draw great advantages from it, both for the nation in general, and themselves in particular. Duke Hamilton was trusted by the King with the management of his affairs in that kingdom, and had powers to offer, but so secretly, that if discovered it could not be proved, for fear of disgusting the English, that if they would engage in the King's side, he would consent to the uniting Northumberland, Cumberland, and Westmoreland, to Scotland; and that Newcastle should be the seat of the government: that

Conditions offered to the Scots.

the Prince of Wales should hold his court always among them; that every third year the King should go among them; and every office in the King's household should in the third turn be given to a Scotchman. This I found not among Duke Hamilton's papers; but the Earl of Lauderdale assured me of it, and that at the Isle of Wight they had all the engagements from the King that he could give. Duke Hamilton quickly saw it was a vain imagination to hope that kingdom could be brought to espouse the King's quarrel; the inclination ran strong the other way: all he hoped to succeed in was to keep them neuter for some time, and this he saw could not hold long: so after he had kept off their engaging with England all the year 1643, he and his friends saw it was in vain to struggle any longer. The course they all resolved on was, that the nobility should fall in heartily with the inclinations of the nation to join with England, that so they might procure to themselves and their friends the chief commands in the army: and then, when they were in England, and that their army was as a distinct body separated from the rest of the kingdom, it might be much easier to gain them to the King's service, than it was at that time to work on the whole nation.

This was not a very sincere way of proceeding: but it intended for the King's service, and it would probably have had the effect designed by it if some accidents had not happened that changed the face of affairs, which are not rightly understood, and therefore I will open them clearly. The Earl of Montrose and a party of high royalists were for entering into an open breach with the country in the beginning of the year 1643, but offered no probable methods of maintaining it, nor could they reckon themselves assured of any considerable party. They were full of undertakings; but when they were pressed to shew what concurrence might be depended on, nothing was offered but from the highlanders; and on this wise men could not rely: so Duke Hamilton would not expose the King's affairs by such a desperate way of proceeding. Upon this they went to Oxford, and filled all people there with complaints of the treachery of the Hamiltons, and they pretended they could have secured Scotland if their propositions had been entertained. This was but too suitable to the King's own inclinations, and to the humour that was then prevailing at

Montrose's undertakings.

Oxford. So when the two Hamiltons came up they were not admitted to speak to the King; and it was believed, if the younger brother had not made his escape, that both would have suffered: for when the Queen heard of his escape, she, with great commotion, said, Abercorn has missed a dukedom; for that earl was a papist, and next to the two brothers. They could have demonstrated, if heard, that they were sure of above two parts in three of the officers of the army, and did not doubt to have engaged the army in the King's cause: but the failing in this was not all. The Earl, then made Marquis of Montrose, had powers given him, such as he desired, and was sent down with them; but he could do nothing till the end of the year. A great body of the Macdonalds, commanded by one Colonel Killoch, came over from Ireland to recover Kentire, the best country of all the highlands, out from which they had been driven by the Argyle family who had possessed their country about fifty years. The head of these was the Earl of Antrim, who had married the Duke of Buckingham's widow; and, being a papist, and having a great command in Ulster, was much relied on by the Queen. He was the main person in the first rebellion, and was the most engaged in bloodshed of any in the north; yet he continued to correspond with the Queen to the great prejudice of the King's affairs. When the Marquis of Montrose heard they were in Argyleshire, he went to them and told them, if they would let him lead them he would carry them into the heart of the kingdom, and procure them better quarters and good pay: so he led them into Perthshire. The Scots had at that time an army in England, and another in Ireland; yet they did not think it necessary to call home any part of either; but, despising the Irish and the highlanders, they raised a tumultuary army, and put it under the command of some lords noted for want of courage, and of others who wished well to the other side. The Marquis of Montrose's men were desperate, and met with little resistance; so that small body of the covenanters army was routed. And here the Marquis of Montrose got horses and ammunition, having but three horses before, and powder only for one charge. Then he became considerable, and he marched through the northern parts by Aberdeen. The Marquis of Huntly was in the King's interests, but would not join with him, though

his sons did. Astrology ruined him: he believed the stars, and they deceived him: he said often that neither the King, nor the Hamiltons, nor Montrose would prosper: he believed he should outlive them all and escape at last, as it happened in conclusion as to outliving the others. He was naturally a gallant man; but the stars had so subdued him, that he made a poor figure during the whole course of the wars.

Good advices given to the King.

The Marquis of Montrose's success was very mischievous, and proved the ruin of the King's affairs; on which I should not have depended entirely if I had had this only from the Earl of Lauderdale, who was indeed my first author; but it was fully confirmed to me by the Lord Hollis, who had gone in with great heat into the beginnings of the war; but he soon saw the ill consequences it already had, and the worse that were like to grow with the progress of it: he had, in the beginning of the year 1643, when he was sent to Oxford with the propositions, taken great pains on all about the King to convince them of the necessity of their yielding in time, since the longer they stood out the conditions would be harder; and when he was sent by the parliament, in the end of the year 1644, with other propositions, he and Whitlock entered into secret conferences with the King, of which some account is given by Whitlock in his Memoirs. They, with other commissioners that were sent to Oxford, possessed the King, and all that were in great credit with him, with this, that it was absolutely necessary the King should put an end to the war by a treaty; a new party of hot men was springing up, that were plainly for changing the government: they were growing much in the army, but were yet far from carrying any thing in the House: they had gained much strength this summer; and they might make a great progress by the accidents that another year might produce: they confessed there were many things hard to be digested, that must be done in order to a peace: they asked things that were unreasonable; but they were forced to consent to those demands, otherwise they would have lost their credit with the city and the people, who could not be satisfied without a very entire security and a full satisfaction; but the extremity to which matters might be carried otherwise, made it necessary to come to a peace on any terms whatsoever,

since no terms could be so bad as the continuance of the war: the King must trust them, though they were not at that time disposed to trust him so much as it were to be wished: they said, farther, that if a peace should follow, it would be a much easier thing to get any hard laws now moved for to be repealed, than it was now to hinder their being insisted on. With these things Hollis told me that the King, and many of his counsellors, who saw how his affairs declined, and with what difficulty they could hope to continue the war another year, were satisfied. The King more particularly began to feel the insolence of the military men, and of those who were daily reproaching him with their services; so that they were become as uneasy to him as those of Westminster had been formerly. But some came in the interval from Lord Montrose with such an account of what he had done, of the strength he had, and of his hopes next summer, that the King was by that prevailed on to believe his affairs would mend, and that he might afterwards treat on better terms. This unhappily wrought so far, that the limitations he put on those he sent to treat at Uxbridge, made the whole design miscarry. That raised the spirits of those that were already but too much exasperated. The Marquis of Montrose made a great progress the next year; but he laid no lasting foundation, for he did not make himself master of the strong places or passes of the kingdom. After his last and greatest victory at Kilsyth, he was lifted up out of measure. The Macdonalds were every where fierce masters and ravenous plunderers: and the other highlanders, who did not such military executions, yet were good at robbing; and when they had got as much as they could carry home on their backs, they deserted. The Macdonalds also left him to go and execute their revenge on the Argyle's country. The Marquis of Montrose thought he was now master, but had no scheme how to fix his conquests. He wasted the estates of his enemies, chiefly the Hamiltons; and went towards the borders of England, though he had but a small force left about him; but he thought his name carried terror with it. So he writ to the King, that he had gone over the land from Dan to Beersheba: he prayed the King to come down in these words, "Come thou and take the city, "lest I take it, and it be called by my name." This letter

But not followed.

was writ, but never sent, for he was routed, and his papers taken, before he had dispatched the courier. When his papers were taken, many letters of the King, and of others at Oxford, were found, as the Earl of Crawford, one appointed to read them, told me, which increased the disgusts; but these were not published. Upon this occasion many prisoners that had quarters given them were murdered in cold blood; and as they sent them to some towns that had been ill used by Lord Montrose's army, the people in revenge fell on them and knocked them on the head. Several persons of quality were condemned for being with them: and they were proceeded against both with severity and with indignities. The preachers thundered in their pulpits against all that did the work of the Lord deceitfully, and cried out against all that were for moderate proceedings as guilty of the blood that had been shed. "Thine eye shall not pity, and thou shalt not spare," were often inculcated after every execution; they triumphed with so little decency, that it gave all people very ill impressions of them. But this was not the worst effect of Lord Montrose's expedition: it lost the opportunity at Uxbridge; it alienated the Scots much from the King; it exalted all that were enemies to peace. Now they seemed to have some colour for all those aspersions they had cast on the King, as if he had been in a correspondence with the Irish rebels, when the worst tribe of them had been thus employed by him. His affairs declined totally in England that summer; and Lord Hollis said to me, all was owing to Lord Montrose's unhappy successes.

Antrim's correspondence with the King and Queen.

Upon this occasion I will relate somewhat concerning the Earl of Antrim. I had in my hand several of his letters to the King in the year 1646, writ in a very confident style. One was somewhat particular: he in a postscript desired the King to send the inclosed to the good woman, without making any excuse for the presumption, by which, as follows in the postscript, he meant his wife, the Dutchess of Buckingham. This made me more easy to believe a story that the Earl of Essex told me he had from the Earl o Northumberland: upon the restoration, in the year 1660, Lord Antrim was thought guilty of so much bloodshed, that it was taken for granted he could not be included in the indemnity that was to pass in Ireland; upon this,

he (Lord Antrim) seeing the Duke of Ormond set against him, came over to London, and was lodged at Somerset House; and it was believed that, having no children, he settled his estate on Jermyn, then Earl of St. Albans; but before he came away he had made a prior settlement in favour of his brother. He petitioned the King to order a committee of council to examine the warrants that he had acted upon. The Earl of Clarendon was for rejecting the petition, as containing a high indignity to the memory of King Charles the First; and said plainly, at council table, that if any person had pretended to affirm such a thing while they were at Oxford, he would either have been severely punished for it, or the King would soon have had a very thin court. But it seemed just to see what he had to say for himself: so a committee was named, of which the Earl of Northumberland was the chief. He produced to them some of the King's letters, but they did not come up to a full proof. In one of them the King wrote that he had not then leisure, but referred himself to the Queen's letter, and said that was all one as if he writ himself. Upon this foundation he produced a series of letters writ by himself to the Queen, in which he gave her an account of every one of these particulars that were laid to his charge, and shewed the grounds he went on, and desired her directions to every one of these: he had answers ordering him to do as he did. This the Queen-mother espoused with great zeal, and said she was bound in honour to save him. I saw a great deal of that management; for I was then at court. But it was generally believed, that this train of letters was made up at that time in a collusion between the Queen and him; so a report was prepared to be signed by the committee, setting forth that he had so fully justified himself in every thing that had been objected to him, that he ought not to be excepted out of the indemnity. This was brought first to the Earl of Northumberland to be signed by him; but he refused it, and said he was sorry he had produced such warrants, but he did not think they could serve his turn, for he did not believe any warrant from the King or Queen could justify so much bloodshed, in so many black instances as were laid against him. Upon his refusal the rest of the committee did not think fit to sign the report; so it was let fall, and the King was pre-

vailed on to write to the Duke of Ormond, telling him that he had so vindicated himself that he must endeavour to get him to be included in the indemnity. That was done, and was no small reproach to the King, that did thus sacrifice his father's honour to his mother's importunity. Upon this the Earl of Essex told me, that he had taken all the pains he could to inquire into the original of the Irish massacre, but he could never see any reason to believe the King had any accession to it. He did indeed believe that the Queen hearkened to the propositions made by the Irish, who undertook to take the government of Ireland into their hands, which they thought they could easily perform: and then, they said, they would assist the King to subdue the hot spirits at Westminster. With this the plot of the insurrection began; and all the Irish believed the Queen encouraged it. But in the first design there was no thought of a massacre; that came in head as they were laying the methods of executing it: so, as those were managed by the priests, they were the chief men that set on the Irish to all the blood and cruelty that followed.

The original of the Irish massacre.

I know nothing in particular of the sequel of the war, nor of all the confusions that happened till the murder of King Charles the First; only one passage I had from Lieutenant General Drumond, afterwards Lord Strathallan. He served on the King's side, but he had many friends among those who were for the covenant: so the King's affairs being now ruined, he was recommended to Cromwell, being then in a treaty with the Spanish ambassador, who was negotiating for some regiments to be levied and sent over from Scotland to Flanders: he happened to be with Cromwell when the commissioners, sent from Scotland to protest against the putting the King to death, came to argue the matter with him. Cromwell bade Drumond stay and hear their conference, which he did. They began in a heavy languid style, to lay indeed great load on the King: but they still insisted on that clause in the covenant, by which they swore they would be faithful in the preservation of his Majesty's person: with this they shewed upon what terms Scotland, as well as the two houses, had engaged in the war; and what solemn declarations of their zeal and duty to the King they all along published, which would now appear, to the scandal and re-

proach of the Christian name, to have been false pretences, if when the King was in their power they should proceed to extremities. Upon this Cromwell entered into a long discourse of the nature of the regal power, according to the principles of Mariana and Buchanan; he thought a breach of trust in a king ought to be punished more than any other crime whatsoever: he said as to their covenant, they swore to the preservation of the King's person in defence of the true religion; if then it appeared that the settlement of the true religion was obstructed by the King, so that they could not come at it but by putting him out of the way, then their oath could not bind them to the preserving him any longer. He said, also, their covenant did bind them to bring all malignants, incendiaries, and enemies to the cause, to condign punishment; and was not this to be executed impartially? what were all those, on whom public justice had been done, especially those who suffered for joining with Montrose, but small offenders acting by commission from the King, who was therefore the principal, and so the most guilty? Drumond said, Cromwell had plainly the better of them at their own weapon, and upon their own principles. At this time presbytery was at its height in Scotland.

Cromwell argues with the Scots concerning the King's death.

In summer 1648, when the parliament declared they would engage to rescue the King from his imprisonment and the parliament of England from the force it was put under by the army, the nobility went into the design, all except six or eight. The King had signed an engagement to make good his offers to the nation of the northern counties, with the other conditions formerly mentioned: and particular favours were promised to every one that concurred in it. The Marquis of Argyle gave it out that the Hamiltons, let them pretend what they would, had no sincere intentions to their cause, but had engaged to serve the King on his own terms: he filled the preachers with such jealousies of this, that though all the demands that they made for the security of their cause, and in declaring the grounds of the war, were complied with, yet they could not be satisfied, but still said the Hamiltons were in a confederacy with the malignants in England, and did not intend to stand to what they had promised. The general assembly declared against it, as an unlawful confederacy

The opposition of the general assembly to the parliament.

with the enemies of God, and called it the unlawful engagement, which came to be the name commonly given to it in all their pulpits. They every where preached against it, and opposed the levies all they could by solemn denunciations of the wrath and curse of God on all concerned in them. This was a strange piece of opposition to the state, little inferior to what was pretended to, and put in practice, by the church of Rome.

The south-west counties of Scotland have seldom corn enough to serve them round the year; and the northern parts producing more than they need, those in the west come in the summer to buy at Leith the stores that come from the north: and from a word whiggam, used in driving their horses, all that drove were called the whiggamors, and shorter, the whiggs. Now in that year, after the news came down of Duke Hamilton's defeat, the ministers animated their people to rise, and march to Edinburgh: and they came up marching on the head of their parishes, with an unheard-of fury, praying and preaching all the way as they came. The Marquis of Argyle and his party came and headed them, they being about 6000. This was called the whiggamor's inroad; and, ever after that, all that opposed the court came in contempt to be called whiggs: and from Scotland the word was brought into England, where it is now one of our unhappy terms of distinction.

The ministers made an insurrection.

The committee of their estates, with the force they had in their hands, could easily have dissipated this undisciplined herd; but they, knowing their own weakness, sent to Cromwell, desiring his assistance. Upon that the committee saw they could not stand before him; so they came to a treaty, and delivered up the government to this new body. Upon their assuming it, they declared all who had served or assisted in the engagement incapable of any employment, till they had first satisfied the kirk of the truth of their repentance, and made public professions of it. All churches were upon that full of mock penitents, some making their acknowledgments all in tears, to gain more credit with the new party. The Earl of Lowdun, that was chancellor, had entered into solemn promises both to the King and the Hamiltons: but when he came to Scotland, his wife, a high covenanter, and an heiress, by whom he had both honour and estate, threatened him, if he went on that

way, with a process of adultery, in which she could have had very copious proofs: he durst not stand this, and so compounded the matter by the deserting his friends, and turning over to the other side; of which he made public confession in the church of Edinburgh, with many tears, confessing his weakness in yielding to the temptation of what had a shew of honour and loyalty, for which he expressed a hearty sorrow. Those that came in early, with great shews of compunction, got easier off; but those who stood out long found it a harder matter to make their peace. Cromwell came down to Scotland, and saw the new model fully settled.

The treaty in the Isle of Wight.

During his absence from the scene, the treaty of the Isle of Wight was set on foot by the parliament, who seeing the army at such a distance, took this occasion of treating with the King. Sir Henry Vane, and others, who were for a change of government, had no mind to treat any more; but both city and country were so desirous of a personal treaty, that it could not be resisted. Vane, Pierpoint, and some others, went to the treaty on purpose to delay matters till the army could be brought up to London. All that wished well to the treaty prayed the King at their first coming to dispatch the business with all possible haste, and to grant the first day all that he could bring himself to grant on the last. Hollis and Grimston told me, they had both on their knees begged this of the King. They said, they knew Vane would study to draw out the treaty to a great length; and he, who declared for an unbounded liberty of conscience, would try to gain on the King's party, by the offer of a toleration for the Common Prayer and the episcopal clergy. His design in that was to gain time, till Cromwell should settle Scotland and the north. But they said, if the King would frankly come in without the formality of papers backward and forward, and send them back next day with the concessions that were absolutely necessary, they did not doubt but he should in a very few days be brought up with honour, freedom, and safety to the parliament, and that matters should be brought to a present settlement. Titus, who was then much trusted by the King, and employed in a negotiation with the presbyterian party, told me he had spoke often and earnestly to him in the same strain, but the King could not come to a

resolution; and he still fancied, that in the struggle between the House of Commons and the army, both saw they needed him so much to give them the superior strength, that he imagined by balancing them he would bring both sides into a greater dependence on himself, and force them to better terms. In this Vane flattered the episcopal party, to the King's ruin as well as their own: but they still hated the presbyterians as the first authors of the war, and seemed unwilling to think well of them, or to be beholding to them. Thus the treaty went on with a fatal slowness; and, by the time it was come to some maturity, Cromwell came up with his army, and overturned all.

Cromwell's dissimulation.

Upon this I will set down what Sir Harbotle Grimston told me a few weeks before his death: whether it was done at this time, or the year before, I cannot tell; I rather believe the latter. When the House of Commons and the army were a quarrelling, at a meeting of the officers, it was proposed to purge the army better, that they might know whom to depend on. Cromwell upon that said he was sure of the army; but there was another body, that had more need of purging, naming the House of Commons, and he thought the army only could do that. Two officers that were present brought an account of this to Grimston, who carried them with him to the lobby of the House of Commons, they being resolved to justify it to the House. There was another debate then on foot, but Grimston diverted it, and said, he had a matter of privilege of the highest sort to lay before them: it was about the being and freedom of the House. So he charged Cromwell with the design of putting a force on the House: he had his witnesses at the door, and desired they might be examined. They were brought to the bar, and justified all that they had said to him, and gave a full relation of all that had passed at their meetings. When they withdrew, Cromwell fell down on his knees, and made a solemn prayer to God, attesting his innocence, and his zeal for the service of the House: he submitted himself to the providence of God, who it seems thought fit to exercise him with calumny and slander, but he committed his cause to him. This he did with great vehemence, and with many tears. After this strange and bold preamble he made so long a speech, justifying both himself and the rest of the officers, except a few that seemed inclined to return back

to Egypt, that he wearied out the House, and wrought so much on his party, that what the witnesses had said was so little believed, that, had it been moved, Grimston thought that both he and they would have been sent to the Tower; but, whether their guilt made them modest, or that they had no mind to have the matter much talked of, they let it fall, and there was no strength on the other side to carry it farther. To complete the scene, as soon as ever Cromwell got out of the House, he resolved to trust himself no more among them; but went to the army, and in a few days he brought them up, and forced a great many from the House.

I had much discourse on this head with one who knew Cromwell well, and all that set of men, and asked him how they could excuse all the prevarications, and other ill things, of which they were visibly guilty in the conduct of their affairs. He told me, they believed there were great occasions in which some men were called to great services, in the doing of which they were excused from the common rules of morality: such were the practices of Ehud and Jael, Samson and David; and by this they fancied they had a privilege from observing the standing rules. It is very obvious how far this principle may be carried, and how all justice and mercy may be laid aside on this pretence by every bold enthusiast. Ludlow, in his Memoirs, justifies this force put on the parliament, as much as he condemns the force that Cromwell and the army afterwards put on the House; and he seems to lay this down for a maxim, that the military power ought always to be subject to the civil: and yet, without any sort of resentment for what he had done, he owns the share he had in the force put on the parliament at this time. The plain reconciling of this is, that he thought when the army judged the parliament was in the wrong they might use violence, but not otherwise; which gives the army a superior authority, and an inspection into the proceedings of the parliament. This shews how impossible it is to set up a commonwealth in England; for that cannot be brought about but by a military force, and they will ever keep the parliament in subjection to them, and so keep up their own authority.

I will leave all that relates to the King's trial and death to common historians, knowing nothing that is particular of that great transaction, which was certainly one of the

The men chiefly engaged in taking the King's life.

most amazing scenes in history. Ireton was the person that drove it on; for Cromwell was all the while in some suspence about it. Ireton had the principles and the temper of a Cassius in him; he stuck at nothing that might have turned England to a commonwealth; and he found out Cook and Bradshaw, two bold lawyers, as proper instruments for managing it. Fairfax was much distracted in his mind, and changed purposes often every day. The presbyterians and the body of the city were much against it, and were every where fasting and praying for the King's preservation. There was not above 8000 of the army about the town; but these were selected out of the whole army, as the most engaged in enthusiasm, and they were kept at prayer, in their way, almost day and night, except when they were upon duty: so that they were wrought up to a pitch of fury, that struck a terror into all people. On the other hand, the King's party was without spirit; and, as many of themselves have said to me, they could never believe his death was really intended till it was too late. They thought all was a pageantry to strike a terror, and to force the King to such concessions as they had a mind to extort from him.

The King's behaviour.

The King himself shewed a calm and a composed firmness, which amazed all people; and that so much the more, because it was not natural to him: it was imputed to a very extraordinary measure of supernatural assistance. Bishop Juxon did the duty of his function honestly, but with a dry coldness that could not raise the King's thoughts; so that it was owing wholly to somewhat within himself that he went through so many indignities with so much true greatness, without disorder or any sort of affectation. Thus he died greater than he had lived; and shewed, that which has been often observed of the whole race of the Stuarts, that they bore misfortunes better than prosperity. His reign, both in peace and war, was a continual series of errors; so that it does not appear that he had a true judgment of things. He was out of measure set on following his humour, but unreasonably feeble to those whom he trusted, chiefly to the Queen. He had too high a notion of the regal power, and thought that every opposition to it was rebellion: he minded little things too much, and was more concerned in the drawing of a paper than in fighting

a battle. He had a firm aversion to popery, but was much inclined to a middle way between protestants and papists, by which he lost the one without gaining the other. His engaging the Duke of Rohan in the war of Rochelle, and then assisting him so poorly, and forsaking him at last, gave an ill character of him to all the protestants abroad. The Earl of Lauderdale told me the Duke of Rohan was at Geneva, where he himself was, when he received a very long letter, or rather a little book, from my father, which gave him a copious account of the beginning of the troubles in Scotland; he translated it to the Duke of Rohan, who expressed a vehement indignation at the court of England for their usage of him; of which this was the account he then gave:—

The affair of Rochelle.

The Duke of Buckingham had a secret conversation with the Queen of France, of which the queen-mother was very jealous, and possessed the King with such a sense of it, that he was ordered immediately to leave the court. Upon his return to England, under this affront, he possessed the King with such a hatred of that court, that the Queen was ill used on her coming over, and all her servants were sent back. He told him also, that the protestants were so ill used, and so strong, that if he would protect them they would involve that kingdom in new wars; which he represented as so glorious a beginning of his reign, that the King, without weighing the consequence of it, sent one to treat with the Duke of Rohan about it. Great assistance was promised by sea: so a war was resolved on, in which the share that our court had is well enough known. But the infamous part was, that Richlieu got the King of France to make his Queen write an obliging letter to the Duke of Buckingham, assuring him that, if he would let Rochelle fall without assisting it, he should have leave to come over, and should settle the whole matter of the religion according to their edicts. This was a strange proceeding; but Cardinal Richlieu could turn that weak king as he pleased. Upon this, the Duke made that shameful campaign of the isle of Rhee: but finding, next winter, that he was not to be suffered to go over into France, and that he was abused into a false hope, he resolved to have followed that matter with more vigour, when he was stabbed by Felton.

There is another story told of the King's conduct during

A design of making the Spanish Netherlands a commonwealth.

the peaceable part of his reign, which I had from Halewyn, of Dort, who was one of the judges in the court of Holland, and was the wisest and greatest man I knew among them. He told me he had it from his father, who being then the chief man of Dort, was of the states, and had the secret communicated to him. When Isabella Clara Eugenia grew old, and began to decline, a great many of her council, apprehending what miseries they would fall under, when they should be again in the hands of the Spaniards, formed a design of making themselves a free commonwealth; that, in imitation of the union among the cantons of Switzerland, that were of both religions, there should be a perpetual confederacy between them and the states of the Seven Provinces. This they communicated to Henry Frederick, Prince of Orange, and to some of the states, who approved of it, but thought it necessary to engage the King of England in it. The Prince of Orange told the English ambassador, that there was a matter of great consequence, that was fit to be laid before the King; but it was of such a nature, and such persons were concerned in it, that it could not be communicated, unless the King would be pleased to promise absolute secrecy for the present. The King did; and then the Prince of Orange sent him the whole scheme. The secret was ill kept; either the King trusted it to some who discovered it, or the paper was stolen from him; for it was sent over to the court of Brussels. One of the ministry lost his head for it, and some took the alarm so quickly, that they got to Holland out of danger. After this the Prince of Orange had no commerce with our court, and often lamented that so great a design was so unhappily lost. He had an ill opinion of the King's conduct of the war; for when the Queen came over, and brought some of the generals with her, the Prince said, after he had talked with them (as the late King told me), he did not wonder to see the affairs of England decline as they did, since he had talked with the King's generals.

I will not enter farther into the military part; for I remember an advice of Marshal Schomberg's, never to meddle in the relation of military matters. He said, some affected to relate those affairs in all the terms of war, in which they committed great errors, that exposed them to

the scorn of all commanders, who must despise relations that pretend to an exactness when there were blunders in every part of them.

The ill effects of violent counsels.

In the King's death, the ill effects of extreme violent counsels discovered itself. Ireton hoped that by this all men concerned in it would become irreconcileable to monarchy, and would act as desperate men, and destroy all that might revenge that blood: but this had a very different effect. Something of the same nature had happened in lower instances before, but they were not the wiser for it. The Earl of Strafford's death made all his former errors be forgot; it raised his character, and cast a lasting odium on that way of proceeding; whereas he had sunk in his credit by any censure lower than death, and had been little pitied, if not thought justly punished. The like effect followed upon Archbishop Laud's death. He was a learned, a sincere, and zealous man, regular in his own life, and humble in his private deportment; but was a hot, indiscreet man, eagerly pursuing some matters that were either very inconsiderable or mischievous; such as setting the communion table by the east walls of churches, bowing to it, and calling it the altar; the suppressing the Walloons' privileges, the breaking of lectures, the encouraging of sports on the Lord's day, with some other things that were of no value; and yet all the zeal and heat of that time was laid out on these. His severity in the star-chamber and in the high-commission-court, but above all his violent and indeed inexcusable injustice in the prosecution of Bishop Williams, were such visible blemishes, that nothing but the putting him to death in so unjust a manner could have raised his character; which, indeed, it did, to a degree of setting him up as a pattern, and the establishing all his notions as standards, by which judgments are to be made of men whether they are true to the church or not. His diary, though it was a base thing to publish it, represents him as an abject fawner on the Duke of Buckingham, and as a superstitious regarder of dreams: his defence of himself, writ with so much care when he was in the Tower, is a very mean performance. He intended in that to make an appeal to the world: in most particulars he excuses himself by this, that he was but one of many, who, either in council, star-chamber, or high-commission, voted

illegal things. Now, though this was true, yet a chief minister, and one in high favour, determines the rest so much, that they are generally little better than machines acted by him. On other occasions, he says, the thing was proved but by one witness. Now, how strong soever this defence may be in law, it is of no force in an appeal to the world; for, if a thing is true, it is no matter how full or how defective the proof is. The thing that gave me the strongest prejudice against him in that book is, that after he had seen the ill effects of his violent counsels, and had been so long shut up, and so long at leisure to reflect on what passed in the hurry of passion, in the exaltation of his prosperity, he does not, in any one part of that great work, acknowledge his own errors, nor mix in it any wise or pious reflections on the ill usage he met with, or the unhappy steps he had made; so that while his enemies did really magnify him by their inhuman prosecution, his friends Heylin and Wharton have as much lessened him; the one by writing his life, and the other by publishing his vindication of himself.

The account of Εἰκὼν Βασιλικὴ.

But the recoiling of cruel counsels on the authors of them never appeared more eminently than in the death of King Charles the First, whose serious and Christian deportment in it made all his former errors be entirely forgot, and raised a compassionate regard to him that drew a lasting hatred on the actors, and was the true occasion of the great turn in the nation in the year 1660. This was much heightened by the publishing of his book called Εἰκὼν Βασιλικὴ, which was universally believed to be his own; and that coming out soon after his death, had the greatest run, in many impressions, that any book has had in our age. There was in it a nobleness and justness of thought, with a greatness of style, that made it to be looked on as the best writ book in the English language; and the piety of the prayers made all people cry out against the murder of a prince, who thought so seriously of all his affairs in his secret meditations before God. I was bred up with a high veneration of this book; and I remember that, when I heard how some denied it to be his, I asked the Earl of Lothian about it, who both knew the King very well and loved him little: he seemed confident it was his own work; for he said, he had heard him say a great many

of those very periods that he found in that book. Being thus confirmed in that persuasion, I was not a little surprised when, in the year 1673, in which I had a great share of favour and free conversation with the then Duke of York, afterwards King James the Second, as he suffered me to talk very freely to him about matters of religion, and as I was urging him with somewhat out of his father's book, he told me that book was not of his father's writing, and that the letter to the Prince of Wales was never brought to him. He said, Dr. Gawden writ it: after the restoration he brought the Duke of Somerset and the Earl of Southampton both to the King and to himself, who affirmed that they knew it was his writing; and that it was carried down by the Earl of Southampton, and shewed the King during the treaty of Newport, who read it, and approved of it as containing his sense of things. Upon this he told me, that though Sheldon and the other bishops opposed Gawden's promotion because he had taken the covenant, yet the merits of that service carried it for him, notwithstanding the opposition made to it. There has been a great deal of disputing about this book: some are so zealous for maintaining it to be the King's, that they think a man false to the church that doubts it to be his; yet the evidence since that time brought to the contrary has been so strong, that I must leave that under the same uncertainty under which I found it; only this is certain, that Gawden never writ any thing with that force, his other writings being such, that no man, from a likeness of style, would think him capable of writing so extraordinary a book as that is.

The Scots treat with King Charles the Second.

Upon the King's death the Scots proclaimed his son King, and sent over Sir George Wincam, that married my great aunt, to treat with him while he was in the isle of Jersey. The King entered into a negotiation with them, and sent him back with general assurances of consenting to every reasonable proposition that they should send him. He named the Hague for the place of treaty, he being to go thither in a few days: so the Scots sent over commissioners, the chief of whom were the Earls of Cassilis and Lothian; the former of these was my first wife's father, a man of great virtue, and of a considerable degree of good understanding: he was so sincere, that he would suffer no man to take his words in any other sense than as he meant

them: he adhered firmly to his instructions, but with so much candour, that King Charles retained very kind impressions of it to his life's end. The man then in the greatest favour with the King was the Duke of Buckingham; he was wholly turned to mirth and pleasure; he had the art of turning persons or things into ridicule beyond any man of the age; he possessed the young King with very ill principles, both as to religion and morality, and with a very mean opinion of his father, whose stiffness was with him a frequent subject of raillery. He prevailed with the King to enter into a treaty with the Scots, though that was vehemently opposed by almost all the rest that were about him, who pressed him to adhere steadily to his father's maxims and example.

Montrose's offers.

When the King came to the Hague, William, Duke of Hamilton, and the Earl of Lauderdale, who had left Scotland, entered into a great measure of favour and confidence with him. The Marquis of Montrose came likewise to him, and undertook, if he would follow his councils, to restore him to his kingdoms by main force: but when the King desired the Prince of Orange to examine the methods which he proposed, he entertained him with a recital of his own performances and of the credit he was in among the people; and said, the whole nation would rise if he went over, though accompanied only with a page. He desired of the King nothing but the power to act in his name, with a supply in money, and a letter recommending him to the King of Denmark for a ship to carry him over, and for such arms as he could spare. With that the King gave him the garter. He got first to Orkney, and from thence into the highlands of Scotland; but could perform nothing of what he had undertaken. At last he was betrayed by one of those to whom he trusted himself, Mackland of Assin, and was brought over a prisoner to Edinburgh. He

And death.

was carried through the streets with all the infamy that brutal men could contrive, and in a few days he was hanged on a very high gibbet, and his head and quarters were set up in divers places of the kingdom. His behaviour under all that barbarous usage was as great and firm to the last, looking on all that was done to him with a noble scorn, as the fury of his enemies was black and universally detested. This cruelty raised a horror in all sober people, against

those who could insult over such a man in misfortunes. The triumphs that the preachers made on this occasion rendered them odious, and made Lord Montrose to be both more pitied and lamented, than otherwise he could have been. This happened while the Scotch commissioners were treating with the King at the Hague. The violent party in Scotland were for breaking off the treaty upon it, though by the date of Lord Montrose's commission it appeared to have been granted before the treaty was begun; but it was carried not to recal their commissioners; nor could the King, on the other hand, be prevailed on by his own court, to send them away, upon this cruelty to a man who had acted by his commission, and yet was so used. The treaty was quickly concluded: the King was in no condition to struggle with them, but yielded to all their demands, of taking the covenant, and suffering none to be about him but such as took it. He sailed home to Scotland in some Dutch men of war, with which the Prince of Orange furnished him, with all the stock of money and arms that his credit could raise: that indeed would not have been very great, if the Prince of Orange had not joined his own to it. The Duke of Hamilton and the Earl of Lauderdale were suffered to go home with him: but soon after his landing an order came to put them from him. The King complained of this; but Duke Hamilton at parting told him, he must prepare for things of a harder digestion; he said, at present he could do him no service: the Marquis of Argyle was then in absolute credit, therefore he desired that he would study to gain him, and give him no cause of jealousy on his account. This King Charles told me himself, as a part of Duke Hamilton's character. The Duke of Buckingham took all the ways possible to gain Lord Argyle and the ministers; only his dissolute course of life was excessive scandalous, which, to their great reproach, they connived at, because he advised the King to put himself wholly into their hands. The King wrought himself into as grave a deportment as he could: he heard many prayers and sermons, some of a great length. I remember in one fast day there were six sermons preached without intermission. I was there myself, and not a little weary of so tedious a service. The King was not allowed so much as to walk abroad on Sundays; and if at any

time there had been any gaiety at court, such as dancing or playing at cards, he was severely reproved for it. This was managed with so much rigour, and so little discretion, that it contributed not a little to beget in him an aversion to all sort of strictness in religion. All that had acted on his father's side were ordered to keep at a great distance from him; and because the common people shewed some affection to the King, the crowds that pressed to see him were also kept off from coming about him. Cromwell was not idle; but seeing the Scots were calling home their King, and knowing that from thence he might expect an invasion into England, he resolved to prevent them, and so marched into Scotland with his army. The Scots brought together a very good army; the King was suffered to come once to see it, but not to stay in it, for they were afraid he might gain too much upon the soldiers: so he was sent away.

The defeat at Dunbar.

The army was indeed one of the best that ever Scotland had brought together, but it was ill commanded; for all that had made defection from their cause, or that were thought indifferent as to either side, which they called detestable neutrality, were put out of commission. The preachers thought it an army of saints, and seemed well assured of success. They drew near Cromwell, who being pressed by them retired towards Dunbar, where his ships and provisions lay. The Scots followed him, and were posted on a hill about a mile from thence, where there was no attacking them. Cromwell was then in great distress, and looked on himself as undone. There was no marching towards Berwick, the ground was too narrow; nor could he come back into the country without being separated from his ships, and starving his army. The least evil seemed to be to kill his horses, and put his army on board, and sail back to Newcastle; which, in the disposition that England was in at that time, would have been all their destruction, for it would have occasioned an universal insurrection for the King. They had not above three days forage for their horses. So Cromwell called his officers to a day of seeking the Lord, in their style. He loved to talk much of that matter all his life long afterwards: he said, he felt such an enlargement of heart in prayer, and such quiet upon it, that he bade all about him take heart, for God had certainly heard them, and would appear for them.

After prayer they walked in the Earl of Roxburgh's gardens, that lay under the hill; and by prospective glasses they discerned a great motion in the Scotch camp; upon which Cromwell said—God is delivering them into our hands, they are coming down to us. Lesley was in the chief command; but he had a committee of the states to give him his orders, among whom Waristoun was one. These were weary of lying in the fields, and thought that Lesley made not haste enough to destroy those sectaries; for so they came to call them. He told them, by lying there all was sure; but that by engaging in action with gallant and desperate men all might be lost; yet they still called on him to fall on. Many have thought that all this was treachery done on design to deliver up our army to Cromwell; some laying it upon Lesley, and others upon my uncle. I am persuaded there was no treachery in it; only Waristoun was too hot, and Lesley was too cold, and yielded too easily to their humours, which he ought not to have done. They were all the night employed in coming down the hill; and, in the morning, before they were put in order, Cromwell fell upon them. Two regiments stood their ground, and were almost all killed in their ranks; the rest did run in a most shameful manner: so that both their artillery and baggage were lost, and with these a great many prisoners were taken—some thousands in all. Cromwell upon this advanced to Edinburgh, where he was received without any opposition; and the castle that might have made a long resistance did capitulate: so all the southern part of Scotland came under contribution to Cromwell. Stirling was the advanced garrison on the King's side. He himself retired to St. Johnstoun. A parliament was called that sat for some time at Stirling, and for some time at St. Johnstoun, in which a full indemnity was passed, not in the language of a pardon, but of an act of approbation: only all that joined with Cromwell were declared traitors. But now the way of raising a new army was to be thought on.

Disputes about the admitting of all persons to serve their country.

A question had been proposed both to the committee of states and to the commissioners of the kirk, whether in this extremity those who had made defection, or had been hitherto too backward in the work, might not, upon the profession of their repentance, be received into public trust, and admitted to serve in the defence of their country. To this

answers were distinctly given by two resolutions: the one was that they ought to be admitted to make profession of their repentance; and the other was, that after such professions made they might be received to defend and serve their country.

Upon this a great division followed in the kirk: those who adhered to these resolutions were called the public resolutioners; but against these some of those bodies protested, and they, together with those who adhered to them, were called the protestors. On the one hand it was said, that every government might call out all that were under its protection to its defence: this seemed founded on the law of nature and of nations; and if men had been misled, it was a strange cruelty to deny room for repentance: this was contrary to the nature of God and to the gospel, and was a likely mean to drive them to despair: therefore, after two years time, it seemed reasonable to allow them to serve according to their birthright in parliament, or in other hereditary offices, or in the army; from all which they had been excluded by an act made in the year 1649, which ranged them in different classes, and was from thence called the act of classes. But the protestors objected against all this, that to take in men of known enmity to the cause was a sort of betraying it, because it was the putting it in their power to betray it; that to admit them into a profession of repentance was a profanation and a mocking of God: it was visible they were willing to comply with these terms, though against their conscience, only to get into the army; nor could they expect a blessing from God on an army so constituted: and, as to this particular, they had great advantage; for this mock penitence was indeed a matter of great scandal. When these resolutions were passed with this protestation, a great many of the five western counties, Cliddisdale, Renfrew, Air, Galloway, and Nithisdale, met and formed an association apart, both against the army of sectaries, and against this new defection in the kirk party. They drew a remonstrance against all the proceedings in the treaty with the King, when, as they said, it was visible by the commission he granted to Montrose that his heart was not sincere; and they were also against the tendering him the covenant, when they had reason to believe he took it not with a resolution to maintain

it, since his whole deportment and private conversation shewed a secret enmity to the work of God; and, after an invidious enumeration of many particulars, they imputed the shameful defeat at Dunbar to their prevaricating in these things; and concluded with a desire that the King might be excluded from any share in the administration of the government, and that his cause might be put out of the state of the quarrel with the army of the sectaries. This was brought to the committee of the states at St. Johnstoun, and was severely inveighed against by Sir Thomas Nicholson, the King's advocate or attorney-general there, who had been till then a zealous man of their party: but he had lately married my sister, and my father had great influence on him. He prevailed so, that the remonstrance was condemned as divisive, factious, and scandalous; but that the people might not be too much moved with these things, a declaration was prepared to be set out by the King for the satisfying of them. In it there were many hard things. The King owned the sin of his father in marrying into an idolatrous family: he acknowledged the bloodshed in the late wars lay at his father's door: he expressed a deep sense of his own ill education, and the prejudices he had drunk in against the cause of God, of which he was now very sensible: he confessed all the former parts of his life to have been a course of enmity to the work of God: he repented of his commission to Montrose, and of every thing he had done that gave offence: and with solemn protestations he affirmed, that he was now sincere in his declaration, and that he would adhere to it to the end of his life in Scotland, England, and Ireland.

Great hardships put on the King.

The King was very uneasy when this was brought to him. He said he could never look his mother in the face if he passed it: but when he was told it was necessary for his affairs, he resolved to swallow the pill without farther chewing it. So it was published, but had no good effect, for neither side believed him sincere in it. It was thought a strange imposition to make him load his father's memory in such a manner. But while the King was thus beset with the high and more moderate kirk parties, the old cavaliers sent to him, offering that, if he would cast himself into their hands, they would meet him near Dundee with a great body. Upon this the King, growing weary of the sad

life he led, made his escape in the night, and came to the place appointed; but it was a vain undertaking, for he was met by a very inconsiderable body at Clova, the place of rendezvous. Those at St. Johnstoun, being troubled at this, sent Colonel Montgomery after him, who came up and pressed him to return very rudely; so the King came back. But this had a very good effect. The government saw now the danger of using him ill, which might provoke him to desperate courses; after that he was used as well as that kingdom in so ill a state was capable of. He saw the necessity of courting the Marquis of Argyle, and therefore made him great offers: at last he talked of marrying his daughter. Lord Argyle was cold and backward: he saw the King's heart lay not to him; so he looked on all offers but as so many snares. His son, the Lord Lorn, was captain of the guards; and he made his court more dexterously, for he brought all persons that the King had a mind to speak with at all hours to him, and was in all respects not only faithful but zealous: yet this was suspected as a collusion between the father and the son. The King was crowned on the 1st of January, and there he again renewed the covenant: and now all people were admitted to come to him, and to serve in the army. The two armies lay peaceably in their winter quarters. But when the summer came on, a body of the English passed the Frith, and landed in Fife. So the King, having got up all the forces he had expected, resolved on a march into England. Scotland could not maintain another year's war. This was a desperate resolution, but there was nothing else to be done.

I will not pursue the relation of the march to Worcester, nor the total defeat given the King's army on the 3d of September, the same day in which Dunbar fight had been fought the year before. These things are so well known, as is also the King's escape, that I can add nothing to the common relations that have been over and over made of them. At the same time that Cromwell followed the King into England, he left Monk in Scotland, with an army sufficient to reduce the rest of the kingdom. The town of Dundee made a rash and ill-considered resistance: it was after a few days' siege taken by storm: much blood was shed, and the town was severely plundered. No other place made any resistance. I remember well three regi-

Scotland was subdued by Monk.

ments coming to Aberdeen. There was an order and discipline, and a face of gravity and piety among them, that amazed all people. Most of them were independents and anabaptists: they were all gifted men, and preached as they were moved. But they never disturbed the public assemblies in the churches but once: they came and reproached the preachers for laying things to their charge that were false: I was then present: the debate grew very fierce: at last they drew their swords; but there was no hurt done; yet Cromwell displaced the governor for not punishing this.

A body stood out in the highlands.

When the low countries in Scotland were thus reduced, some of the more zealous of the nobility went to the highlands in the year 1653. The Earl of Glencairn, a grave and sober man, got the tribe of the Macdonalds to declare for the King. To these the Lord Lorn came with about a thousand men; but the jealousy of the father made the son be suspected. The Marquis of Argyle had retired into his country when the King marched into England; and did not submit to Monk till the year 1652. Then he received a garrison; but Lord Lorn surprised a ship that was sent about with provisions to it, which helped to support their little ill-formed army. Many gentlemen came to them; and almost all the good horses of the kingdom were stolen and carried up to them. They made a body of about three thousand; of these they had about five hundred horse. They endured great hardships; for those parts were not fit to entertain men that had been accustomed to live softly. The Earl of Glencairn had almost spoiled all; for he took much upon him; and upon some suspicion he ordered Lord Lorn to be clapped up, who had notice of it, and prevented it by an escape; otherwise they had fallen to cut one another's throats, instead of marching to the enemy. The Earl of Belcarras, a virtuous and knowing man, but somewhat morose in his humour, went also among them. They differed in their counsels: Lord Glencairn was for falling into the low countries; and he began to fancy he should be another Montrose. Belcarras, on the other hand, was for keeping in their fastnesses: they made a shew of a body for the King, which they were to keep up in some reputation as long as they could, till they could see what assistance the King might be able to procure them from beyond sea of

men, money, and arms; whereas, if they went out of those fast grounds, they could not hope to stand before such a veteran and well-disciplined army as Monk had; and if they met with the least check, their tumultuary body would soon melt away.

Sir Robert Murray's character.

Among others, one Sir Robert Murray, that had married Lord Belcarras's sister, came among them: he had served in France, where he had got into such a degree of favour with Cardinal Richlieu, that few strangers were ever so much considered by him as he was. He was raised to be a colonel there, and came over for recruits when the King was with the Scotch army at Newcastle. There he grew into high favour with the King; and laid a design for his escape, of which I have given an account in Duke Hamilton's Memoirs: he was the most universally beloved and esteemed by men of all sides and sorts, of any man I have ever known in my whole life. He was a pious man, and, in the midst of armies and courts, he spent many hours a day in devotion. He had gone through the easy parts of mathematics, and knew the history of nature beyond any man I ever yet knew: he had a genius much like Pëiriski, as he is described by Gassendi. He was afterwards the first former of the Royal Society, and its first president; and, while he lived, he was the life and soul of that body. He had an equality of temper in him that nothing could alter; and was, in practice, the only stoic I ever knew. He had a great tincture of one of their principles; for he was much for absolute decrees. He had a most diffused love to all mankind, and he delighted in every occasion of doing good, which he managed with great discretion and zeal. He had a superiority of genius and comprehension to most men; and had the plainest, but withal the softest, way of reproving, chiefly young people, for their faults that I ever met with. Sir Robert Murray was in such credit in that little army, that Lord Glencairn took a strange course to break it, and to ruin him: a letter was pretended to be found at Antwerp, as writ by him, to William Murray of the bed-chamber, that had been whipping-boy to King Charles the First, and upon that had grown up to a degree of favour and confidence that was very particular: he had a lewd creature there, whom he turned off; and she, to be revenged on him, framed this plot against

him. This ill-forged letter gave an account of a bargain Sir Robert had made with Monk for killing the King, which was to be executed by Mr. Murray; so he prayed him, in his letter, to make haste and dispatch it: this was brought to the Earl of Glencairn; so Sir Robert was severely questioned upon it, and put in arrest; and it was spread about, through a rude army, that he intended to kill the King, hoping, it seems, that some of these wild people, believing it, would have fallen upon him without using any forms. Upon this occasion Sir Robert practised, in a very eminent manner, his true Christian philosophy, without shewing so much as a cloud in his whole behaviour.

The Earl of Belcarras left the highlands, and went to the King, and shewed him the necessity of sending a military man to command that body, to whom they would submit more willingly than to any of the nobility. Middleton was sent over, who was a gallant man and a good officer: he had first served on the parliament's side; but he turned over to the King, and was taken at Worcester fight, but made his escape out of the Tower. He, upon his coming over, did for some time lay the heats that were among the highlanders; and made as much of that face of an army for another year as was possible.

Messages sent to the King.

Drumond was sent by him to Paris with an invitation to the King to come among them; for they had assurances sent them, that the whole nation was in a disposition to rise with them; and England was beginning to grow weary of their new government, the army and the parliament being on ill terms. The English were also engaged in a war with the states; and the Dutch upon that account might be inclined to assist the King, to give a diversion to their enemies' forces. Drumond told me, that upon his coming to Paris, he was called to the little council that was then about the King; and, when he had delivered his message, Chancellor Hyde asked him, how the King would be accommodated if he came among them: he answered, not so well as was fitting, but they would all take care of him, to furnish him with every thing that was necessary. He wondered that the King did not check the Chancellor in his demand; for he said it looked strange to him, that when they were hazarding their lives to help him to a crown, he should be concerned for accommodation. He

was sent back with good words and a few kind letters. In the end of the year 1654, Morgan marched into the highlands, and had a small engagement with Middleton, which broke that whole matter, of which all people were grown weary: for they had no prospect of success; and the low countries were so overrun with robberies, on the pretence of going to assist the highlanders, that there was an universal joy at the dispersing of that little unruly army.

The state of Scotland during the usurpation.

After this, the country was kept in great order: some castles in the highlands had garrisons put in them, that were so careful in their discipline, and so exact to their rules, that in no time the highlands were kept in better order than during the usurpation. There was a considerable force of about seven or eight thousand men kept in Scotland; these were paid exactly, and strictly disciplined. The pay of the army brought so much money into the kingdom, that it continued all that while in a very flourishing state. Cromwell built three citadels; at Leith, Air, and Inverness, besides many little forts. There was good justice done, and vice was suppressed and punished; so that we always reckon those eight years of usurpation a time of great peace and prosperity. There was also a sort of union of the three kingdoms in one parliament, where Scotland had its representative. The Marquis of Argyle went up one of our commissioners.

Disputes among the covenanters.

The next scene I must open relates to the church, and the heats raised in it by the public resolutions, and the protestation made against them. New occasions of dispute arose: a general assembly was in course to meet, and sat at St. Andrew's; so the commission of the kirk wrote a circular letter to all the presbyteries, setting forth all the grounds of their resolutions, and complaining of those who had protested against them; upon which they desired that they would choose none of those who adhered to the protestation to represent them in the next assembly: this was only an advice, and had been frequently practised in the former years; but now it was highly complained of, as a limitation on the freedom of elections, which inferred a nullity on all their proceedings: so the protestors renewed their protestation against the meeting upon a higher point, disowning that authority which, hitherto, they had magnified as the highest tribunal in the church, in which they

thought Christ was in his throne: upon this a great debate followed, and many books were written, in a course of several years. The public men said, this was the destroying of presbytery, if the lesser number did not submit to the greater: it was a sort of prelacy if it was pretended that votes ought rather to be weighed than counted: parity was the essence of their constitution; and in this all people saw they had clearly the better of the argument. The protestors urged for themselves that, since all protestants rejected the pretence of infallibility, the major part of the church might fall into errors, in which case the lesser number could not be bound to submit to them: they complained of the many corrupt clergymen who were yet among them, who were leavened with the old leaven, and did on all occasions shew what was still at heart, notwithstanding all their outward compliance; for the episcopal clergy, that had gone into the covenant and presbytery to hold their livings, struck in with great heat to inflame the controversy; and it appeared very visible that presbytery, if not held in order by the civil power, could not be long kept in quiet. If in the supreme court of judicature the majority did not conclude the matter, it was not possible to keep up their beloved parity: it was confessed, that in doctrinal points the lesser number was not bound to submit to the greater; but, in the matters of mere government, it was impossible to maintain the presbyterian form on any other bottom.

As this debate grew hot, and they were ready to break out into censures on both sides, some were sent down from the commonwealth of England to settle Scotland; of these Sir Henry Vane was one. The resolutioners were known to have been more in the King's interest; so they were not so kindly looked on as the protestors. Some of the English juncta moved that pains should be taken to unite the two parties. But Vane opposed this with much zeal: he said, would they heal the wound that they had given themselves which weakened them so much? The setting them at quiet could have no other effect, but to heal and unite them in their opposition to their authority: he therefore moved, that they might be left at liberty to fight out their own quarrels, and be kept in a greater dependence on the temporal authority, when both sides were forced to make their appeal to it: so it was resolved to suffer them to meet

still in their presbyteries and synods, but not in general assemblies, which had a greater face of union and authority.

This advice was followed; so the division went on. Both sides studied when any church became vacant to get a man of their own party to be chosen to succeed in the election: and, upon these occasions, many tumults happened; in some of them stones were thrown, and many were wounded, to the great scandal of religion. In all these disputes the protestors were the fiercer side: for, being less in number, they studied to make that up with their fury. In one point they had the other at a great advantage, with relation to their new masters, who required them to give over praying for the King. The protestors were weary of doing it, and submitted very readily; but the others stood out longer, and said it was a duty lying on them by the covenant, so they could not let it fall. Upon that the English council set out an order, that such as should continue to pray for the King should be denied the help of law to recover their tithes, or, as they called them, their stipends. This touched them in a sensible point; but, that they might not seem to act upon the civil authority, they did enact it in their presbyteries, that since all duties did not oblige at all times, therefore, considering the present juncture, in which the King could not protect them, they resolved to discontinue that piece of duty. This exposed them to much censure, since such a carnal consideration as the force of law for their benefices, (which all regard but too much though few will own it,) seemed to be that which determined them.

Methods taken on both sides.

This great breach among them being rather encouraged than suppressed by those who were in power, all the methods imaginable were used by the protestors to raise their credit among the people. They preached often, and very long; and seemed to carry their devotions to a greater sublimity than others did. Their constant topic was the sad defection and corruption of the judicatories of the church, and they often proposed several expedients for purging it. The truth was, they were more active, and their performances were livelier, than those of the public men.* They were in nothing more singular than in their

* The meaning must be, by public men, those who acted pur-

communions. In many places the sacrament was discontinued for several years, where they thought the magistracy, or the more eminent of the parish, were engaged in what they called the defection, which was much more looked at than scandal given by bad lives. But where the greatest part was more sound, they gave the sacrament with a new and unusual solemnity. On the Wednesday before they held a fast day with prayers and sermons for about eight or ten hours together; on the Saturday they had two or three preparation sermons; and, on the Lord's day, they had so very many that the action continued above twelve hours in some places; and all ended with three or four sermons on Monday for thanksgiving. A great many ministers were brought together from several parts; and high pretenders would have gone forty or fifty miles to a noted communion. The crowds were far beyond the capacity of their churches, or the reach of their voices; so at the same time they had sermons in two or three different places; and all was performed with great shew of zeal. They had stories of many signal conversions that were wrought on these occasions.

It is scarce credible what an effect this had among the people, to how great a measure of knowledge they were brought, and how readily they could pray extempore, and talk of divine matters. All this tended to raise the credit of the protestors. The resolutioners tried to imitate them in these practices; but they were not thought so spiritual, nor so ready at them, so the others had the chief following. When the judicatories of the church were near an equality of the men of both sides, there were perpetual janglings among them; at last they proceeded to deprive men of both sides, as they were the majority in the judicatories: but, because the possession of the church and the benefice was to depend on the orders of the temporal courts, both sides made their application to the privy council that Cromwell had set up in Scotland; and they were by them referred to Cromwell himself. So they sent deputies up to London. The protestors went in great numbers: they came nearer both to the principles and to the temper that prevailed in

---

suant to the resolutions of the general assemblies, in whom the public authority of the kirk was then vested by law.

the army; so they were looked on as the better men, on whom, by reason of the first rise of the difference, the government might more certainly depend, whereas the others were considered as more in the King's interests.

The resolutioners sent up one Sharp, who had been long in England, and was an active and eager man: he had a very small proportion of learning, and was but an indifferent preacher; but, having some acquaintance with the presbyterian ministers at London, whom Cromwell was then courting much by reason of their credit in the city, he was, by an error that proved fatal to the whole party, sent up in their name to London, where he continued for some years soliciting their concerns, and making himself known to all sorts of people. He seemed more than ordinary zealous for presbytery. And, as Cromwell was then designing to make himself king, Dr. Wilkins told me he often said to him, no temporal government could have a sure support without a national church that adhered to it, and he thought England was capable of no constitution but episcopacy; to which, he told me, he did not doubt but Cromwell would have turned as soon as the design of his kingship was settled. Upon this Wilkins spoke to Sharp, that it was plain by their breach that presbytery could not be managed so as to maintain order among them, and that an episcopacy must be brought in to settle them; but Sharp could not bear the discourse, and rejected it with horror. I have dwelt longer on this matter, and opened it more fully than was necessary, if I had not thought that this may have a good effect on the reader, and shew him how impossible it is in a parity to maintain peace and order, if the magistrate does not interpose; and, if he does, that will be cried out upon by the zealots of both sides as abominable Erastianism.

Some of Cromwell's maxims.

From these matters I go next to set down some particulars that I knew concerning Cromwell, that I have not yet seen in books. Some of these I had from the Earls of Carlisle and Orrery; the one had been the captain of his guards, and the other had been the president of his council in Scotland. But he from whom I learned the most was Stouppe, a Grison by birth, then minister of the French church in Savoy, and afterwards a brigadier-general in the French armies; a man of intrigue, but of no virtue: he

adhered to the protestant religion as to outward appearance: he was much trusted by Cromwell in foreign affairs, in which Cromwell was oft at a loss, and having no foreign language, but the little Latin that stuck to him from his education, which he spoke very viciously and scantily, had not the necessary means of informing himself.

When Cromwell first assumed the government, he had three great parties of the nation all against him—the episcopal, the presbyterian, and the republican party. The last was the most set on his ruin, looking on him as the person that had perfidiously broke the House of Commons, and was setting up for himself. He had none to rely on but the army; yet that enthusiastic temper, that he had taken so much pains to raise among them, made them very intractable: many of the chief officers were broken and imprisoned by him; and he flattered the rest the best he could: he went on in his old way of long and dark discourses, sermons, and prayers. As to the cavalier party, he was afraid both of assassination and other plottings from them. As to the former of these, he took a method that proved very effectual: he said often and openly, that in a war it was necessary to return upon any side all the violent things that any of the one side did to the other. This was done for preventing greater mischief, and for bringing men to fair war; therefore he said, assassinations were such detestable things that he would never begin them: but if any of the King's party should endeavour to assassinate him, and fail in it, he would make an assassinating war of it, and destroy the whole family; and he pretended he had instruments to execute it, whensoever he should give order for it. The terror of this was a better security to him than his guards.

The other, as to their plottings, was the more dangerous. But he understood that one Sir Richard Willis was Chancellor Hide's chief confident, to whom he wrote often, and to whom all the party submitted, looking on him as an able and wise man, in whom they confided absolutely. So he found a way to talk with him: he said, he did not intend to hurt any of the party; his design was rather to save them from ruin: they were apt, after their cups, to run into foolish and ill-concerted plots, which signified nothing but to ruin those who engaged in them: he knew they con-

sulted him in every thing; all he desired of him was to know all their plots, that he might so disconcert them, that none might ever suffer for them: if he clapped any of them up in prison, it should only be for a little time, and they should be interrogated only about some trifling discourse, but never about the business they had been engaged in. He offered Willis whatever he would accept of, and to give it when or as he pleased. He durst not ask or take above 200*l.* a year. None was trusted with this but his secretary, Thurlo, who was a very dexterous man at getting intelligence.

Thus Cromwell had all the King's party in a net. He let them dance in it at pleasure; and, upon occasions, clapped them up for a short while: but nothing was ever discovered that hurt any of them. In conclusion, after Cromwell's death, Willis continued to give notice of every thing to Thurlo. At last, when the plot was laid among the cavaliers for a general insurrection, the King was desired to come over to that which was to be raised in Sussex: he was to have landed near Chichester, all by Willis's management; and a snare was laid for him, in which he would probably have been caught, if Morland, Thurlo's under-secretary, who was a prying man, had not discovered the correspondence between his master and Willis, and warned the King of his danger. Yet it was not easy to persuade those who had trusted Willis so much, and who thought him faithful in all respects, to believe that he could be guilty of so black a treachery: so Morland's advertisement was looked on as an artifice to create jealousy. But he, to give a full conviction, observed where the secretary laid some letters of advice, on which he saw he relied most; and, getting the key of that cabinet in his hand to seal a letter with a seal that hung to it, he took the impression of it in wax, and got a key to be made from it, by which he opened the cabinet, and sent over some of the most important of those letters. The hand was known, and this artful but black treachery was discovered: so the design of the rising was laid aside. Sir George Booth having engaged at the same time to raise a body in Cheshire, two several messengers were sent to him, to let him know the design could not be executed at the time appointed; but both these persons were suspected by some

garrisons through which they must pass, as giving no good account of themselves in a time of jealousy, and were so long stopped, that they could not give him notice in time: so he very gallantly performed his part; but, not being seconded, he was soon crushed by Lambert. Thus Willis lost the merit of great and long services. This was one of Cromwell's master-pieces.

As for the presbyterians, they were so apprehensive of the fury of the commonwealth party, that they thought it a deliverance to be rescued out of their hands: many of the republicans begun to profess deism; and almost all of them were for destroying all clergymen, and for breaking every thing that looked like the union of a national church. They were for pulling down the churches, for discharging the tithes, and for leaving religion free, as they called it, without either encouragement or restraint. Cromwell assured the presbyterians, he would maintain a public ministry with all due encouragement; and he joined them in a commission with some independents, to be the triers of all those who were to be admitted to benefices. These disposed also of all the churches that were in the gift of the crown, of the bishops, and of the cathedral churches: so this softened them.

He studied to divide the commonwealth party among themselves, and to set the fifth-monarchy men and the enthusiasts against those who pretended to little or no religion, and acted only upon the principles of civil liberty; such as Algernon Sydney, Henry Nevill, Martin, Wildman, and Harrington. The fifth-monarchy men seemed to be really in expectation every day when Christ should appear: John Goodwin headed these, who first brought in Arminianism among the sectaries; for he was for liberty of all sorts. Cromwell hated that doctrine; for his beloved notion was, that once a child of God, was always a child of God: now he had led a very strict life for above eight years together before the war; so he comforted himself much with his reflections on that time, and on the certainty of perseverance. But none of the preachers were so thoroughly paced for him as to temporal matters, as Goodwin was; for he not only justified the putting the King to death, but magnified it as the most glorious action men were capable of. He filled all people with such expectation of a

glorious thousand years speedily to begin, that it looked like a madness possessing them.

His design for the kingship.

It was no easy thing for Cromwell to satisfy those, when he took the power into his own hands; since that looked like a step to kingship, which Goodwin had long represented as the great Antichrist, that hindered Christ's being set on his throne. To these he said, and as some have told me, with many tears, that he would rather have taken a shepherd's staff than the protectorship, since nothing was more contrary to his genius than a shew of greatness; but he saw it was necessary at that time to keep the nation from falling into extreme disorder, and from becoming open to the common enemy; and therefore he only stepped in between the living and the dead, as he phrased it, in that interval, till God should direct them on what bottom they ought to settle: and he assured them, that then he would surrender the heavy load lying upon him, with a joy equal to the sorrow with which he was affected while under that shew of dignity. To men of this stamp he would enter into the terms of their old equality, shutting the door, and making them sit down covered by him, to let them see how little he valued those distances that for form's sake he was bound to keep up with others. These discourses commonly ended in a long prayer. Thus with much ado he managed the republican enthusiasts. The other republicans he called the heathens, and professed he could not so easily work upon them. He had some chaplains of all sorts; and he begun in his later years to be gentler towards those of the church of England. They had their meetings in several places about London without any disturbance from him. In conclusion, even the papists courted him; and he with great dissimulation carried things with all sorts of people farther than was thought possible, considering the difficulties he met with in all his parliaments: but it was generally believed that his life and all his arts were exhausted at once, and that if he had lived much longer he could not have held things together.

The debates came on very high for the setting up a king. All the lawyers, chiefly Glynn, Maynard, Fountain, and St. Johns, were vehemently for this. They said, no new government could be settled legally but by a king, who should pass bills for such a form as should be agreed on. Till

then all they did was like building upon sand: still men were in danger of a revolution; and, in that case, all that had been done would be void of itself, as contrary to a law yet in being and not repealed. Till that was done, every man that had been concerned in the war, and the blood that was shed, chiefly the King's, was still obnoxious; and no warrants could be pleaded, but what were founded on or approved of by a law passed by King, Lords, and Commons. They might agree to trust this King as much as they pleased, and to make his power determine as soon as they pleased, so that he should be a *felo de se*, and consent to an act, if need were, of extinguishing both name and thing for ever: and, as no man's person was safe till that was done, so they said all the grants and sales that had been made were null and void; all men that had gathered or disposed of the public money were for ever accountable: in short, this point was made out beyond the possibility of answering it, except upon enthusiastic principles. But by that sort of men all this was called a mistrusting of God, and a trusting to the arm of flesh: they had gone out, as they said, in the simplicity of their hearts to fight the Lord's battles, to whom they had made the appeal: he had heard them, and appeared for them, and now they could trust him no longer: they had pulled down monarchy with the monarch, and would they now build that up which they had destroyed? they had solemnly vowed to God to be true to the commonwealth, without a king or kingship; and, under that vow, as under a banner, they had fought and prevailed; but now they must be secure, and in order to that go back to Egypt. They thought it was rather a happiness that they were still under a legal danger; this might be a mean to make them more cautious and diligent: if kings were invaders of God's right, and usurpers upon men's liberties, why must they have recourse to such a wicked engine? Upon these grounds they stood out; and they looked on all that was offered about the limiting this King in his power, as the gilding the pill: the assertors of those laws that made it necessary to have a king, would no sooner have one, than they would bring forth out of the same storehouse all that related to the power and prerogative of this king: therefore they would not hearken to any thing that was offered on that head, but rejected it with scorn.

Many of them began openly to say, if we must have a king, in consequence of so much law as was alleged, why should we not rather have that King, to whom the law certainly pointed, than any other? The Earl of Orrery told me, that, coming one day to Cromwell during those heats, and telling him he had been in the city all that day, Cromwell asked him what news he had heard there. The other answered, that he was told he was in treaty with the King, who was to be restored, and to marry his daughter. Cromwell expressing no indignation at this, Lord Orrery said, in the state to which things were brought, he saw not a better expedient; they might bring him in on what terms they pleased, and Cromwell might retain the same authority he then had with less trouble. Cromwell answered,—The King can never forgive his father's blood. Orrery said, he was one of many that were concerned in that, but he would be alone in the merit of restoring him. Cromwell replied,—He is so damnably debauched he would undo us all; and so turned to another discourse without any emotion, which made Orrery conclude he had often thought of that expedient.

Before the day in which he refused the offer of the kingship that was made to him by the parliament, he had kept himself on such a reserve that no man knew what answer he would give. It was thought more likely he would accept of it; but that which determined him to the contrary was, that, when he went down in the morning to walk in St. James's Park, Fleetwood and Desborough were waiting for him; the one had married his daughter, and the other his sister. With these he entered into much discourse on the subject, and argued for it: he said it was a tempting of God to expose so many worthy men to death and poverty, when there was a certain way to secure them. The others insisted still on the oaths they had taken. He said, these oaths were against the power and tyranny of kings, but not against the four letters that made the word king. In conclusion, they, believing from his discourse that he intended to accept of it, told him, they saw great confusions would follow on it: and as they could not serve him to set up the idol they had put down, and had sworn to keep down, so they would not engage in any thing against him, but would retire and look on. So they offered him their commissions, since they were resolved not to serve a king: he desired

they would stay till they heard his answer. It was believed, that he, seeing two persons so near him ready to abandon him, concluded that many others would follow their example, and therefore thought it was too bold a venture. So he refused it, but accepted of the continuance of his protectorship. Yet, if he had lived out the next winter, as the debates were to have been brought on again, so it was generally thought he would have accepted of the offer; and it is yet a question what the effect of that would have been. Some have thought it would have brought on a general settlement, since the law and the ancient government were again to take place: others have fancied just the contrary, that it would have engaged the army, so that they would either have deserted the service, or have revolted from him, and perhaps have killed him in the first fray of the tumult. I will not determine which of these would have most probably happened. In these debates some of the cavalier party, or rather their children, came to bear some share. They were then all zealous commonwealthmen, according to the directions sent them from those about the King. Their business was to oppose Cromwell on all his demands, and so to weaken him at home, and expose him abroad. When some of the other party took notice of this great change, from being the abettors of prerogative to become the patrons of liberty, they pretended their education in the court and their obligation to it had engaged them that way; but now, since that was out of doors, they had the common principles of human nature and the love of liberty in them. By this means, as the old republicans assisted and protected them, so at the same time they strengthened the faction against Cromwell. But these very men at the restoration shook off this disguise, and reverted to their old principles for a high prerogative and absolute power. They said they were for liberty, when it was a mean to distress one who they thought had no right to govern; but when the government returned to its old channel, they were still as firm to all prerogative notions, and as great enemies to liberty as ever.

Cromwell's engagement with France.

I go next to give an account of Cromwell's transactions with relation to foreign affairs. He laid it down for a maxim to spare no cost or charge in order to procure him intelligence. When he understood what dealers the Jews

were every where in that trade that depends on news, the advancing money upon high or low interests, in proportion to the risk they run or the gain to be made as the times might turn, and in the buying and selling of the actions of money so advanced, he, more upon that account than in compliance with the principle of toleration, brought a company of them over to England, and gave them leave to build a synagogue. All the while that he was negociating this, they were sure and good spies for him, especially with relation to Spain and Portugal. The Earl of Orrery told me he was once walking with him in one of the galleries of Whitehall, and a man almost in rags came in view; he presently dismissed Lord Orrery, and carried that man into his closet: who brought him an account of a great sum of money that the Spaniards were sending over to pay their army in Flanders, but in a Dutch man of war; and he told him the places of the ship in which the money was lodged. Cromwell sent an express immediately to Smith, afterwards Sir Jeremy Smith, who lay in the Downs, telling him, that within a day or two such a Dutch ship would pass the channel, whom he must visit for the Spanish money, which was contraband goods, we being then in war with Spain. So when the ship passed by Dover, Smith sent and demanded leave to search him. The Dutch captain answered, none but his masters might search him. Smith sent him word, he had set up an hour-glass, and if before that was run out he did not submit to the search, he would force it. The captain saw it was in vain to struggle, and so all the money was found. Next time that Cromwell saw Orrery, he told him he had his intelligence from that contemptible man he saw him go to some days before. He had on all occasions very good intelligence: he knew every thing that passed in the King's little court; and yet none of his spies were discovered, but one only.

The greatest difficulty on him in his foreign affairs was, what side to chuse, France or Spain. The Prince of Condé was then in the Netherlands with a great many protestants about him. He set the Spaniards on making great steps towards the gaining Cromwell into their interests. Spain ordered their ambassador to compliment him: he was esteemed one of their ablest men: his name was Don Alonso de Cardenas: he offered, that if Cromwell would join

with them, they would engage themselves to make no peace till he should recover Calais again to England. This was very agreeable to Cromwell, who thought it would recommend him much to the nation if he could restore that town again to the English empire, after it had been a hundred years in the hands of the French. Mazarin, hearing of this, sent one over to negociate with him, but at first without a character; and, to outbid the Spaniard, he offered to assist Cromwell to take Dunkirk, which was a place of much more importance. The Prince of Conde sent over likewise to offer Cromwell to turn protestant; and if he would give him a fleet, with good troops, he would make a descent in Guienne, where he did not doubt but that he should be assisted by the protestants; and that he should so distress France, as to obtain such conditions for them, and for England, as Cromwell himself should dictate. Upon this offer Cromwell sent Stoupe round all France, to talk with their most eminent men, to see into their strength, into their present disposition, the oppressions they lay under, and their inclinations to trust the Prince of Conde. He went from Paris down the Loire, then to Bourdeaux, from thence to Montauban, and cross the south of France to Lyons: he was instructed to talk to them only as a traveller, and to assure them of Cromwell's zeal and care for them, which he magnified every where. The protestants were then very much at their ease; for Mazarin, who thought of nothing but to enrich his family, took care to maintain the edicts better than they had been in any time formerly. So Stoupe returned, and gave Cromwell an account of the ease they were in, and of their resolution to be quiet. They had a very bad opinion of the Prince of Conde, as a man who sought nothing but his own greatness, to which they believed that he was ready to sacrifice all his friends, and every cause that he espoused. This settled Cromwell as to that particular. He also found that the Cardinal had such spies on that Prince, that he knew every message that passed between them; therefore he would have no farther correspondence with him: he said upon that to Stoupe, "Stultus est, et garrulus, et venditur "à suis Cardinali." That which determined him afterwards in the choice was this: he found the parties grew so strong against him at home, that he saw if the King or his

brother were assisted by France with an army of Huguenots to make a descent in England, which was threatened if he should join with Spain, this might prove very dangerous to him, who had so many enemies at home and so few friends. This particular consideration with relation to himself made great impression on him; for he knew the Spaniards could give those princes no strength, nor had they any protestant subjects to assist them in any such design. Upon this occasion King James told me, that among other prejudices he had at the protestant religion this was one, that both his brother and himself, being in many companies in Paris incognito, where they met many protestants, he found they were all alienated from them, and were great admirers of Cromwell: so he believed they were all rebels in their heart. I answered, that foreigners were no other way concerned in the quarrels of their neighbours, than to see who could or would assist them: the coldness they had seen formerly in the court of England with relation to them, and the zeal which was then expressed, must naturally make them depend on one that seemed resolved to protect them. As the negotiation went on between France and England, Cromwell would have the King and his brother dismissed the kingdom. Mazarin consented to this, for he thought it more honourable that the French king should send them away of his own accord, than that it should be done pursuant to an article with Cromwell. Great excuses were made for doing it: they had some money given them, and were sent away loaded with promises of constant supplies that were never meant to be performed; and they retired to Colen; for the Spaniards were not yet out of hope of gaining Cromwell; but when that vanished, they invited them to Bruxells, and they settled great appointments on them in their way, which was always to promise much, how little soever they could perform. They also settled a pay for such of the subjects of the three kingdoms as would come and serve under our princes; but few came, except from Ireland: of these some regiments were formed. But though this gave them a great and lasting interest in our court, especially in King James's, yet they did not much to deserve it.

The King turned papist.

Before King Charles left Paris he changed his religion, but by whose persuasion is not yet known; only Cardinal

de Retz was in the secret, and Lord Aubigny had a great hand in it. It was kept a great secret. Chancellor Hyde had some suspicion of it, but would never suffer himself to believe it quite. Soon after the restoration that Cardinal came over in disguise, and had an audience of the King: what passed is not known. The first ground I had to believe it was this: the Marquis de Roucy, who was the man of the greatest family in France that continued protestant to the last, was much pressed by that Cardinal to change his religion: he was his kinsman and his particular friend. Among other reasons one that he urged was, that the protestant religion must certainly be ruined, and that they could expect no protection from England; for to his certain knowledge both the princes were already changed. Roucy told this in great confidence to his minister, who after his death sent an advertisement of it to myself. Sir Allen Broderick, a great confident of the chancellor's, who, from being very atheistical, became in the last years of his life an eminent penitent, as he was a man of great parts, with whom I had lived long in great confidence, on his death-bed sent me likewise an account of this matter, which he believed was done in Fontainebleau, before King Charles was sent to Colen. As for King James, it seems he was not reconciled at that time; for he told me, that being in a monastery in Flanders, a nun desired him to pray every day, that if he was not in the right way God would bring him into it: and he said, the impression these words made on him never left him till he changed.

To return to Cromwell: while he was balancing in his mind what was fit for him to do, Gage, who had been a priest, came over from the West Indies, and gave him such an account of the feebleness as well as of the wealth of the Spaniards in those parts, as made him conclude that it would be both a great and an easy conquest to seize on their dominions. By this he reckoned he would be supplied with such a treasure, that his government would be established before he should need to have any recourse to a parliament for money. Spain would never admit of a peace with England between the tropics; so he was in a state of war with them as to those parts, even before he declared war in Europe. He upon that equipped a fleet, with a force sufficient, as he hoped, to have seized His-

Cromwell's design on the West Indies.

paniola and Cuba. Gage had assured him, that success in that expedition would make all the rest fall into his hands. Stoupe, being on another occasion called to his closet, saw him one day very intent in looking on a map, and in measuring distances. Stoupe saw it was a map of the bay of Mexico, and observed who printed it: so, there being no discourse upon that subject, Stoupe went next day to the printer to buy the map. The printer denied he had printed it: Stoupe affirmed he had seen it: then, he said, it must be only in Cromwell's hands; for he only had some of the prints, and had given him a strict charge to sell none till he had leave given him: so Stoupe perceived there was a design that way; and, when the time of setting out the fleet came on, all were in a gaze whither it was to go: some fancied it was to rob the church of Loretto, which did occasion a fortification to be drawn round it; others talked of Rome itself; for Cromwell's preachers had this often in their mouths—that if it were not for the divisions at home, he would go and sack Babylon; others talked of Cadiz, though he had not yet broke with the Spaniards. The French could not penetrate into the secret: Cromwell had not finished his alliance with them; so he was not bound to give them an account of the expedition: all he said upon it was, that he sent out the fleet to guard the seas, and to restore England to its dominion on that element. Stoupe happened to say in a company, he believed the design was on the West Indies: the Spanish ambassador, hearing that, sent for him very privately, to ask him upon what ground he said it; and he offered to lay down 10,000*l.* if he could make any discovery of that. Stoupe owned to me he had a great mind to the money; and fancied he betrayed nothing if he did discover the grounds of these conjectures, since nothing had been trusted to him; but he expected greater matters from Cromwell, and so kept the secret; and said only, that in a diversity of conjectures, that seemed to him more probable than any others. But the ambassador made no account of that; nor did he think it worth the writing to Don John, then at Bruxells, about it.

Stoupe writ it over as his conjecture to one about the Prince of Conde, who at first hearing it was persuaded that must be the design, and went next day to suggest it to Don John; but Don John relied so much on the ambassador,

that this made no impression; and, indeed, all the ministers whom he employed knew that they were not to disturb him with troublesome news; of which King Charles told a pleasant story. One whom Don John was sending to some court in Germany coming to the King to ask his commands, he desired him only to write him news: the Spaniard asked him, whether he would have true or false news; and, when the King seemed amazed at the question, he added, if he writ him true news the King must be secret, for he knew he must write news to Don John that would be acceptable, true or false. When the ministers of that court shewed that they would be served in such a manner, it is no wonder to see how their affairs have declined. This matter of the fleet continued a great secret; and, some months after that, Stoupe being accidentally with Cromwell, one came from the fleet through Ireland with a letter: the bearer looked like one that brought no welcome news; and, as soon as Cromwell had read the letter, he dismissed Stoupe, who went immediately to the Earl of Leicester, then Lord Lisle, and told him what he had seen: he being of Cromwell's council went to Whitehall, and came back and told Stoupe of the descent made on Hispaniola, and of the misfortune that had happened. It was then late, and was the post-night for Flanders; so Stoupe writ it as news to his correspondent, some days before the Spanish ambassador knew any thing of it. Don John was amazed at the news, and had never any regard for the ambassador after that; but had a great opinion of Stoupe, and ordered the ambassador to make him their's at any rate. The ambassador sent for him, and asked him, now that it appeared he had guessed right, what were his grounds; and when he told what they were, the ambassador owned he had reason to conclude as he did upon what he saw. And upon that he made great use of Stoupe; but he himself was never esteemed after that so much as he had been. This deserved to be set down so particularly, since by it it appears that the greatest design may be discovered by an undue carelessness. The court of France was amazed at the undertaking, and was glad that it had miscarried: for the Cardinal said, if he had suspected it, he would have made peace with Spain on any terms, rather than to have given way to that which would have been such an addition to

England, as must have brought all the wealth of the world into their hands. The fleet took Jamaica; but that was a small gain, though much magnified, to cover the failing of the main design. The war after that broke out, in which Dunkirk was indeed taken and put in Cromwell's hand; but the trade of England suffered more in that than in any former war; so he lost the heart of the city of London by that means.

His zeal for the protestant religion.

Cromwell had two signal occasions given him to shew his zeal in protecting the protestants abroad: the Duke of Savoy raised a new persecution of the Vaudois; so Cromwell sent to Mazarin, desiring him to put a stop to that; adding, that he knew well they had that Duke in their power, and could restrain him as they pleased; and, if they did not, he must presently break with them. Mazarin objected to this as unreasonable: he promised to do good offices; but he could not be obliged to answer for the effects they might have. This did not satisfy Cromwell; so they obliged the Duke of Savoy to put a stop to that unjust fury; and Cromwell raised a great sum for the Vaudois, and sent over Morland to settle all their concerns, and to supply all their losses. There was also a tumult in Nismes, in which some disorder had been committed by the Huguenots; and they, apprehending severe proceedings upon it, sent one over with great expedition to Cromwell, who sent him back to Paris in an hour's time, with a very effectual letter to his ambassador, requiring him either to prevail that the matter might be passed over, or to come away immediately. Mazarin complained of this way of proceeding as too imperious; but the necessity of their affairs made him yield. These things raised Cromwell's character abroad, and made him be much depended on.

His ambassador in France at this time was Lockhart, a Scotchman, who had married his niece, and was in high favour with him, as he well deserved to be. He was both a wise and a gallant man; calm and virtuous, and one that carried the generosities of friendship very far. He was made governor of Dunkirk, and ambassador at the same time; but he told me, that when he was sent afterwards ambassador by King Charles, he found he had nothing of that regard that was paid him in Cromwell's time.

Stoupe told me of a great design Cromwell had in-

tended to begin his kingship with, if he had assumed it: he resolved to set up a council for the protestant religion, in opposition to the congregation de propaganda fide at Rome. He intended it should consist of seven counsellors, and four secretaries for different provinces. These were the first, France, Switzerland, and the Valleys; the Palatinate and the other Calvinists were the second; Germany, the North, and Turkey, were the third; and the East and West Indies were the fourth. The secretaries were to have 500*l.* salary apiece, and to keep a correspondence every where, to know the state of religion all over the world, that so all good designs might be by their means protected and assisted. Stoupe was to have the first province. They were to have a fund of 10,000*l.* a year at their disposal for ordinary emergencies, but to be farther supplied as occasions should require it. Chelsea College was to be made up for them, which was then an old decayed building, that had been at first raised to be a college for writers of controversy. I thought it was not fit to let such a project as this be quite lost: it was certainly a noble one; but how far he would have pursued it, must be left to conjecture.

A great design for the interest of the protestant religion.

Stoupe told me a remarkable passage in his employment under Cromwell. Stoupe had desired all that were under the Prince of Conde to let him know some news, in return of that he writ to them. So he had a letter from one of them, giving an account of an Irishman newly gone over, who had said he would kill Cromwell; and that he was to lodge in King-street, Westminster. With this, Stoupe went to Whitehall. Cromwell being then at council, he sent him a note, letting him know that he had a business of great consequence to lay before him. Cromwell was then upon a matter that did so entirely possess him, that he, fancying it was only some piece of foreign intelligence, sent Thurlo to know what it might be. Stoupe was troubled at this, but could not refuse to shew him his letter. Thurlo made no great matter of it: he said they had many such advertisements sent them, which signified nothing but to make the world think the Protector was in danger of his life; and the looking too much after these things had an appearance of fear, which did ill become so great a man. Stoupe told him King-street might be soon searched. Thur-

Some passages in Cromwell's life.

lo answered, if we find no such person, how shall we be laughed at? Yet he ordered him to write again to Bruxells, and promise any reward if a more particular discovery could be made. Stoupe was much cast down, when he saw that a piece of intelligence which he hoped might have made his fortune was so little considered. He wrote to Bruxells; but he had no more from thence but a confirmation of what had been writ formerly to him: and Thurlo did not think fit to make any search, or any farther inquiry into it; nor did he so much as acquaint Cromwell with it. Stoupe being uneasy at this, told Lord Lisle of it: and it happened that, a few weeks after, Syndercomb's design of assassinating Cromwell near Brentford, as he was going to Hampton Court, was discovered. When he was examined, it appeared that he was the person set out in the letters from Bruxells. So Lisle said to Cromwell, this is the very man of whom Stoupe had the notice given him. Cromwell seemed amazed at this; and sent for Stoupe, and in great wrath reproached him for his ingratitude in concealing a matter of such consequence to him. Stoupe upon this shewed him the letters he had received; and put him in mind of the note he had sent in to him, which was immediately after he had the first letter, and that he had sent out Thurlo to him. At that Cromwell seemed yet more amazed; and sent for Thurlo, to whose face Stoupe affirmed the matter: nor did he deny any part of it, but only said that he had many such advertisements sent him, in which, till this time, he had never found any truth. Cromwell replied sternly, that he ought to have acquainted him with it, and left him to judge of the importance of it. Thurlo desired to speak in private with Cromwell: so Stoupe was dismissed, and went away, not doubting but Thurlo would be disgraced. But, as he understood from Lisle afterward, Thurlo shewed Cromwell such instances of his care and fidelity on all such occasions, and humbly acknowledged his error in this matter, but imputed it wholly to his care both for his honour and quiet, that he pacified him entirely: and, indeed, he was so much in all Cromwell's secrets, that it was not safe to disgrace him without destroying him; and that, it seems, Cromwell could not resolve on. Thurlo having mastered this point, that he might farther justify his not being so attentive as he ought

to have been, did so much search into Stoupe's whole deportment, that he possessed Cromwell with such an ill opinion of him, that after that he never treated him with any confidence. So he found how dangerous it was even to preserve a prince (so he called him), when a minister was wounded in the doing of it; and that the minister would be too hard for the prince, even though his own safety was concerned in it.

These are all the memorable things that I have learnt concerning Cromwell; of whom so few have spoken with any temper, some commending, and others condemning him, and both out of measure, that I thought a just account of him, which I had from sure hands, might be no unacceptable thing. He never could shake off the roughness of his education and temper: he spoke always long, and very ungracefully. The enthusiast and the dissembler mixed so equally in a great part of his deportment, that it was not easy to tell which was the prevailing character. He was indeed both, as I understood from Wilkins and Tillotson; the one having married his sister, and the other his niece. He was a true enthusiast, but with the principle formerly mentioned, from which he might be easily led into all the practices both of falsehood and cruelty; which was, that he thought moral laws were only binding on ordinary occasions, but that upon extraordinary ones, these might be superseded. When his own designs did not lead him out of the way, he was a lover of justice and virtue, and even of learning, though much decried at that time.

His moderation in government.

He studied to seek out able and honest men, and to employ them: and so having heard that my father had a very great reputation in Scotland for piety and integrity, though he knew him to be a royalist, he sent to him, desiring him to accept of a judge's place, and to do justice in his own country, hoping only that he would not act against his government; but he would not press him to subscribe or swear to it. My father refused it in a pleasant way. When he who brought the message was running out into Cromwell's commendation, my father told a story of a pilgrim in popery, who came to a church where one Saint Kilmaclotius was in great reverence: so the pilgrim was bid pray to him; but he answered, he knew nothing of him, for he

was not in his breviary: but when he was told how great a saint he was, he prayed this collect: "O sancte Kilmacloti, tu nobis hactenus es incognitus, hoc solum à te rogo, ut si bona tua nobis non prosint, saltem mala ne noceant." My father replied, that he desired no other favour of him but leave to live privately, without the impositions of oaths and subscriptions: and ever after he lived in great quiet. And this was an instance of it: Overton, one of Cromwell's major-generals, who was a high republican, being for some time at Aberdeen, where we then lived, my father and he were often together: in particular, they were shut up alone for about two hours the night after the order came from Cromwell to take away Overton's commissions, and to put him in arrest. Upon that Howard, afterward Earl of Carlisle, being sent down to inquire into all the plots that those men had been in, heard of this long privacy: but when with that he heard what my father's character was, he made no farther inquiry into it; but said Cromwell was very uneasy when any good man was questioned for any thing.

His public spirit.

This gentleness had in a great measure quieted people's minds with relation to him; and his maintaining the honour of the nation in all foreign countries gratified the vanity which is very natural to Englishmen; of which he was so careful, that though he was not a crowned head, yet his ambassadors had all the respects paid them which our King's ambassadors ever had: he said, the dignity of the crown was upon the account of the nation, of which the King was only the representative head; so the nation being still the same, he would have the same regards paid to his ministers.

Another instance of this pleased him much: Blake, with the fleet, happened to be at Malaga before he made war upon Spain; and some of his seamen went ashore, and met the hostie carried about; and not only paid no respect to it, but laughed at those who did: so one of the priests put the people on resenting this indignity; and they fell upon them, and beat them severely. When they returned to their ship, they complained of this usage: and upon that Blake sent a trumpet to the viceroy, to demand the priest who was the chief instrument in that ill usage. The viceroy answered, he had no authority over the priests, and so could not dispose of him. Blake upon that sent him word, that he would

not inquire who had the power to send the priest to him, but if he were not sent within three hours he would burn their town: and they, being in no condition to resist him, sent the priest to him, who justified himself upon the petulent behaviour of the seamen. Blake answered, that if he had sent a complaint to him of it, he would have punished them severely, since he would not suffer his men to affront the established religion of any place at which he touched; but he took it ill that he set on the Spaniards to do it; for he would have all the world to know, that an Englishman was only to be punished by an Englishman: and so he treated the priest civilly, and sent him back, being satisfied that he had him at his mercy.

All the world was afraid of him.

Cromwell was much delighted with this, and read the letters in council with great satisfaction; and said, he hoped he should make the name of an Englishman as great as ever that of a Roman had been. The states of Holland were in such dread of him, that they took care to give him no sort of umbrage: and when at any time the King or his brothers came to see their sister, the Princess Royal, within a day or two after, they used to send a deputation to let them know, that Cromwell had required of the states that they should give them no harbour. King Charles, when he was seeking for colours for the war with the Dutch in the year 1672, urged it for one, that they suffered some of his rebels to live in their provinces. Borel, then their ambassador, answered, that it was a maxim of long standing among them, not to inquire upon what account strangers came to live in their country, but to receive them all, unless they had been concerned in conspiracies against the persons of princes. The King told him upon that, how they had used both himself and his brother. Borel, in great simplicity, answered, "Ha! sire, c'estoit une autre chose: Cromwell estoit un grand homme, et il se faisoit craindre et par terre et par mer." This was very rough. The King's answer was, "Je me feray craindre aussy à mon tour:" but he was scarce as good as his word.

Cromwell's favourite alliance was with Sweden. Carolus Gustavus and he lived in great conjunction of counsels. Even Algernon Sydney, who was not inclined to think or speak well of kings, commended him to me; and said, he had just notions of public liberty; and added, that Queen

Christina seemed to have them likewise. But she was much changed from that, when I waited on her at Rome; for she complained of us as a factious nation, that did not readily comply with the commands of our princes. All Italy trembled at the name of Cromwell, and seemed under a panic as long as he lived. His fleet scoured the Mediterranean, and the Turks durst not offend him, but delivered up Hyde, who kept up the character of an ambassador from the King there, and was brought over and executed for it. The putting the brother of the King of Portugal's ambassador to death for murder, was the carrying justice very far; since, though in the strictness of the law of nations it is only the ambassador's own person that is exempted from any authority but his master's that sends him, yet the practice had gone in favour of all that the ambassador owned to belong to him. Cromwell shewed his good understanding in nothing more, than in seeking out capable and worthy men for all employments, but most particularly for the courts of law, which gave a general satisfaction.

The ruin of his family.

Thus he lived, and at last died, on his auspicious * 3d of September, of so slight a sickness, that his death was not looked for. He had two sons, and four daughters. His sons were weak but honest men. Richard, the eldest, though declared Protector, in pursuance of a nomination pretended to be made by Cromwell, the truth of which was much questioned, was not at all bred for business, nor indeed capable of it. He was innocent of all the ill his father had done: so there was no prejudice lay against him: and both the royalists and presbyterians fancied he favoured them, though he pretended to be an independent. But all the commonwealth party cried out upon his assuming the protectorship, as a high usurpation; since whatever his father had from his parliaments was only personal, and so fell with him: yet in opposition to this, the city of London, and all the counties and cities almost in England, sent him addresses congratulatory as well as condoling: so little do these pompous appearances of respect signify. Tillotson told me, that a week after Cromwell's death, he

* It may well be called *auspicious*, since on that day he had defeated the Scotch at Dunbar, and the next year the King at Worcester.

being by accident at Whitehall, and hearing there was to be a fast that day in the household, he out of curiosity went into the presence chamber where it was held. On the one side of a table Richard with the rest of Cromwell's family were placed, and six of the preachers were on the other side: Thomas Goodwin, Owen, Carril and Sterry were of the number. There he heard a deal of strange stuff, enough to disgust a man for ever of that enthusiastic boldness. God was, as it were, reproached with Cromwell's services, and challenged for taking him away so soon. Goodwin, who had pretended to assure them in a prayer that he was not to die, which was but a very few minutes before he expired, had now the impudence to say to God, "Thou hast deceived us, and we were deceived." Sterry, praying for Richard, used those indecent words, next to blasphemy, "Make him the brightness of the father's glory, and the express image of his person." Richard was put on giving his father a pompous funeral, by which his debts increased so upon him, that he was soon run out of all credit. When the parliament met, his party tried to get a recognition of his protectorship, but it soon appeared they had no strength to carry it. Fleetwood, who married Ireton's widow, set up a council of officers, and these resolved to lay aside Richard, who had neither genius nor friends, neither treasure nor army to support him. He desired only security for the debts he had contracted; which was promised, but not performed. And so without any struggle he withdrew, and became a private man: and, as he had done hurt to nobody, so nobody did ever study to hurt him—a rare instance of the instability of human greatness, and of the security of innocence. His brother had been made by the father lieutenant of Ireland, and had the most spirit of the two; but he could not stand his ground when his brother quitted. One of Cromwell's daughters was married to Claypole, and died a little before himself; another was married to the Earl of Falconbridge, a wise and worthy woman, more likely to have maintained the post than either of her brothers, according to a saying that went of her, that those who wore breeches deserved petticoats better; but if those in petticoats had been in breeches, they would have held faster. The other daughter was married, first to the Earl of Warwick's heir, and af-

terwards to one Russel. They were both very worthy persons.

Great disorders followed.

Upon Richard's leaving the stage, the commonwealth was again set up: and the parliament which Cromwell had broke was brought together; but the army and they fell into new disputes; so they were again broke by the army: and upon that the nation was like to fall into great convulsions. The enthusiasts became very fierce, and talked of nothing but the destroying all the records and the law, which they said had been all made by a succession of tyrants and papists; so they resolved to model all anew by a levelling, and a spiritual government of the saints. There was so little sense in this, that Nevill and Harrington, with some others, set up in Westminster a meeting, to consider of a form of government that should secure liberty, and yet preserve the nation. They ran chiefly on having a parliament elected by ballot, in which the nation should be represented according to the proportion of what was paid in taxes, towards the public expense: and by this parliament a council of twenty-four was to be chosen by ballot; and every year eight of these were to be changed, and might not again be brought into it, but after an interval of three years: by these the nation was to be governed, and they were to give an account of the administration to the parliament every year. This meeting was a matter of diversion and scorn, to see a few persons take upon them to form a scheme of government; and it made many conclude it was necessary to call home the King, that so matters might again fall into their old channel. Lambert became the man on whom the army depended most. Upon his forcing the parliament, great applications were made to Monk to declare for the parliament: but under this the declaring for the King was generally understood. Yet he kept himself under such a reserve, that he declared all the while in the most solemn manner for a commonwealth, and against a single person, in particular against the King: so that none had any ground from him to believe he had any design that way. Some have thought that he intended to try, if it were possible, to set up for himself: others rather believed that he had no settled design any way, and resolved to do as occasion should be offered to him. The Scotch nation did certainly hope he would bring home the

King. He drew the greatest part of the army towards the borders, where Lambert advanced towards him with seven thousand horse. Monk was stronger in foot: but being apprehensive of engaging on disadvantage, he sent Clarges to the Lord Fairfax for his advice and assistance, who returned answer by Dr. Fairfax, afterwards secretary to the Archbishop of Canterbury, and assured him he would raise Yorkshire on the 1st of January: and he desired him to press upon Lambert, in case that he should send a detachment into Yorkshire. On the 1st of January, Fairfax appeared with about one hundred gentlemen and their servants: but so much did he still maintain his great credit with the army, that the night after, the Irish brigade, that consisted of twelve hundred horse, and was the rear of Lambert's army, came over to him. Upon that Lambert retreated, finding his army was so little sure to him, and resolved to march back to London. He was followed by Monk, who when he came to Yorkshire met with Fairfax, and offered to resign the chief command to him. The Lord Fairfax refused it, but pressed Monk to declare for a free parliament: yet in that he was so reserved to him, that Fairfax knew not how to depend on him. But as Lambert was making haste up, his army mouldered away, and he himself was brought up a prisoner, and was put in the Tower of London. Yet not long after he made his escape, and gathered a few troops about him in Northamptonshire: but these were soon scattered; for Ingoldsby, though one of the King's judges, raised Buckinghamshire against him; and so little force seemed now in that party, that with very little opposition Ingoldsby took him prisoner, and brought him into Northampton, where Lambert, as Ingoldsby told me, entertained him with a pleasant reflection for all his misfortunes. The people were in great crowds applauding and rejoicing for the success. So Lambert put Ingoldsby in mind of what Cromwell had said to them both, near that very place, in the year 1650, when they with a body of the officers were going down after their army that was marching to Scotland, the people all the while shouting and wishing them success: Lambert upon that said to Cromwell, he was glad to see they had the nation on their side: Cromwell answered,—Do not trust to that; for these very persons would shout as much if you and I were going to

be hanged. Lambert said, he looked on himself as in a fair way to that, and began to think Cromwell prophesied.

Upon the dispersing Lambert's army, Monk marched southward, and was now the object of all men's hope. At London all sorts of people began to cabal together; royalists, presbyterians, and republicans. Hollis told me, the presbyterians pressed the royalists to be quiet, and to leave the game in their hands; for their appearing would give jealousy, and hurt that which they meant to promote. He and Ashly Cooper, Grimstone, and Annesly, met often with Manchester, Roberts, and the rest of the presbyterian party; and the ministers of London were very active in the city; so that when Monk came up, he was pressed to declare himself: at first he would only declare for the parliament that Lambert had forced; but there was then a great fermentation all over the nation. Monk and the parliament grew jealous of one another, even while they tried who could give the best words, and express their confidence in the highest terms of one another. I will pursue the relation of this transaction no farther; for this matter is well known.

All turn to the King's side.

The King had gone in autumn 1659 to the meeting at the Pyrenees, where Cardinal Mazarin and Don Lewis de Haro were negotiating a peace. He applied himself to both sides, to try what assistance he might expect upon their concluding the peace. It was then known that he went to mass sometimes, that so he might recommend himself the more effectually to both courts; yet this was carried secretly, and was confidently denied. Mazarin still talked to Lockhart upon the foot of the old confidence: for he went thither to watch over the treaty, though England was now in such convulsions, that no minister from thence could be much considered unless it was upon his own account. But matters were ripening so fast towards a revolution in England, that the King came back to Flanders in all haste, and went from thence to Breda. Lockhart had it in his power to have made a great fortune, if he had begun first, and had brought the King to Dunkirk. As soon as the peace of the Pyrenees was made, he came over and found Monk at London, and took all the pains he could to penetrate into his designs; but Monk continued still to protest to him, in the solemnest manner possible,

that he would be true to the commonwealth, and against the royal family. Lockhart went away, persuaded that matters would continue still in the same state; so that when his old friend Midletoun writ to him to make his own terms, if he would invite the King to Dunkirk, he said he was trusted by the commonwealth, and could not betray it.

The House of Commons put Monk on breaking the gates of the city of London, not doubting but that would render him so odious to them, that it would force him to depend wholly on themselves: he did it; and soon after he saw how odious he was become by it: so conceiving a high indignation at those who had put him on such an ungracious piece of service, he sent about all that night to the ministers and other active citizens, assuring them that he would quickly repair that error, if they would forgive it: so the turn was sudden; for the city sent and invited him to dine the next day at Guildhall; and there he declared for the members whom the army had forced away in the year 1647 and 1648, who were known by the name of secluded members; and some happening to call the body that then sat at Westminster the rump of a parliament, a sudden humour run like a madness through the whole city, of roasting the rumps of all sorts of animals; and thus the city expressed themselves sufficiently. Those at Westminster had no support; so they fell unpitied and unregarded. The secluded members came and sat down among them; but all they could do was to give orders for the summoning a new parliament to meet the 1st of May; and so they declared themselves dissolved.

Care taken to manage the army.

There was still a murmuring in the army; so great care was taken to scatter them in wide quarters, and not to suffer too many of those who were still for the old cause to lie near one another. The well and the ill affected were so mixed, that in case of any insurrection some might be ready at hand to assist them. They changed the officers that were ill affected, who were not thought fit to be trusted with the commanding those of their own stamp; and so created a mistrust between the officers and the soldiers; and, above all, they took care to have no more troops than was necessary about the city; and these were the best affected. This was managed with great diligence and skill; and by this conduct it was that the great turn was brought

about without the least tumult or bloodshed, which was beyond what any person could have imagined. Of all this Monk had both the praise and the reward; though, I have been told, a very small share of it belonged to him. Admiral Montague was then in chief command at sea, newly returned from the Sound, where he and de Ruyter, upon the orders they received from their masters, had brought the two northern kings to a peace, the King of Sweden dying as it was a making up. He was soon gained to be for the King; and dealt so effectually with the whole fleet, that the turn there was as silently brought about, without any revolt or opposition, as it had been in the army. The republicans went about like madmen, to rouse up their party; but their time was past: all were either as men amazed or asleep; they had neither the skill nor the courage to make any opposition. The elections of parliament-men run all the other way; so they saw their business was quite lost, and they felt themselves struck as with a spirit of giddiness: and then every man thought only how to save or secure himself; and now they saw how deceitful the argument from success was, which they had used so oft, and triumphed so much upon. For whereas success in the field, which was the foundation of their argument, depended much upon the conduct and courage of armies, in which the will of man had a large share, here was a thing of another nature: a nation that had run on long in such a fierce opposition to the royal family, was now turned as one man to call home the King.

The nation had one great happiness during the long course of the civil war—that no foreigners had got footing among them. Spain was sinking to nothing; France was under a base-spirited minister; and both were in war all the while. Now a peace was made between them; and very probably, according to what is in Mazarin's letters, they would have joined forces to have restored the King. The nation was by this means entirely in its own hands; and now returning to its wits was in a condition to put every thing in joint again: whereas, if foreigners had been possessed of any important place, they might have had a large share of the management, and would have been sure of taking care of themselves. Enthusiasm was now languid; for that, owing its mechanical force to the liveliness

of the blood and spirits, men in disorder and depressed could not raise in themselves those heats, with which they were formerly wont to transport themselves and others. Chancellor Hyde was all this while very busy: he sent over Dr. Morley, who talked much with the presbyterians of moderation in general, but would enter into no particulars; only he took care to let them know he was a Calvinist; and they had the best opinion of such of the church of England as were of that persuasion. Hyde wrote in the King's name to all the leading men, and got the King to write a great many letters in a very obliging manner. Some that had been faulty sent over considerable presents, with assurances that they would redeem all that was past with their zeal for the future. These were all accepted of. Their money was also very welcome; for the King needed money when his matters were on that crisis, and he had so many tools at work. The management of all this was so entirely the Chancellor's single performance, that there was scarce any other that had so much as a share in it with him. He kept a register of all the King's promises, and of his own; and did all that lay in his power afterwards to get them all to be performed. He was also all that while giving the King many wise and good advices; but he did it too much with the air of a governor, or of a lawyer; yet then the King was wholly in his hands.

A new parliament.

I need not open the scene of the new parliament, or convention, as it came afterwards to be called, because it was not summoned by the King's writ: such unanimity appeared in their proceedings, that there was not the least dispute among them, but upon one single point; yet that was a very important one. Hale, afterwards the famous chief justice, moved that a committee might be appointed to look into the propositions that had been made, and the concessions that had been offered, by the late King during the war, particularly at the treaty of Newport, that from thence they might digest such propositions as they should think fit to be sent over to the King. This was seconded, but I do not remember by whom. It was foreseen that such a motion might be set on foot; so Monk was instructed how to answer it, whensoever it should be proposed. He told the House, that there was yet, beyond all men's hope, an universal quiet all over the nation, but

there were many incendiaries still on the watch, trying where they could first raise the flame. He said, he had such copious informations sent him of these things, that it was not fit they should be generally known: he could not answer for the peace either of the nation or of the army if any delay was put to the sending for the King: what need was there of sending propositions to him? Might they not as well prepare them, and offer them to him, when he should come over? he was to bring neither army nor treasure with him, either to fright them or to corrupt them. So he moved that they would immediately send commissioners to bring over the King; and said that he must lay the blame of all the blood or mischief that might follow on the heads of those who should still insist on any motion that might delay the present settlement of the nation. This was echoed with such a shout over the House that the motion was no more insisted on.

They called home the King without a treaty.

This was indeed the great service that Monk did. It was chiefly owing to the post he was in, and to the credit he had gained: for, as to the restoration itself, the tide run so strong, that he only went into it dexterously enough, to get much fame and great rewards, for that which will have still a great appearance in history. If he had died soon after, he might have been more justly admired, because less known, and seen only in one advantageous light; but he lived long enough to make it known how false a judgment men are apt to make upon outward appearance. To the King's coming in without conditions may be well imputed all the errors of his reign. And when the Earl of Southampton came to see what he was like to prove, he said once in great wrath to Chancellor Hyde, it was to him they owed all they either felt or feared; for if he had not possessed them in all his letters with such an opinion of the King, they would have taken care to have put it out of his power either to do himself or them any mischief, which was like to be the effect of their trusting him so entirely. Hyde answered, that he thought the King had so true a judgment, and so much goodnature, that when the age of pleasure should be over, and the idleness of his exile, which made him seek new diversions for want of other employment, was turned to an obligation to mind affairs, then he would have shaken off those entanglements. I

must put my reader in mind, that I leave all common transactions to ordinary books. If at any time I say things that occur in any books, it is partly to keep the thread of the narration in an unintangled method, and partly, because I neither have heard nor read those things in books; or at least I do not remember to have read them so clearly and so particularly as I have related them. I now leave a mad and confused scene, to open a more august and splendid one.

BOOK II.

Of the first twelve years of the reign of King Charles II. from the year 1660 *to the year* 1673.

1660. I DIVIDE King Charles's reign into two books, not so much because, consisting of twenty-four years, it fell, if divided at all, naturally to put twelve years in a book; but I have a much better reason for it, since as to the first twelve years, though I knew the affairs of Scotland very authentically, yet I had only such a general knowledge of the affairs of England as I could pick up at a distance, whereas I lived so near the scene, and had indeed such a share in several parts of it, during the last twelve years, that I can write of these with much more certainty, as well as more fully, than of the first twelve. I will therefore enlarge more particularly, within the compass that I have fixed for this book, on the affairs of Scotland; both out of the inbred love that all men have for their native country, and more particularly, that I may leave some useful instructions to those of my own order and profession, by representing to them the conduct of the bishops of Scotland; for having observed with more than ordinary niceness all the errors that were committed, both at the first setting up of episcopacy, and in the whole progress of its continuance in Scotland, till it was again overturned there, I am enabled to set all that matter in a full view and in a clear light.

Many went over to the Hague.

As soon as it was fixed that the King was to be restored, a great many went over to make their court; among these Sharp, who was employed by the resolutioners of Scotland, was one. He carried with him a letter from the Earl of Glencairn to Hyde, made soon after Earl of Clarendon, recommending him as the only person capable to manage the design of setting up episcopacy in Scotland; upon which he was received into great confidence. Yet, as he had observed very carefully the success of Monk's solemn protestations against the King for a commonwealth, it seems he was so pleased with the original, that he resolved to copy after it, without letting himself be diverted

from it by scruples; for he stuck neither at solemn protestations, both by word of mouth and by letters, (of which I have seen many proofs,) nor at appeals to God of his sincerity in acting for the presbytery, both in prayers and on other occasions, joining with these many dreadful imprecations on himself if he did prevaricate. He was all the while maintained by the presbyterians as their agent, and continued to give them a constant account of the progress of his negociation in their service, while he was indeed undermining it. This piece of craft was so visible, he having repeated his protestations to as many persons as then grew jealous of him, that when he threw off the mask, about a year after this, it laid a foundation of such a character of him, that nothing could ever bring people to any tolerable thoughts of a man, whose dissimulation and treachery was so well known, and of which so many proofs were to be seen under his own hand. 1660.

The nation was over-run with vice and drunkenness.

With the restoration of the King, a spirit of extravagant joy spread over the nation, that brought on with it the throwing off the very professions of virtue and piety: all ended in entertainments and drunkenness, which over-run the three kingdoms to such a degree, that it very much corrupted all their morals. Under the colour of drinking the King's health, there were great disorders and much riot every where; and the pretences of religion, both in those of the hypocritical sort, and of the more honest, but no less pernicious enthusiasts, gave great advantages, as well as they furnished much matter to the profane mockers of true piety. Those who had been concerned in the former transactions thought they could not redeem themselves from the censures and jealousies that those brought on them, by any method that was more sure and more easy than by going into the stream, and laughing at all religion, telling or making stories to expose both themselves and their party as impious and ridiculous.

The King's character.

The King was then thirty years of age, and, as might have been supposed, past the levities of youth and the extravagance of pleasure. He had a very good understanding. He knew well the state of affairs both at home and abroad. He had a softness of temper that charmed all who came near him, till they found how little they could depend on good looks, kind words, and fair promises, in

1660. which he was liberal to excess, because he intended nothing by them, but to get rid of importunities, and to silence all farther pressing upon him. He seemed to have no sense of religion; both at prayers and sacrament, he, as it were, took care to satisfy people that he was in no sort concerned in that about which he was employed. So that he was very far from being an hypocrite, unless his assisting at those performances was a sort of hypocrisy, (as no doubt it was,) but he was sure not to increase that by any the least appearance of religion. He said once to myself he was no atheist, but he could not think God would make a man miserable only for taking a little pleasure out of the way. He disguised his popery to the last. But when he talked freely, he could not help letting himself out against the liberty that under the Reformation all men took of inquiring into matters of religion; for from their inquiring into matters of religion they carried the humour farther to inquire into matters of state. He said often, he thought government was a much safer and easier thing, where the authority was believed infallible, and the faith and submission of the people implicit; about which I had once much discourse with him. He was affable and easy, and loved to be made so by all about him. The great art of keeping him long was, the being easy, and the making every thing easy to him. He had made such observations on the French government that he thought a king who might be checked, or have his ministers called to an account by a parliament, was but a king in name. He had a great compass of knowledge, though he was never capable of much application or study. He understood the mechanics and physic, and was a good chymist, and much set on several preparations of mercury, chiefly the fixing it. He understood navigation well; but, above all, he knew the architecture of ships so perfectly, that in that respect he was exact rather more than became a prince. His apprehension was quick, and his memory good. He was an everlasting talker. He told his stories with a good grace; but they came in his way too often. He had a very ill opinion both of men and women, and did not think that there was either sincerity or chastity in the world out of principle, but that some had either the one or the other out of humour or vanity. He thought that nobody did

serve him out of love; and so he was quits with all the world, and loved others as little as he thought they loved him. He hated business, and could not be easily brought to mind any; but when it was necessary, and he was set to it, he would stay as long as his ministers had work for him. The ruin of his reign, and of all his affairs, was occasioned chiefly by his delivering himself up at his first coming over to a mad range of pleasure. One of the race of the Villers, then married to Palmer, a papist, soon after made Earl of Castlemain, who afterwards being separated from him was advanced to be Dutchess of Cleveland, was his first and longest mistress, by whom he had five children. She was a woman of great beauty, but most enormously vicious and ravenous; foolish, but imperious; very uneasy to the King, and always carrying on intrigues with other men, while yet she pretended she was jealous of him. His passion for her, and her strange behaviour towards him, did so disorder him, that often he was not master of himself, nor capable of minding business, which in so critical a time required great application; but he did then so entirely trust the Earl of Clarendon, that he left all to his care, and submitted to his advices as to so many oracles. 1660.

Clarendon's character.

The Earl of Clarendon was bred to the law, and was like to grow eminent in his profession when the wars began. He distinguished himself so in the House of Commons, that he became considerable, and was much trusted all the while the King was at Oxford. He staid beyond sea, following the King's fortune till the restoration, and was now an absolute favourite, and the chief or the only minister, but with too magisterial a way. He was always pressing the King to mind his affairs, but in vain. He was a good chancellor, only a little too rough, but very impartial in the administration of justice. He never seemed to understand foreign affairs well, and yet he meddled too much in them. He had too much levity in his wit, and did not always observe the decorum of his post. He was high, and was apt to reject those who addressed themselves to him with too much contempt. He had such a regard to the King, that when places were disposed of, even otherwise than as he advised, yet he would justify what the King did, and disparage the pretensions of others, not without much scorn, which created him many enemies. He was indefa-

1660.

tigable in business, though the gout did often disable him from waiting on the King: yet, during his credit, the King came constantly to him when he was laid up by it.

Ormond's character.

The next man in favour with the King was the Duke of Ormond; a man every way fitted for a court: of a graceful appearance, a lively wit, and a cheerful temper: a man of great expense, decent even in his vices, for he always kept up the form of religion. He had gone through many transactions in Ireland with more fidelity than success. He had made a treaty with the Irish, which was broken by the great body of them, though some few of them adhered still to him. But the whole Irish nation did still pretend that, though they had broke the agreement first, yet he, or rather the King, in whose name he had treated with them, was bound to perform all the articles of the treaty. He had miscarried so in the siege of Dublin, that it very much lessened the opinion of his military conduct. Yet his constant attendance on his master, his easiness to him, and his great sufferings for him, raised him to be lord steward of the household, and lord lieutenant of Ireland. He was firm to the protestant religion, and so firm to the laws, that he always gave good advices: but when bad ones were followed, he was not for complaining too much of them.

Southampton's character.

The Earl of Southampton was next to these. He was a man of great virtue, and of very good parts. He had a lively apprehension, and a good judgment. He had merited much by his constant adhering to the King's interest during the war, and by the large supplies he had sent him every year during his exile; for he had a great estate, and only three daughters to inherit it. He was lord treasurer, but he grew soon weary of business; for as he was subject to the stone, which returned often and violently upon him, so he retained the principles of liberty, and did not go into the violent measures of the court. When he saw the King's temper, and his way of managing, or rather of spoiling business, he grew very uneasy, and kept himself more out of the way than was consistent with that high post. The King stood in some awe of him, and saw how popular he would grow if put out of his service, and therefore he chose rather to bear with his ill humour and contradiction than to dismiss him. He left the business of the Treasury wholly in the hands of his secretary, Sir Philip

Warwick, who was an honest but a weak man, and understood the common road of the Treasury. He was an incorrupt man, and during seven years management of the Treasury made but an ordinary fortune out of it. Before the restoration the lord treasurer had but a small salary, with an allowance for a table; but he gave, or rather sold, all the subaltern places, and made great profits out of the estate of the crown: but now, that estate being gone, and the Earl of Southampton disdaining to sell places, the matter was settled so that the lord treasurer was to have 8000*l.* a year, and the King was to name all the subaltern officers. It continued to be so all his time: but since that time the lord treasurer has both the 8000*l.* and a main hand in the disposing of those places. 1660.

The man that was in the greatest credit with the Earl of Southampton was Sir Anthony Ashly Cooper, who had married his niece, and became afterwards so considerable, that he was raised to be Earl of Shaftsbury. And, since he came to have so great a name, and that I knew him for many years in a very particular manner, I will dwell a little longer on his character, for it was of a very extraordinary composition. He began to make a considerable figure very early. Before he was twenty he came into the House of Commons, and was on the King's side, and undertook to get Wiltshire and Dorsetshire to declare for him; but he was not able to effect it. Yet Prince Maurice breaking articles to a town, that he had got to receive him, furnished him with an excuse to forsake that side, and to turn to the parliament. He had a wonderful faculty in speaking to a popular assembly, and could mix both the facetious and the serious way of arguing very agreeably. He had a particular talent to make others trust to his judgment and depend on it: and he brought over so many to a submission to his opinion, that I never knew any man equal to him in the art of governing parties, and of making himself the head of them. He was as to religion a deist at best; he had the dotage of astrology in him to a high degree: he told me, that a Dutch doctor had from the stars foretold him the whole series of his life. But that which was before him when he told me this proved false, if he told me true; for he said, he was yet to be a greater man than he had been. He fancied that after death our souls lived in Shaftsbury's character.

1660. stars. He had a general knowledge of the slighter parts of learning, but understood little to the bottom: so he triumphed in a rambling way of talking, but argued slightly when he was held close to any point. He had a wonderful faculty at opposing, and running things down; but had not the like force in building up. He had such an extravagant vanity in setting himself out, that it was very disagreeable. He pretended that Cromwell offered to make him King: he was indeed of great use to him in withstanding the enthusiasts of that time: he was one of those who pressed him most to accept of the kingship, because, as he said afterwards, he was sure it would ruin him. His strength lay in the knowledge of England, and of all the considerable men in it: he understood well the size of their understandings, and their tempers; and he knew how to apply himself to them so dexterously, that, though by his changing sides so often it was very visible how little he was to be depended on, yet he was to the last much trusted by all the discontented party. He was not ashamed to reckon up the many turns he had made; and he valued himself on the doing it at the properest season, and in the best manner. This he did with so much vanity, and so little discretion, that he lost many by it; and his reputation was at last run so low, that he could not have held much longer, had he not died in good time, either for his family or for his party: the former would have been ruined, if he had not saved it by betraying the latter.

Anglesey's character.

Another man, very near of the same sort, who passed through many great employments, was Annesly, advanced to be Earl of Anglesey; who had much more knowledge, and was very learned, chiefly in the law. He had the faculty of speaking indefatigably upon every subject; but he spoke ungracefully, and did not know that he was not good at raillery, for he was always attempting it. He understood our government well, and had examined far into the original of our constitution. He was capable of great application, and was a man of a grave deportment; but stuck at nothing, and was ashamed of nothing. He was neither loved nor trusted by any man or any side: and he seemed to have no regard to common decencies, but sold every thing that was in his power; and sold himself so often, that at last the price fell so low, that he grew useless.

Hollis was a man of great courage, and of as great pride: he was counted for many years the head of the presbyterian party. He was faithful and firm to his side, and never changed through the whole course of his life. He engaged in a particular opposition to Cromwell in the time of the war: they hated one another equally. Hollis seemed to carry this too far, for he would not allow Cromwell to have been either wise or brave; but often applied Solomon's observation to him, "That the battle was not to the strong, nor favour to the man of understanding, but that time and chance happened to all men." He was well versed in the records of parliament; and argued well, but too vehemently, for he could not bear contradiction. He had the soul of an old stubborn Roman in him. He was a faithful but a rough friend, and a severe but fair enemy. He had a true sense of religion; and was a man of an unblamable course of life, and of a sound judgment when it was not biassed by passion. He was made a lord for his merits in bringing about the restoration. 1660. Hollis's character.

The Earl of Manchester was made lord chamberlain: a man of a soft and obliging temper, of no great depth, but universally beloved, being both a virtuous and a generous man. The Lord Roberts was made lord privy seal, afterwards lord lieutenant of Ireland, and at last president of the council. He was a man of a more morose and cynical temper, just in his administration, but vicious under the appearances of virtue; learned beyond any man of his quality; but intractable, stiff and obstinate, proud and jealous. Manchester's character. Roberts's character.

These five, whom I have named last, had the chief hand in engaging the nation in the design of the restoration. They had great credit, chiefly with the presbyterian party, and were men of much dexterity: so the thanks of that great turn was owing to them; and they were put in great posts by the Earl of Clarendon's means; by which he lost most of the cavaliers, who could not bear the seeing such men so highly advanced, and so much trusted.

At the King's first coming over, Monk and Montague were the most considered: they both had the garter. The one was made Duke of Albemarle, and the other Earl of Sandwich, and had noble estates given them. Monk was ravenous, as well as his wife, who was a mean, contempt-

1660. ible creature. They both asked and sold all that was within their reach, nothing being denied them for some time; till he became so useless, that little personal regard could be paid him. But the King maintained still the appearances of it; for the appearance of the service he did him was such, that the King thought it fit to treat him with great distinction, even after he saw into him, and despised him. He took care to raise his kinsman Grenville, who was made Earl of Bath and groom of the stole; a man who thought of nothing but of getting and spending money. The Duke of Albemarle raised two other persons: one was

Clarges's character. Clarges, his wife's brother, who was an honest but haughty man. He became afterwards a very considerable parliament man, and valued himself on his opposing the court, and on his frugality in managing the public money; for he had Cromwell's economy ever in his mouth, and was always for reducing the expense of war to the modesty and parsimony of those times. Many thought he carried this too far; but it made him very popular. After he was become very rich himself by the public money, he seemed to take care that nobody else should grow as rich as he was in that way. Another man raised by the Duke of Albe-

Morrice's character. marle was Morrice, who was the person that had prevailed with Monk to declare for the King: upon that he was made secretary of state. He was very learned, but full of pedantry and affectation: he had no true judgment about foreign affairs: and the Duke of Albemarle's judgment of them may be measured by what he said, when he found the King grew weary of Morrice, but that in regard to him he had no mind to turn him out; he did not know what was necessary for a good secretary of state in which he was defective, for he could speak French and write short-hand.

Nicolas's character. Nicolas was the other secretary, who had been employed by King Charles the First during the war, and had served him faithfully, but had no understanding in foreign affairs. He was a man of virtue, but could not fall into the King's temper, or become acceptable to him. So, not long after

Arlington's character. the restoration, Bennet, advanced afterwards to be Earl of Arlington, was by the interest of the popish party made secretary of state; and was admitted into so particular a confidence, that he began to raise a party in opposition to the Earl of Clarendon. He was a proud man: his parts were

solid, but not quick. He had the art of observing the King's temper, and managing it beyond all the men of that time. He was believed a papist: he had once professed it; and, when he died, he again reconciled himself to that church. Yet, in the whole course of his ministry, he seemed to have made it a maxim, that the King ought to shew no favour to popery, but that all his affairs would be spoiled if ever he turned that way; which made the papists become his mortal enemies, and accuse him as an apostate and the betrayer of their interests. His chief friend was Charles Berkley, made Earl of Falmouth, who, without any visible merit, unless it was the managing the King's amours, was the most absolute of all the King's favourites; and, which was peculiar to himself, he was as much in the Duke of York's favour as in the King's. Berkley was generous in his expense; and it was thought, if he had outlived the lewdness of that time, and come to a more sedate course of life, he would have put the King on great and noble designs. This I should have thought more likely, if I had not had it from the Duke, who had so wrong a taste, that there was reason to suspect his judgment, both of men and things. Bennet and Berkley had the management of the mistress; and all the Earl of Clarendon's enemies came about them, the chief of whom were the Duke of Buckingham and the Earl of Bristol. 1660.

Buckingham's character.

The first of these was a man of noble presence. He had a great liveliness of wit, and a peculiar faculty of turning all things into ridicule with bold figures and natural descriptions. He had no sort of literature, only he was drawn into chemistry; and for some years he thought he was very near the finding the philosopher's stone, which had the effect that attends on all such men as he was, when they are drawn in, to lay out for it. He had no principles of religion, virtue, or friendship: pleasure, frolic, or extravagant diversion, was all that he laid to heart. He was true to nothing, for he was not true to himself. He had no steadiness nor conduct: he could keep no secret, nor execute any design without spoiling it. He could never fix his thoughts, nor govern his estate, though then the greatest in England. He was bred about the King; and for many years he had a great ascendant over him: but he spake of him to all persons with that contempt, that at last

1660. he drew a lasting disgrace upon himself: and he at length ruined both body and mind, fortune and reputation equally. The madness of vice appeared in his person in very eminent instances; since at last he became contemptible and poor, sickly, and sunk in his parts, as well as in all other respects; so that his conversation was as much avoided as ever it had been courted. He found the King, when he came from his travels in the year 1645, newly come to Paris, sent over by his father when his affairs declined; and, finding the King enough inclined to receive ill impressions, he, who was then got into all the impieties and vices of the age, set himself to corrupt the King, in which he was too successful, being seconded in that wicked design by the Lord Percy. And, to complete the matter, Hobbs was brought to him, under the pretence of instructing him in mathematics; and he laid before him his schemes, both with relation to religion and politics, which made deep and lasting impressions on the King's mind: so that the main blame of the King's ill principles and bad morals was owing to the Duke of Buckingham.

Bristol's character.

The Earl of Bristol was a man of courage and learning, of a bold temper and a lively wit, but of no judgment nor steadiness. He was in the Queen's interest during the war at Oxford; and he studied to drive things past the possibility of a treaty, or any reconciliation; fancying that nothing would make the military men so sure to the King, as his being sure to them, and giving them hopes of sharing the confiscated estates among them; whereas, he thought, all discourses of treaty made them feeble and fearful. When he went beyond sea, he turned papist; but it was after a way of his own; for he loved to magnify the difference between the church and the court of Rome. He was esteemed a very good speaker; but he was too copious, and too florid. He was set at the head of the popish party, and was a violent enemy of the Earl of Clarendon.

Lauderdale's character.

Having now said as much as seems necessary to describe the state of the court and ministry at the restoration, I will next give an account of the chief of the Scots, and of the parties that were formed among them. The Earl of Lauderdale, afterwards made Duke, had been for many years a zealous covenanter: but in the year 1647 he turned to the King's interests, and had continued a prisoner all the while

after Worcester fight, where he was taken. He was kept for some years in the Tower of London, in Portland Castle, and in other prisons, till he was set at liberty by those who called home the King. So he went over to Holland. And, since he continued so long, and, contrary to all men's opinions, in so high a degree of favour and confidence, it may be expected that I should be a little copious in setting out his character, for I knew him very particularly. He made a very ill appearance: he was very big; his hair red, hanging oddly about him; his tongue was too big for his mouth, which made him bedew all that he talked to; and his whole manner was rough and boisterous, and very unfit for a court. He was very learned, not only in Latin, in which he was a master, but in Greek and Hebrew. He had read a great deal of divinity, and almost all the historians, ancient and modern; so that he had great materials. He had with these an extraordinary memory, and a copious but unpolished expression. He was a man, as the Duke of Buckingham called him to me, of a blustering understanding. He was haughty beyond expression, abject to those he saw he must stoop to, but imperious to all others. He had a violence of passion that carried him often to fits like madness, in which he had no temper. If he took a thing wrong, it was a vain thing to study to convince him; that would rather provoke him to swear—he would never be of another mind: he was to be let alone; and perhaps he would have forgot what he had said, and come about of his own accord. He was the coldest friend, and the violentest enemy, I ever knew: I felt too much not to know it. He at first seemed to despise wealth, but he delivered himself up afterwards to luxury and sensuality; and by that means he ran into a vast expense, and stuck at nothing that was necessary to support it. In his long imprisonment he had great impressions of religion on his mind; but he wore these out so entirely, that scarce any trace of them was left. His great experience in affairs, his ready compliance with every thing that he thought would please the King, and his bold offering at the most desperate counsels, gained him such an interest in the King, that no attempt against him, nor complaint of him, could ever shake it, till a decay of strength and understanding forced him to let go his hold. He was in his principles much against popery and arbitrary govern- 1660.

1660. ment; and yet, by a fatal train of passions and interests, he made way for the former, and had almost established the latter; and whereas some, by a smooth deportment, made the first beginnings of tyranny less discernible and unacceptable, he, by the fury of his behaviour, heightened the severity of his ministry, which was liker the cruelty of an inquisition than the legality of justice. With all this he was a presbyterian, and retained his aversion to King Charles I. and his party to his death.

Crawford's character. The Earl of Crawford had been his fellow prisoner for ten years; and that was a good title for maintaining him in the post he had before of being lord treasurer. He was a sincere but weak man, passionate and indiscreet; and continued still a zealous presbyterian. The Earl, afterwards Duke of Rothes, had married his daughter, and had the merit of a long imprisonment likewise to recommend him: he had a ready dexterity in the management of affairs, with a soft and insinuating address: he had a quick apprehension, with a clear judgment: he had no advantage of education, no sort of literature; nor had he travelled abroad: all in him was mere nature.

Rothes' character.

Tweedale's character. The Earl of Tweedale was another of Lord Lauderdale's friends: he was early engaged in business, and continued in it to a great age. He understood all the interests and concerns of Scotland well: he had a great stock of knowledge, with a mild and obliging temper: he was of a blameless, or rather an exemplary life in all respects. He had loose thoughts both of civil and ecclesiastical government; and seemed to think, that what form soever was uppermost was to be complied with. He had been in Cromwell's parliament, and had abjured the royal family, which lay heavy on him. But the disputes about the guardianship of the Dutchess of Monmouthand her eldest sister, to which he pretended in the right of his wife, who was their father's sister, against her mother, who was Lord Rothes' sister, drew him into that compliance which brought a great cloud upon him; though he was, in all other respects, the ablest and worthiest man of the nobility; only he was too cautious and fearful.

D. Hamilton's character. A son of the Marquis of Douglas, made Earl of Selkirk, had married the heiress of the family of Hamilton, who, by her father's patent, was Dutchess of Hamilton; and when

the heiress of a title in Scotland marries one not equal to her in rank, it is ordinary, at her desire, to give her husband the title for life: so he was made Duke of Hamilton. He then passed for a soft man, who minded nothing but the recovery of that family from the great debts under which it was sinking, till it was raised up again by his great management. After he had compassed that, he became a more considerable man. He wanted all sort of polishing: he was rough and sullen, but candid and sincere. His temper was boisterous; neither fit to submit nor to govern. He was mutinous when out of power, and imperious in it. He wrote well, but spoke ill; for his judgment, when calm, was better than his imagination. He made himself a great master in the knowledge of the laws, of the history, and of the families of Scotland; and seemed always to have a regard to justice, and the good of his country; but a narrow and selfish temper brought such an habitual meanness on him, that he was not capable of designing or undertaking great things. 1660.

Kincairdin's character.

Another man of that side, that made a good figure at that time, was Bruce, afterwards Earl of Kincairdin, who had married a daughter of Mr. Somelsdych in Holland; and by that means he had got acquaintance with our princes beyond sea, and had supplied them liberally in their necessities. He was both the wisest and the worthiest man that belonged to his country, and fit for governing any affairs but his own; which he, by a wrong turn, and by his love for the public, neglected to his ruin; for they, consisting much in works, coals, salt, and mines, required much care; and he was very capable of it, having gone far in mathematics, and being a great master of mechanics. His thoughts went slow, and his words came much slower; but a deep judgment appeared in every thing he said or did. He had a noble zeal for justice, in which even friendship could never bias him. He had solid principles of religion and virtue, which shewed themselves with great lustre on all occasions. He was a faithful friend, and a merciful enemy. I may be, perhaps, inclined to carry his character too far; for he was the first man that entered into friendship with me. We continued for seventeen years in so entire a friendship, that there was never either reserve or mistake between us all the while till his death; and it

1660. was from him that I understood the whole secret of affairs; for he was trusted with every thing. He had a wonderful love to the King, and would never believe me, when I warned him what he might look for, if he did not go along with an abject compliance in every thing: he found it true in conclusion: and the love he bore the King made his disgrace sink deeper in him than became such a philosopher, or so good a Christian, as he was.

The general character of the old cavaliers.

I now turn to another set of men, of whom the Earls of Midletoun and Glencairn were the chief. They were followed by the herd of the cavalier party, who were now very fierce and full of courage over their cups, though they had been very discreet managers of it in the field, and in time of action; but now every one of them boasted that he had killed his thousands; and all were full of merit, and as full of high pretensions; far beyond what all the wealth and revenues of Scotland could answer. The subtilest of all Lord Midletoun's friends was Sir Archibald Primrose, a man of long and great practice in affairs; for he and his father had served the crown successively an hundred years all but one, when he was turned out of employment. He was a dexterous man in business; he had always expedients ready at every difficulty; he had an art of speaking to all men according to their sense of things; and so drew out their secrets while he concealed his own; for words went for nothing with him. He said every thing that was necessary to persuade those he spoke to that he was of their mind; and did it in so genuine a way, that he seemed to speak his heart. He was always for soft counsels and slow methods; and thought that the chief thing that a great man ought to do, was to raise his family and his kindred, who naturally stick to him; for he had seen so much of the world, that he did not depend much on friends; and so took no care in making any. He always advised the Earl of Midletoun to go slowly in the King's business; but to do his own effectually before the King should see he had no farther occasion for him. That Earl had another friend, who had more credit with him, though Primrose was more necessary for managing a parliament: he was Sir John Fletcher, made the King's advocate or attorney-general; for Nicholson was dead. Fletcher was a man of a generous temper, who despised wealth, except as it was necessary to sup-

Primrose's character.

Fletcher's character.

port a vast expense. He was a bold and fierce man, who hated all mild proceedings, and could scarce speak with decency or patience to those of the other side; so that he was looked on by all that had been faulty in the late times as an inquisitor-general. On the other hand Primrose took money liberally, and was the intercessor for all who made such effectual applications to him. 1660.

Advices offered in Scotch affairs.

The first thing that was to be thought on, with relation to Scotch affairs, was the manner in which offenders in the late times were to be treated; for all were at mercy. In the letter the King writ from Breda to the parliament of England, he had promised a full indemnity for all that was past, excepting only those who had been concerned in his father's death; to which the Earl of Clarendon persuaded the King to adhere in a most sacred manner; since the breaking of faith in such a point was that which must for ever destroy confidence; and the observing all such promises seemed to be a fundamental maxim in government, which was to be maintained in such a manner, that not so much as a stretch was to be made in it: but there was no promise made for Scotland; so all the cavaliers, as they were full of revenge, hoped to have the estates of those who had been concerned in the late wars divided among them.

For a general indemnity.

The Earl of Lauderdale told the King, on the other hand, that the Scotch nation had turned eminently, though unfortunately, to serve his father in the year 1648; that they had brought himself among them, and had lost two armies in his service, and had been under nine years' oppression on that account; that they had encouraged and assisted Monk in all he did; they might be, therefore, highly disgusted if they should not have the same measure of grace and pardon that he was to give England. Besides, the King, while he was in Scotland, had in the parliament of Stirling passed a very full act of indemnity, though in the terms and with the title of an act of approbation. It is true the records of that parliament were not extant, but had been lost in the confusion that followed upon the reduction of that kingdom; yet the thing was so fresh in every man's memory, that it might have a very ill effect, if the King should proceed without a regard to it. There was indeed another very severe act made in that parliament against all that should treat or submit to Cromwell,

1660. or comply in any sort with him; but, he said, a difference ought to be made between those who during the struggle had deserted the service and gone over to the enemy, of which number it might be fit to make some examples, and the rest of the kingdom, who, upon the general reduction, had been forced to capitulate. It would be hard to punish any for submitting to a superior force, when they were in no condition to resist it. This seemed reasonable; and the Earl of Clarendon acquiesced in it; but the Earl of Midletoun and his party complained of it, and desired that the Marquis of Argyle, whom they charged with an accession to the King's murder, and some few of those who had joined in the remonstrance while the King was in Scotland, might be proceeded against. The Marquis of Argyle's craft made them afraid of him; and his estate made them desire to divide it among them. His son, the Lord Lorn, was come up to court, and was well received by the King; for he had adhered so firmly to the King's interest, that he would never enter into any engagements with the usurpers; and upon every new occasion of jealousy he had been clapped up. In one of his imprisonments he had a terrible accident from a cannon bullet, which the soldiers were throwing to exercise their strength, and by a recoil struck him in the head, and made such a fracture in his skull, that the operation of the trepan, and the cure, was counted one of the greatest performances of surgery at that time. The difference between his father and him went on to a total breach; so that his father was set upon the disinheriting him of all that was still left in his power. Upon the restoration the Marquis of Argyle went up to the highlands for some time, till he advised with his friends what to do, who were divided in opinion. He writ by his son to the King, asking leave to come and wait on him: the King gave an answer that seemed to encourage it, but did not bind him to any thing. I have forgot the words: there was an equivocating in them that did not become a prince; but his son told me, he wrote them very particularly to his father, without any advice of his own. Upon that the Marquis of Argyle came up so secretly, that he was within Whitehall before his enemies knew any thing of his journey. He sent his son to the King to beg admittance; but instead of that he was sent to the Tower; and orders were

Argyle sent to Tower.

sent down for clapping up three of the chief remonstrators. Of these Waristoun was one, but he had notice sent him before the messenger came; so he made his escape, and went beyond sea—first to Hamburgh. He had been long courted by Cromwell, and had stood at a distance from him for seven years; but in the last year of his government he had gone into his counsels, and was summoned as one of his peers to the other house, as it was called. He was after that put into the council of state after Richard was put out; and then he sat in another court put up by Lambert and the army, called the Committee of Safety. So there was a great deal against him. Swinton, one of Cromwell's lords, was also sent a prisoner to Scotland. And thus it was resolved to make a few examples in the parliament that was to be called, as soon as the King could be got to prepare matters for it. It was resolved on, to restore the King's authority to the same state it was in before the wars, and to raise such a force as might be necessary to secure the quiet of that kingdom for the future. 1660.

The citadels in Scotland demolished.

It was a harder point what to do with the citadels that were built by Cromwell, and with the English garrisons that were kept in them. Many said, it was necessary to keep that kingdom in that subdued state, at least till all things were settled, and that there was no more danger from thence. The Earl of Clarendon was of this mind: but the Earl of Lauderdale laid before the King, that the conquest that Cromwell had made of Scotland was for their adhering to him: he might then judge what they would think who had suffered so much and so long on his account, if the same thraldom should be now kept up by his means: it would create an universal disgust. He told the King, that the time might come, in which he would wish rather to have Scotch garrisons in England: it would become a national quarrel, and lose the affections of the country to such a degree, that perhaps they would join with the garrisons, if any disjointing happened in England against him: whereas, without any such badge of slavery, Scotland might be so managed, that they might be made entirely his. The Earl of Midletoun and his party durst not appear for so unpopular a thing. So that it was agreed on, that the citadels should be evacuated and slighted, as soon as the money could be raised in England for paying and disbanding the army. Of all this,

1660.

the Earl of Lauderdale was believed the chief adviser: so he became very popular in Scotland.

Disputes concerning episcopacy.

The next thing that fell under consideration was the church, and whether bishops were to be restored or not. The Earl of Lauderdale at his first coming to the King stuck firm to presbytery. He told me the King spoke to him to let that go, for it was not a religion for gentlemen. He being really a presbyterian, but at the same time resolving to get into the King's confidence, studied to convince the King by a very subtile method to keep up presbytery still in Scotland. He told him that both King James and his father had ruined their affairs by engaging in the design of setting up episcopacy in that kingdom; and by that means Scotland became discontented, and was of no use to them: whereas the King ought to govern them according to the grain of their own inclinations, and to make them sure to him: he ought, instead of endeavouring an uniformity in both kingdoms, to keep up the opposition between them, and rather to increase than to allay that hatred that was between them: and then the Scots would be ready, and might be easily brought to serve him upon any occasion of dispute he might afterwards have with the parliament of England: all things were then smooth, but that was the honey-moon, and it could not last long. Nothing would keep England more in awe, than if they saw Scotland firm in their duty and affection to him; whereas nothing gave them so much heart, as when they knew Scotland was disjointed: it was a vain attempt to think of doing any thing in England by means of the Irish, who were a despicable people, and had a sea to pass; but Scotland could be brought to engage for the King in a more silent manner, and could serve him more effectually: he therefore laid it down for a maxim, from which the King ought never to depart, that Scotland was to be kept quiet and in good humour, that the opposition of the two kingdoms was to be kept up and heightened: and then the King might reckon on every man capable of bearing arms in Scotland as a listed soldier, who would willingly change a bad country for a better. This was the plan he laid before the King. I cannot tell whether this was to cover his zeal for presbytery, or on design to encourage the King to set up arbitrary government in England.

To fortify these advices he wrote a long letter in white ink, to a daughter of the Earl of Cassilis, Lady Margaret Kennedy, who was in great credit with the party, and was looked on as a very wise and good woman, and was out of measure zealous for them. I married her afterwards, and after her death found this letter among her papers; in which he expressed great zeal for the cause: he saw the King was indifferent in the matter, but he was easy to those who pressed for a change, which he said nothing could so effectually hinder, as the sending up many men of good sense, but without any noise, who might inform the King of the aversion the nation had to that government, and assure him that, if in that point he would be easy to them, he might depend upon them as to every thing else; and particularly if he stood in need of their services in his other dominions: but he charged her to trust very few of the ministers with this, and to take care that Sharp might know nothing of it, for he was then jealous of him. This had all the effect that the Earl of Lauderdale intended by it. The King was no more jealous of his favouring presbytery, but looked on him as a fit instrument to manage Scotland, and to serve him in the most desperate designs; and on this all his credit with the King was founded. In the mean time Sharp, seeing the King cold in the matter of episcopacy, thought it was necessary to lay the presbyterians asleep, to make them apprehend no danger to their government, and to engage the public resolutioners to proceed against all the protestors; that so those who were like to be most inflexible in the point of episcopacy might be censured by their own party, and by that means the others might become so odious to the more violent presbyterians, that thereby they might be the more easily disposed to submit to episcopacy, or at least, might have less credit to act against it. So he, being pressed by those who employed him to procure somewhat from the King that might look like a confirmation of their government, and put to silence all discourses of an intended change, obtained by the Earl of Lauderdale's means, that a letter should be writ by the King to the presbytery of Edinburgh, to be communicated by them to all the other presbyteries in Scotland, in which he confirmed the general assemblies that sate at St. Andrews and Dundee while he was in Scotland, and that had con- 1660.

1660. firmed the public resolutions; in which he ordered them to proceed to censure all those who had then protested against them, and would not now submit to them. The King did also confirm the presbyterian government, as it was by law established. This was signed, and sent down without communicating it to the Earl of Midletoun or his party: but as soon as he heard of it, he thought Sharp had betrayed the design, and sent for him, and charged him with it. Sharp said, in his own excuse, that somewhat must be done for quieting the presbyterians, who were beginning to take the alarm: that might have produced such applications as would perhaps make some impression on the King; whereas now all was secured, and yet the King was engaged to nothing; for his confirming their government as it was established by law, could bind him no longer than while that legal establishment was in force: so the reversing of that would release the King. This allayed the Earl of Midletoun's displeasure a little: yet Primrose told me, he spoke often of it with great indignation, since it seemed below the dignity of a King thus to equivocate with his people, and to deceive them. It seemed that Sharp thought it not enough to cheat the party himself, but would have the King share with him in the fraud. This was no honourable step to be made by a King, and to be contrived by a clergyman. The letter was received with transports of joy: the presbyterians reckoned they were safe, and began to proceed severely against the protestors; to which they were set on by some aspiring men, who hoped to merit by the heat expressed on this occasion. And if Sharp's impatience to get into the archbishopric of St. Andrews had not wrought too strong on him, it would have given a great advantage to the restitution of episcopacy, if a general assembly had been called, and the two parties had been let loose on one another: that would have shewn the impossibility of maintaining the government of the church in a party, and the necessity of setting a superior order over them for keeping them in unity and peace.

A ministry settled in Scotland.

The King settled the ministry in Scotland. The Earl of Midletoun was declared the King's commissioner for holding the parliament, and general of the forces that were to be raised; the Earl of Glencairn was made chancellor; the Earl of Lauderdale was secretary of state; the Earl of Rothes pre-

sident of the council; the Earl of Crawford was continued in the Treasury; Primrose was clerk register, which is very like the place of master of the rolls in England. The rest depended on these. But the Earls of Midletoun and Lauderdale were the two heads of the parties. The Earl of Midletoun had a private instruction, which, as Lauderdale told me, was not communicated to him, to try the inclinations of the nation for episcopacy, and to consider of the best method of setting it up. This was drawn from the King by the Earl of Clarendon; for he himself was observed to be very cold in it while these things were doing. Primrose got an order from the King to put up all the public registers of Scotland which Cromwell had brought up and lodged in the Tower of London, as a pawn upon that kingdom, in imitation of what King Edward the First was said to have done when he subdued that nation. They were now put up in fifty hogsheads; and a ship was ready to carry them down. But it was suggested to Lord Clarendon that the original covenant, signed by the King, and some other declarations under his hand were among them: and he, apprehending that at some time or other an ill use might have been made of these, would not suffer them to be shipped till they were visited; nor would he take Primrose's promise of searching for these carefully and sending them up to him: so he ordered a search to be made. None of the papers he looked for were found. But so much time was lost, that the summer was spent: so they were sent down in winter; and by some easterly gusts the ship was cast away near Berwick: so we lost all our records. And we have nothing now but some fragments in private hands to rely on, having made at that time so great a shipwreck of all our authentic writings. This heightened the displeasure the nation had at the designs then on foot. 1660.

A council proposed to sit at court for Scotch affairs.

The main thing, upon which all other matters depended, was the method in which the affairs of Scotland were to be conducted. The Earl of Clarendon moved that there might be a council settled to sit regularly at Whitehall on Scotch affairs, to which every one of the Scotch privy council that happened to be on the place should be admitted; but, with this addition, that, as two Scotch lords were called to the English council, so six of the English were to be of the Scotch council. The effect of this would have been,

1660. that whereas the Scotch counsellors had no great force in English affairs, the English, as they were men of great credit with the King, and were always on the place, would have the government of the affairs of Scotland wholly in their hands. This probably would have saved that nation from much injustice and violence, when there was a certain method of laying their grievances before the King: complaints would have been heard, and matters well examined: Englishmen would not, and durst not have given way to crying oppression and illegal proceedings: for though these matters did not fall under the cognizance of an English parliament, yet it would have very much blasted a man's credit, who should have concurred in such methods of government as were put in practice afterwards in that kingdom; therefore all people quickly saw how wise a project this was, and how happy it would have proved if affairs had still gone in that channel: but the Earl of Lauderdale opposed this with all his strength. He told the King it would quite destroy the scheme he had laid before him, which must be managed secretly, and by men that were not in fear of the parliament of England, nor obnoxious to it. He said to all Scotchmen, this would make Scotland a province to England, and subject it to English counsellors, who knew neither the laws nor the interests of Scotland, and yet would determine every thing relating to it: and all the wealth of Scotland would be employed to bribe them, who, having no concern of their own in the affairs of that kingdom, must be supposed capable of being swayed by private considerations. To the presbyterians he said, this would infallibly bring in, not only episcopacy, but every thing else from the English pattern. Men who had neither kindred nor estates in Scotland would be biassed chiefly by that which was most in vogue in England, without any regard to the inclinations of the Scots. These things made great impressions on the Scotch nation. The King himself did not much like it: but the Earl of Clarendon told him, Scotland, by a secret and ill management, had begun the embroilment in his father's affairs, which could never have happened, if the affairs of that kingdom had been under a more equal inspection: if Scotland should again fall into new disorders, he must have the help of England to quiet them; and that could not be ex-

pected if the English had no share in the conduct of matters there. The King yielded to it: and this method was followed for two or three years; but was afterwards broke by the Earl of Lauderdale, when he got into the chief management. He began early to observe some uneasiness in the King at the Earl of Clarendon's positive way: he saw the mistress hated him, and he believed she would in time be too hard for him, therefore he made great applications to her. But his conversation was too coarse, and he had not money enough to support himself by presents to her; so he could not be admitted into that cabal which was held in her lodgings. He saw that, in a council, where men of weight, who had much at stake in England, bore the chief sway, he durst not have proposed those things, by which he intended to establish his own interest with the King, and to govern that kingdom which way his pride or passion might guide him. Among others, he took great pains to persuade me of the great service he had done his country by breaking that method of governing it; though we had many occasions afterwards to see how fatal that proved, and how wicked his design in it was. 1660.

The committee of estates meet in Scotland.

I have thus opened with some copiousness the beginnings of this reign; since, as they are little known, and I had them from the chief of both sides, so they may guide the reader to observe the progress of things better in the sequel than he could otherwise do. In August the Earl of Glencairn was sent down to Scotland, and had orders to call together the committee of estates. This was a practice begun in the late times: when the parliament made a recess, they appointed some of every state to sit, and to act as a council of state in their name till the next session; for which they were to prepare matters, and to which they gave an account of their proceedings. When the parliament of Stirling was adjourned, the King being present, a committee had been named: so, such of these as were yet alive were summoned to meet, and to see to the quiet of the nation, till the parliament should be brought together, which did not meet before January. On the day in which the committee met, ten or twelve of the protesting ministers met likewise at Edinburgh; and had before them a warm paper prepared by one Guthery, one of the violentest ministers of the whole party. In it, after some cold compliment to the

1660. King upon his restoration, they put him in mind of the covenant which he had so solemnly sworn while among them: they lamented that, instead of pursuing the ends of it in England, as he had sworn to do, he had set up the common prayer in his chapel, and the order of bishops; upon which they made terrible denunciations of heavy judgments from God on him, if he did not stand to the covenant, which they called the oath of God. The Earl of Glencairn had notice of this meeting; and he sent and seized on them, together with this remonstrance. The paper was voted scandalous and seditious; and the ministers were all clapped up in prison, and were threatened with great severities. Guthery was kept still in prison, who had brought the others together; but the rest, after a while's imprisonment, were let go. Guthery, being minister of Stirling while the King was there, had let fly at him in his sermons in a most indecent manner; which at last became so intolerable, that he was cited to appear before the King to answer for some passages in his sermons: he would not appear, but declined the King and his council, who, he said, were not proper judges of matters of doctrine, for which he was only accountable to the judicatories of the kirk. He also protested for remedy of law against the King, for thus disturbing him in the exercise of his ministry. This personal affront had irritated the King more against him, than against any other of the party: and it was resolved to strike a terror into them all, by making an example of him. He was a man of courage, and went through all his trouble with great firmness. But this way of proceeding struck the whole party with such a consternation, that it had all the effect which was designed by it: for whereas the pulpits had, to the great scandal of religion, been places where the preachers had for many years vented their spleen and arraigned all proceedings, they became now more decent, and there was a general silence every where with relation to the affairs of state: only they could not hold from many sly and secret insinuations, as if the ark of God was shaking, and the glory departing. A great many offenders were summoned, at the King's suit, before the committee of estates, and required to give bail, that they should appear at the opening of the parliament, and answer to what should be then objected to them. Many saw the design of

this was to fright them into a composition, and also into a concurrence with the measures that were to be taken. For the greater part they complied, and redeemed themselves from farther vexation by such presents as they were able to make: and in these transactions Primrose and Fletcher were the great dealers. 1660.

A parliament in Scotland.

In the end of the year the Earl of Midletoun came down with great magnificence: his way of living was the most splendid the nation had ever seen; but it was likewise the most scandalous, for vices of all sorts were the open practices of those about him. Drinking was the most notorious of all, which was often continued through the whole night to the next morning: and many disorders happening after those irregular heats, the people, who had never before that time seen any thing like it, came to look with an ill eye on every thing that was done by such a set of lewd and vicious men. This laid in all men's minds a new prejudice against episcopacy; for they, who could not examine into the nature of things, were apt to take an ill opinion of every change in religion that was brought about by such bad instruments. There had been a face of gravity and piety in the former administration, which made the libertinage of the present time more odious.

1661.

The Earl of Midletoun opened the parliament, on the 1st of January, with a speech setting forth the blessing of the restoration: he magnified the King's person, and enlarged on the affection that he bore to that his ancient kingdom: he hoped they would make suitable returns of zeal for the King's service—that they would condemn all the invasions that had been made on the regal auhority, and assert the just prerogative of the crown, and give supplies for keeping up such a force as was necessary to secure the public peace, and to preserve them from the return of such calamities as they had so long felt. The parliament writ an answer to the King's letter full of duty and thanks. The first thing proposed was to name lords of the articles. In order to the apprehending the importance of this, I will give some account of the constitution of that kingdom.

The lords of the articles.

The parliament was anciently the king's court, where all who held land of him were bound to appear. All sate in one house, but were considered as three estates. The first was the church, represented by the bishops, and mitred

1661. abbots and priors; the second was the baronage, the nobility and gentry who held their baronies of the King; and the third was the boroughs, who held of the King by barony, though in a community: so that the parliament was truly the baronage of the kingdom. The lesser barons grew weary of this attendance; so in King James the First's time (during the reign of Henry IV. of England) they were excused from it, and were empowered to send proxies to an indefinite number, to represent them in parliament. Yet they neglected to do this: and it continued so till King James the Sixth's time, in which the mitred abbots, being taken away, and few of the titular bishops that were then continued appearing at them, the church lands being generally in lay hands, the nobility carried matters in parliament as they pleased; and, as they oppressed the boroughs, so they had the King much under them. Upon this the lower barons got themselves to be restored to the right which they had neglected near two hundred years. They were allowed by act of parliament to send two from a county; only some smaller counties sent but one: this brought that constitution to a truer balance. The lower barons have a right to choose at their county courts, after Michaelmas, their commissioners, to serve in any parliament that may be called within that year; and they who choose them sign a commission to him who represents them: so the sheriff has no share of the return. And in the case of controverted elections, the parliament examines the commissions, to see who has the greatest number, and judges whether every one that signs it had a right to do so. The boroughs only choose their members when the summons goes out; and all are chosen by the men of the corporation, or, as they call them, the town council. All these estates sit in one house, and vote together. Anciently the parliament sate only two days, the first and the last. On the first they chose those who were to sit on the articles, eight for every state, to whom the King joined eight officers of state. These received all the heads of grievances or articles that were brought to them, and formed them into bills as they pleased: and on the last day of the parliament these were all read, and were approved or rejected by the whole body. So they were a committee that had a very extraordinary authority, since nothing could be brought before the parliament but

as they pleased. This was pretended to be done only for the shortening and dispatching of sessions. The crown was not contented with this limitation, but got it to be carried farther. The nobility came to choose eight bishops, and the bishops to choose eight noblemen: and these sixteen choose the eight barons (so the representative for the shires are called,) and the eight burgesses. By this means our kings did upon the matter choose all the lords of the articles: so entirely had they got the liberties of that parliament into their hands. 1661.

During the late troubles they had still kept up a distinction of three estates, the lesser barons making one: and then every estate might meet apart, and name their own committee; but still all things were brought in and debated in full parliament. So now the first thing proposed was, the returning to the old custom of naming lords of the articles. The Earl of Tweedale opposed it, but was seconded only by one person: so it passed with that small opposition. Only, to make it go easier, it was promised that there should be frequent sessions of parliament, and that the acts should not be brought in in a hurry, and carried with the haste that had been practised in former times.

The parliament granted the King an additional revenue for life of 40,000*l.* a year, to be raised by an excise on beer and ale, for maintaining a small force: upon which two troops and a regiment of foot-guards were to be raised. They ordered the Marquis of Montrose's quarters to be brought together; and they were buried with great state. They fell next upon the acts of the former times that had limited the prerogative: they repealed them, and asserted it with a full extent in a most extraordinary manner. Primrose had the drawing of these acts. He often confessed to me, that he thought he was as one bewitched while he drew them; for, not considering the ill use might be made of them afterwards, he drew them with preambles full of extravagant rhetoric, reflecting severely on the proceedings of the late times, and swelled them up with the highest phrases and fullest clauses that he could invent. In the act which asserted the King's power of the militia, the power of arming and levying the subjects was carried so far, that it would have ruined the kingdom, if Gilmore, (an eminent lawyer, and a man of great integrity, who had now

The acts passed in this session.

1661. the more credit, for he had always favoured the King's side,) had not observed that, as the act was worded, the King might require all the subjects to serve at their own charge, and might oblige them, in order to the redeeming themselves from serving, to pay whatever might be set on them: so he made such an opposition to this, that it could not pass till a proviso was added to it, that the kingdom should not be obliged to maintain any force levied by the King, otherwise than as it should be agreed to in parliament, or in a convention of estates. This was the only thing that was then looked to; for all the other acts passed in the articles as Primrose had penned them. They were brought into parliament; and upon one hasty reading them they were put to the vote, and were always carried.

One act troubled the presbyterians extremely. In the act asserting the King's power in treaties of peace and war, all leagues with any other nation, not made by the King's authority, were declared treasonable; and in consequence of this the league and covenant made with England in the year 1643 was condemned, and declared of no force for the future. This was the idol of all the presbyterians; so they were much alarmed at it. But Sharp restrained all those with whom he had credit: he told them, the only way to preserve their government was to let all that related to the King's authority be separated from it, and be condemned, that so they might be no more accused as enemies to monarchy, or as leavened with the principles of rebellion. He told them they must be contented to let that pass, that the jealousy which the King had of them, as enemies to his prerogative, might be extinguished in the most effectual manner. This restrained many; but some hotter zealots could not be governed. One Macquair, a hot man and considerably learned, did, in his church at Glasgow, openly protest against this act, as contrary to the oath of God, and so void of itself. To protest against an act of parliament was treason by their law: and Middletoun was resolved to make an example of him for terrifying others: but Macquair was as stiff as he was severe, and would come to no submission: yet he was only condemned to perpetual banishment. Upon which he, and some others who were afterwards banished, went and settled at Rotterdam, where they formed themselves into a pres-

bytery, and writ many seditious books, and kept a correspondence over all Scotland, that being the chief seat of the Scotch trade; and by that means they did much more mischief to the government than they could have done had they continued still in Scotland. 1661.

The lords of the articles grew weary of preparing so many acts as the practices of the former times gave occasion for; but did not know how to meddle with those acts that the late King had passed in the year 1641, or the present King had passed while he was in Scotland. They saw that, if they should proceed to repeal those by which presbyterian government was ratified, that would raise much opposition, and bring petitions from all that were for that government over the whole kingdom; which Midletoun and Sharp endeavoured to prevent, that the King might be confirmed in what they had affirmed, that the general bent of the nation was now turned against presbytery, and for bishops. So Primrose proposed, but half in jest as he assured me, that the better and shorter way would be to pass a general act rescissory, (as it was called,) annulling all the parliaments that had been held since the year 1633, during the whole time of the war, as faulty and defective in their constitution: but it was not so easy to know upon what point that defect was to be fixed. The only colourable pretence in law was, that, since the ecclesiastical state was not represented in those parliaments, they were not a full representative of the kingdom, and so not true parliaments. But this could not be alleged by this present parliament, which had no bishops in it: if that inferred a nullity, this was no parliament. Therefore they could only fix the nullity upon the pretence of force and violence: yet it was a great strain to insist on that, since it was visible, that neither the late King nor the present were under any force when they passed them: they came of their own accord and passed those acts. If it was insisted on that the ill state of their affairs was in the nature of a force, the ill consequences of this were visible; since no prince by this means could be bound to any treaty, or be concluded by any law that limited his power, these being always drawn from them by the necessity of their affairs, which can never be called a force, as long as their persons are free. So, upon some debate about it on those grounds,

An act rescinding all parliaments held since the year 1633.

1661. at a private juncta, the proposition, though well liked, was let fall, as not capable to have good colours put upon it: nor had the Earl of Midletoun any instruction to warrant his passing any such act. Yet, within a day or two, when they had drunk higher, they resolved to venture on it. Primrose was then ill: so one was sent to him to desire him to prepare a bill to that effect. He set about it; but perceived it was so ill grounded, and so wild in all the frame of it, that he thought, when it came to be better considered, it must certainly be laid aside. But it fell out otherwise: his draught was copied out next morning, without altering a word in it, and carried to the articles, and from thence to the parliament, where it met indeed with great opposition. The Earl of Crawford and the Duke of Hamilton argued much against it. The parliament in the year 1641 was legally summoned: the late King came thither in person with his ordinary attendance, and without the appearance of any force: if any acts then passed needed to be reviewed, that might be well done; but to annul a parliament was a terrible precedent, which destroyed the whole security of government: another parliament might annul the present parliament, as well as that which was now proposed to be done. So no stop could be made, nor any security laid down for fixing things for the future: the parliament in the year 1648 proceeded upon instructions under the King's own hand, which was all that could be had considering his imprisonment: they had declared for the King, and raised an army for his preservation. To this the Earl of Midletoun, who, contrary to custom, managed the debate himself, answered, that though there was no visible force on the late King in the year 1641, yet they all knew he was under a real force by reason of the rebellion that had been in this kingdom, and the apparent danger of one ready to break out in England, which forced him to settle Scotland on such terms as he could bring them to: so that distress on his affairs was really equivalent to a force on his person; yet he confessed it was just, that such an appearance of a parliament should be a full authority to all who acted under it: and care was taken to secure these by a proviso that was put in the act to indemnify them: he acknowledged the design of the parliament in the year 1648 was good; yet they declared for the

King in such terms, and had acted so hypocritically in order to the gaining of the kirk party, that it was just to condemn the proceedings, though the intentions of many were honourable and loyal: for we went into it, he said, as knaves, and therefore no wonder if we miscarried in it as fools. This was very ill taken by all who had been concerned in it. The bill was put to the vote, and carried by a great majority; and the Earl of Midletoun immediately passed it without staying for an instruction from the King. The excuse he made for it was, that since the King had by his letter to the presbyterians confirmed their government as it was established by law, there was no way left to get out of that, but the annulling all those laws. 1661.

This was the most extravagant act, and only fit to be concluded after a drunken bout. It shook all possible security for the future, and laid down a most pernicious precedent. The Earl of Lauderdale aggravated this heavily to the King. It shewed that the Earl of Midletoun understood not the first principles of government, since he had, without any warrant for it, given the King's assent to a law that must for ever take away all the security that law can give: no government was so well established, as not to be liable to a revolution: this would cut off all hopes of peace and submission, if any disorder should happen at any time hereafter. And since the Earl of Clarendon had set it up for a maxim never to be violated, that acts of indemnity were sacred things, he studied to possess him against the Earl of Midletoun, who had now annulled the very parliaments in which two kings had passed acts of indemnity. This raised a great clamour; and, upon that, the Earl of Midletoun complained in parliament that their best services were represented to the King as blemishes on his honour, and as a prejudice to his affairs: so he desired they would send up some of the most eminent of their body to give the King a true account of their proceedings. The Earls of Glencairn and Rothes were sent; for the Earl of Rothes gave secret engagements to both sides, resolving to strike into that to which he saw the King most inclined. The Earl of Midletoun's design was to accuse the Earl of Lauderdale of misrepresenting the proceedings of parliament, and of belying the King's good subjects, called in the Scotch law leasing-making, which either to the

It was not liked by the King.

1661. King of the people, or to the people of the King is capital.

The presbyterians in great disorder.

Sharp went up with these lords to press the speedy setting up of episcopacy, now that the greatest enemies of that government were under a general consternation, and were upon other accounts so obnoxious that they durst not make any opposition to it, since no act of indemnity was yet passed. He had expressed a great concern to his old brethren, when the act rescissory passed, and acted that part very solemnly for some days: yet he seemed to take heart again, and persuaded the ministers of that party, that it would be a service to them, since now the case of ratifying their government was separated from the rebellion of the late times: so that hereafter it was to subsist by a law passed in a parliament that sat and acted in full freedom. So he undertook to go again to court, and to move for an instruction to settle presbytery on a new and undisputed bottom. The poor men were so struck with the ill state of their affairs, that they either trusted him, or at least seemed to do it; for indeed they had neither sense nor courage left them. During the session of parliament the most aspiring men of the clergy were picked out to preach before the parliament. They did not speak out; but they all insinuated the necessity of a greater authority than was then in the church, for keeping them in order. One or two spoke plainer; upon which the presbytery of Edinburgh went to the Earl of Midletoun, and complained of that as an affront to the law and to the King's letter. He dismissed them with good words, but took no notice of their complaint. The synods in several places resolved to prepare addresses both to King and parliament, for an act establishing their government: and Sharp dissembled so artificially, that he met with those who were preparing an address to be presented to the synod of Fife, that was to sit within a week after, and heads were agreed on. Honyman, afterwards Bishop of Orkney, drew it up with so much vehemence, that Wood, their divinity professor, told me, he and some others sat up almost the whole night before the synod met, to draw it over again in a smoother strain. But Sharp gave the Earl of Midletoun notice of this. So the Earl of Rothes was sent over to see to their behaviour. As soon as the ministers entered upon that subject, he in

the King's name dissolved the synod, and commanded the ministers, under pain of treason, to retire to their several habitations. Such care was taken that no public application should be made in favour of presbytery. Any attempt that was made on the other hand had met with great encouragement. The synod of Aberdeen was the only body that made an address looking towards episcopacy. In a long preamble they reflected on the confusions and violence of the late times, of which they enumerated many particulars; and they concluded with a prayer, that since the legal authority upon which their courts proceeded was now annulled, that therefore the King and parliament would settle their government, conformable to the Scriptures and the rules of the primitive church. The presbyterians saw what was driven at, and how their words would be understood; but I heard one of them say (for I was present at that meeting), that no man could decently oppose those words, since by that he would insinuate that he thought presbytery was not conformable to these. 1661.

In this session of parliament another act passed, which was a new affliction to all the party: the 29th of May was appointed to be kept as a holy day; since on that day an end had been put to three-and-twenty years' course of rebellion, of which the whole progress was reckoned up in the highest strain of Primrose's eloquence. The ministers saw, that by observing this act, passed with such a preamble, they condemned all their former proceedings as rebellious and hypocritical. They saw, that by obeying it they would lose all their credit, and contradict all they had been building up in a course of so many years. Yet, such was the heat of that time, that they durst not except to it on that account: so they laid hold on the subtlety of a holy day; and covered themselves under that controversy, denying it was in the power of any human authority to make a day holy. But withal they fell upon a poor shift: they enacted in their several presbyteries that they should observe that day as a thanksgiving for the King's restoration; so they took no notice of the act of parliament, but observed it in obedience to their own act: but this, though it covered them from prosecution, since the law was obeyed, yet it laid them open to much contempt. When the Earls of Glencairn and Rothes came to court, the King was soon

1661. satisfied with the account they gave of the proceedings of parliament; and the Earl of Lauderdale would not own that he had ever misrepresented them. They were ordered to proceed in their charging of him, as the Earl of Clarendon should direct them. But he told them the assaulting of a minister, as long as he had an interest in the King, was a practice that never could be approved: it was one of the uneasy things that a House of Commons of England sometimes ventured on, which was ungrateful to the court. Such an attempt, instead of shaking the Earl of Lauderdale, would give him a faster root with the King. They must, therefore, content themselves with letting the King see how well his service went on in their hands, and how unjustly they had been misrepresented to him; and thus by degrees they would gain their point, and the Earl of Lauderdale would become useless to the King. So this design was let fall; but the Earl of Rothes assured Lauderdale he had diverted the storm; though Primrose told me, this was the true ground on which they proceeded. They became all friends as to outward appearance.

Thus I have gone through the actings of the first session of this parliament with relation to public affairs. It was a mad roaring time, full of extravagance; and no wonder it was so, when the men of affairs were almost perpetually drunk. I shall, in the next place, give an account of the attainders passed in it.

Argyle's attainder. The first and chief of these was of the Marquis of Argyle. He was indicted, at the King's suit, for a great many facts, that were reduced to three heads. The first was of his public actings during the wars, of which many instances were given; such as his being concerned in the delivering up of the King to the English at Newcastle, his opposing the engagement in the year 1648, and his heading the rising in the west in opposition to the committee of estates: in this, and many other steps made during the war, he was esteemed the principal actor, and so ought to be made the greatest example for terrifying others. The second head consisted of many murders, and other barbarities, committed by his officers during the war, on many of the King's party; chiefly on those who had served under the Marquis of Montrose, many of them being murdered in cold blood. The third head consisted of some articles of his concur-

rence with Cromwell and the usurpers, in opposition to those who appeared for the King in the highlands, his being one of his parliament, and assisting in proclaiming him Protector, with a great many other particulars, into which his compliance was branched out. He had counsel assigned him, who performed their part very well. 1661.

The substance of his defence was, that during the late wars he was but one among a great many more: he had always acted by authority of parliament, and according to the instructions that were given him, as oft as he was sent on any expedition or negotiation. As to all things done before the year 1641, the late King had buried them in an act of oblivion then passed, as the present King had also done in the year 1651: so he did not think he was bound to answer to any particular before that time. For the second head, he was at London when most of the barbarities set out in it were committed: nor did it appear that he gave any orders about them. It was well known that great outrages had been committed by the Macdonalds; and he believed his people, when they had the better of them, had taken cruel revenges: this was to be imputed to the heat of the time, and to the tempers of the people, who had been much provoked by the burning of his whole country, and by much blood that was shed. And, as to many stories laid to the charge of his men, he knew some of them were mere forgeries, and others were aggravated much beyond the truth: but what truth soever might be in them, he could not be answerable but for what was done by himself, or by his orders. As to the third head, of his compliance with the usurpation, he had stood out till the nation was quite conquered; and in that case it was the received opinion, both of divines and lawyers, that men might lawfully submit to an usurpation, when forced to it by an inevitable necessity. It was the epidemical sin of the nation. His circumstances were such, that more than a bare compliance was required of him. What he did that way was only to preserve himself and his family, and was not done on design to oppose the King's interest: nor did his service suffer by any thing he did. This was the substance of his defence, in a long speech, which he made with so good a grace and so skilfully, that his character was as much raised as his family suffered by the

1661. prosecution. In one speech, excusing his compliance with Cromwell, he said, what could he think of that matter, after a man so eminent in the law as his Majesty's advocate had taken the engagement? This inflamed the other so much, that he called him an impudent villain, and was not so much as chid for that barbarous treatment. Lord Argyle gravely said, he had learned in his affliction to bear reproaches; but if the parliament saw no cause to condemn him, he was less concerned at the King's advocate's railing. The King's advocate put in an additional article, of charging him with accession to the King's death, for which all the proof he offered lay in a presumption. Cromwell had come down to Scotland with his army in September, 1648, and at that time he had many long conferences with Argyle; and, immediately upon his return to London, the treaty with the King was broken off, and the King was brought to his trial: the advocate from thence inferred, that it was to be presumed that Cromwell and Argyle had concerted that matter between them. While this process was carried on, which was the solemnest that ever was in Scotland, the Lord Lorn continued at court soliciting for his father; and obtained a letter to be writ by the King to the Earl of Midletoun, requiring him to order his advocate not to insist on any public proceedings before the indemnity he himself had passed in the year 1651. He also required him, when the trial was ended, to send up the whole process, and lay it before the King, before the parliament should give sentence. The Earl of Midletoun submitted to the first part of this; so all further inquiry into those matters was superseded. But as to the second part of the letter, it looked so like a distrust of the justice of the parliament, that he said, he durst not let it be known, till he had a second and more positive order, which he earnestly desired might not be sent; for it would very much discourage this loyal and affectionate parliament; and he begged earnestly to have that order recalled; which was done. For some time there was a stop to the proceedings, in which Lord Argyle was contriving an escape out of the castle. He kept his bed for some days; and his lady being of the same stature with himself, and coming to him in a chair, he had put on her clothes, and was going into the chair; but he apprehended he should be dis-

covered, and his execution hastened; and so his heart failed him. The Earl of Midletoun resolved, if possible, to have the King's death fastened on him. By this means, as he would die with the more infamy, so he reckoned this would put an end to the family, since nobody durst move in favour of the son of one judged guilty of that crime; and he, as was believed, hoped to obtain a grant of his estate. Search was made into all the precedents of men who had been at any time condemned upon presumption; and the Earl of Midletoun resolved to argue the matter himself, hoping that the weight of his authority would bear down all opposition. He managed it indeed with more force than decency: he was too vehement, and maintained the argument with a strength that did more honour to his parts than to his justice or his character. But Gilmore, though newly made president of the session, which is the supreme court of justice in that kingdom, abhorred the precedent of attainting a man upon so remote a presumption; and looked upon it as less justifiable than the much-decried attainder of the Earl of Strafford; so he undertook the argument against Midletoun: they replied upon one another thirteen or fourteen times, in a debate that lasted many hours. Gilmore had so clearly the better of the argument, that, though the parliament was so set against Argyle, that every thing was like to pass that might blacken him, yet, when it was put to the vote, he was acquitted as to that by a great majority; at which he expressed so much joy, that he seemed little concerned at any thing that could happen to him after that. All that remained was to make his compliance with the usurpers appear to be treason. The debate was like to have lasted long: the Earl of Lowdun, who had been lord chancellor, and was counted the eloquentest man of that time, for he had a copiousness in speaking that was never exhausted (who was descended from his family, and was his particular friend), had prepared a long and learned argument on that head. He had gathered the opinions both of divines and lawyers, and had laid together a great deal out of history, more particularly out of the Scotch history, to shew, that it had never been censured as a crime; but that, on the contrary, in all their confusions, the men who had merited the most of the crown in all its shakings, were per- 1661.

1661. sons who had got credit by compliance with the side that prevailed, and by that means had brought things about again: but while it was very doubtful how it would have gone, Monk by an inexcusable baseness had searched among his letters, and found some that were writ by Argyle to himself, that were hearty and zealous on their side. These he sent down to Scotland: and after they were read in parliament, it could not be pretended that his compliance was feigned, or extorted from him. Every body blamed Monk for sending these down, since it was a betraying the confidence that they had then lived in. They were sent by an express, and came to the Earl of Midletoun after the parliament was engaged in the debate: so he ordered the letters to be read. This was much blamed, as contrary to the forms of justice, since probation was closed on both sides. But the reading of them silenced all farther debate. All his friends went out, and he was condemned as guilty of treason. The Marquis of Montrose only refused to vote: he owned he had too much resentment to judge in that matter. It was designed he should be hanged as the Marquis of Montrose had been; but it was carried that he should be beheaded, and that his head should be set up in the same place where Lord Montrose's had been set. He received his sentence decently, and composed himself to suffer.

And execution. The day before his death he wrote to the King, justifying his intentions in all he had acted in the matter of the covenant: he protested his innocence, as to the death of the late King; he submitted patiently to his sentence, and wished the King a long and a happy reign: he cast his family and children upon his mercy, and prayed that they might not suffer for their father's fault. On the 27th of May, the day appointed for his execution, he came to the scaffold in a very solemn but undaunted manner, accompanied with many of the nobility and some ministers. He spoke for half an hour with great appearance of serenity. Cunningham, his physician, told me he touched his pulse, and that it did then beat at the usual rate, calm and strong. He did in a most solemn manner vindicate himself from all knowledge or accession to the King's death; he pardoned all his enemies, and submitted to the sentence as to the will of God; he spoke highly in justifi-

cation of the covenant, calling it the cause and work of God, and expressed his apprehension of sad times like to follow; and exhorted all people to adhere to the covenant, and to resolve to suffer rather than sin against their consciences. He parted with all his friends very decently; and after some time spent in his private devotions he was beheaded. 1661.

A few days after Guthry suffered. He was accused of accession to the remonstrance when the King was in Scotland, and for a book he had printed with the title "Of the causes of God's wrath upon the nation;" in which the treating with the King, the tendering him the covenant, and the admitting him to the exercise of the government, were highly aggravated as great acts of apostacy. His declining the King's authority to judge of his sermons, and his protesting for remedy of law against him, and the late seditious paper that he was drawing others to concur in, were the matters objected to him. He was a resolute and stiff man; so when his lawyers offered him legal defences, he would not be advised by them, but resolved to take his own way. He confessed and justified all that he had done, as agreeing to the principles and practices of the kirk, who had asserted all along that the doctrine delivered in their sermons did not fall under the cognizance of the temporal courts till it was first judged by the church; for which he brought much tedious proof. He said, his protesting for remedy of law against the King was not meant at the King's person, but was only with relation to costs and damages. The Earl of Midletoun had a personal animosity against him, for in the late times he had excommunicated him; so his eagerness in the prosecution did not look well. The defence he made signified nothing to justify himself, but laid a great load on presbytery; since he made it out beyond all dispute, that he had acted upon their principles, which made them the more odious, as having among them some of the worst maxims of the church of Rome; that in particular, to make the pulpit a privileged place, in which a man might safely vent treason, and be secure in doing it if the church judicatory should agree to quit him: so upon this occasion great advantage was taken, to shew how near the spirit that had reigned in presbytery came up to popery. It was resolved to make a

The execution of Guthry, a minister.

1661. public example of a preacher, so he was singled out; he gave no advantage to those who wished to save him by the least step towards any submission, but much to the contrary. Yet, though all people were disgusted at the Earl of Midletoun's eagerness in the prosecution, the Earl of Tweedale was the only man that moved against the putting him to death: he said, banishment had been hitherto the severest censure that had been laid on the preachers for their opinions; he knew Guthry was a man apt to give personal provocation, and he wished that might not have too great a share in carrying the matter so far;—yet he was condemned to die. I saw him suffer; he was so far from shewing any fear, that he rather expressed a contempt of death. He spoke an hour upon the ladder, with the composedness of a man that was delivering a sermon, rather than his last words.—He justified all he had done, and exhorted all people to adhere to the covenant, which he magnified highly. With him one Gouan was also hanged, who had deserted the army while the King was in Scotland, and had gone over to Cromwell. The man was inconsiderable, till they made him more considered by putting him to death on such an account, at so great a distance of time.

Some others were proceeded against.

The gross iniquity of the court appeared in nothing more eminently than in the favour shewed Maccloud of Assin, who had betrayed the Marquis of Montrose, and was brought over upon it. He in prison struck up to a high pitch of vice and impiety, and gave great entertainments; and that, notwithstanding the baseness of the man and of his crimes, got him so many friends, that he was let go without any censure. The proceedings against Waristoun were soon dispatched, he being absent: it was proved that he had presented the remonstrance, that he had acted under Cromwell's authority, and had sate as a peer in his parliament, that he had confirmed him in his protectorship, and had likewise sate as one of the committee of safety; so he was attainted. Swintoun had been attainted in the parliament at Stirling, for going over to Cromwell; so he was brought before the parliament to hear what he could say, why the sentence should not be executed. He was then become a quaker; and did, with a sort of eloquence that moved the whole house, lay out all his own errors, and the ill spirit he was in when he committed the things that were

charged on him, with so tender a sense, that he seemed as one indifferent what they should do with him: and, without so much as moving for mercy, or even for a delay, he did so effectually prevail on them, that they recommended him to the King as a fit object of his mercy. This was the more easily consented to by the Earl of Midletoun, in hatred to the Earl of Lauderdale, who had got the gift of his estate. He had two great pleas in law: the one was, that the record of his attainder at Stirling, with all that had passed in that parliament, was lost; the other was, that by the act rescissory that parliament being annulled, all that was done by it was void: but he urged neither, since there was matter enough to attaint him anew, if the defects of that supposed attainder had been observed. So till the act of indemnity was passed he was still in danger, having been the man of all Scotland that had been the most trusted and employed by Cromwell; but upon passing the act of indemnity he was safe. 1661.

Midletoun gave an account of all that had passed in parliament to the King.

The session of parliament was now brought to a conclusion, without any motion for an act of indemnity. The secret of this was, that since episcopacy was to be set up, and that those who were most like to oppose it were on other accounts obnoxious, it was thought best to keep them under that fear till the change should be made. The Earl of Midletoun went up to court full of merit, and as full of pride. He had a mind to be lord treasurer, and told the King, that if he intended to set up episcopacy, the Earl of Crawford, who was a noted presbyterian, must be put out of that post; it was the opinion of the King's zeal for that form of government that must bear down all the opposition that might otherwise be made to it; and it would not be possible to persuade the nation of that, as long as they saw the white staff in such hands. Therefore, on the first day on which a Scotch council was called after he came up, he gave a long account of the proceedings of parliament, and magnified the zeal and loyalty that many had expressed, while others that had been not only pardoned, but were highly trusted by the King, had been often cold and backward, and sometimes plainly against the service. The Earl of Lauderdale was ill that day; so the Earl of Crawford undertook to answer this reflection, which he thought was meant of himself, for opposing the act rescissory.

1661. He said, he had observed such an entire unanimity in carrying on the King's service, that he did not know of any that had acted otherwise; and therefore he moved, that the Earl of Midletoun might speak plain, and name persons. The Earl of Midletoun desired to be excused, he did not intend to accuse any; but yet he thought he was bound to let the King know how he had been served. The Earl of Crawford still pressed him to speak out after so general an accusation; no doubt he would inform the King in private who these persons were, and since he had already gone so far in public, he thought he ought to go farther. The Earl of Midletoun was in some confusion, for he did not expect to be thus attacked; so to get off, he named the opposition that the Earl of Tweedale had made to the sentence passed on Guthry, not without making indecent reflections on it, as if his prosecution had flowed from the King's resentments of his behaviour to himself: and so he turned the matter, that the Earl of Tweedale's reflection, which was thought indeed pointed against himself, should seem as meant against the King. The Earl of Crawford upon this said, that the Earl of Midletoun ought to have excepted to the words when they were first spoken, and no doubt the parliament would have done the King justice; but it was never thought consistent with the liberty of speech in parliament, to bring men into question afterwards for words spoken in any debate, when they were not challenged as soon as they were spoken. The Earl of Midletoun excused himself; he said the thing was passed before he made due reflections on it, and so asked pardon for that omission. The Earl of Crawford was glad he himself had escaped, and was silent as to the Earl of Tweedale's concern: so nobody offering to excuse him, an order was presently sent down for committing him to prison, and for examining him upon the words he had spoken, and on his meaning in them. That was not a time in which men durst pretend to privilege, or the freedom of debate; so he did not insist on it, but sent up such an account of his words, and such an explanation of them, as fully satisfied the King; so after the imprisonment of some weeks he was set at liberty: but this raised a great outcry against the Earl of Midletoun, as a thing that was contrary to the freedom of debate, and destructive of the liberty of parliament. It

lay the more open to censure, because the Earl of Midletoun had accepted of a great entertainment from the Earl of Tweedale after Guthry's business was over; and it seemed contrary to the rules of hospitality, to have such a design in his heart against a man in whose house he had been so treated: all the excuse he made for it was, that he never intended it; but the Earl of Crawford had pressed him so hard upon the complaint he had made in general, that he had no way of getting out of it without naming some particulars, and he had no other ready then at hand. 1661.

Another difference of greater moment fell in between him and the Earl of Crawford. The Earl of Midletoun was now raising the guards, that were to be paid out of the excise granted by the parliament; so he moved, that the excise might be raised by collectors named by himself as general, that so he might not depend on the Treasury for the pay of the forces. The Earl of Crawford opposed this with great advantage, since all revenues given the King did, by the course of law, come into the Treasury: Scotland was not in a condition to maintain two treasurers; and as to what was said of the necessity of having the pay of the army well ascertained and ever ready, otherwise it would become a grievance to the kingdom, he said, the King was master, and what orders soever he thought fit to send to the Treasury, they should be most punctually obeyed. But the Earl of Midletoun knew there would be a great overplus of the excise beyond the pay of the troops; and he reckoned that, if the collection was put in his hands, he would easily get a grant of the overplus at the year's end. The Earl of Crawford said, no such thing was ever pretended to by any general, unless by such as set up to be independent, and who hoped by that means to make themselves the masters of the army: so he carried the point, which was thought a victory; and the Earl of Midletoun was much blamed for putting his interest at court on such an issue, where the pretension was so unusual and so unreasonable.

The next point was concerning Lord Argyle's estate. The King was inclined to restore the Lord Lorn; though much pains was taken to persuade him, that all the zeal he had expressed in his service was only an artifice between his father and him, to preserve the family in all adventures: it was said that had been an ordinary practice in Scotland,

1661. for father and son to put themselves in different sides. The Marquis of Argyle had taken very extraordinary methods to raise his own family to such a superiority in the highlands, that he was a sort of a king among them. The Marquis of Huntly had married his sister; and during their friendship Argyle was bound with him for some of his debts. After that, the Marquis of Huntly, as he neglected his affairs, so he engaged in the King's side, by which Argyle saw he must be undone: so he pretended that he only intended to secure himself, when he brought in prior mortgages and debts, which, as was believed, were compounded at very low rates. The friends of the Marquis of Huntly's family pressed the King hard to give his heirs the confiscation of that part of Argyle's estate, in which the Marquis of Huntly's debts, and all the pretension on his estate, were comprehended; and it was given to the Marquis of Huntly, now Duke of Gordon, then a young child; but no care was taken to breed him a protestant. The Marquis of Montrose, and all others whose estates had been ruined under Argyle's conduct, expected likewise reparation out of his estate; which was a very great one, but in no way able to satisfy all those demands. And it was believed that the Earl of Midletoun himself hoped to have carried away the main bulk of it; so that both the Lord Lorn and he concurred, though with different views, to put a stop to all the pretensions made upon it.

It was resolved to set up episcopacy in Scotland.

The point of the greatest importance then under consideration was, whether episcopacy should be restored in Scotland, or not. The Earl of Midletoun assured the King it was desired by the greater and honester part of the nation. One synod had as good as petitioned for it; and many others wished for it, though the share they had in the late wars made them think it was not fit or decent for them to move for it. Sharp assured the King that none but the protestors, of whom he had a very bad opinion, were against it; and that of the resolutioners there would not be found twenty that would oppose it. All those who were for making the change, agreed that it ought to be done now, in the first heat of joy after the restoration, and before the act of indemnity passed. The Earl of Lauderdale and all his friends, on the other hand, assured the King, that the national prejudice against it was still very strong, that those

who seemed zealous for it ran into it only as a method to procure favour, but that those who were against it would be found stiff and eager in their opposition to it: that by setting it up, the King would lose the affections of the nation; and that the supporting it would grow a heavy load on his government. The Earl of Lauderdale turned all this, that looked like a zeal for presbytery, to a dextrous insinuating himself into the King's confidence; as one that designed nothing but his greatness and his having Scotland sure to him, in order to the executing of any design he might afterwards be engaged in. The King went very coldly into the design: he said, he remembered well the aversion that he himself had observed in that nation to any thing that looked like a superiority in the church; but to that the Earl of Midletoun and Sharp answered, by assuring him that the insolencies committed by the presbyterians while they governed, and the ten years usurpation that had followed, had made such a change in peoples' tempers, that they were much altered since he had been among them. The King naturally hated presbytery; and having called a new parliament in England, that did with great zeal espouse the interests of the church of England, and were now beginning to complain of the evacuating the garrisons held by the army in that kingdom, he gave way, though with a visible reluctancy, to the change of the church government in Scotland. The aversion he seemed to express was imputed to his own indifference as to all those matters, and to his unwillingness to involve his government in new trouble:—but the view of things that the Earl of Lauderdale had given him, was the true root of all that coldness. The Earl of Clarendon set it on with great zeal; and so did the Duke of Ormond; who said it would be very hard to maintain the government of the church in Ireland, if presbytery continued in Scotland; since the northern counties, which were the best stocked of any they had, as they were originally from Scotland, so they would still follow the way of that nation. Upon all this diversity of opinion, the thing was proposed in a Scotch council at Whitehall. The Earl of Crawford declared himself against it: but the Earl of Lauderdale, Duke Hamilton, and Sir Robert Murray, were only for delaying the making any such change, till the King should be better satisfied concerning the inclinations of the

1661.

1661. nation. The result of the debate (all the rest who were present being earnest for the change) was, that a letter was writ to the privy council of Scotland, intimating the King's intentions for setting up episcopacy, and demanding their advice upon it. The Earl of Glencairn ordered the letter to be read, having taken care that such persons should be present who he knew would speak warmly for it, that so others, who might intend to oppose it, might be frightened from doing it. None spoke against it but the Earl of Kincairdin: he proposed that some certain methods might be taken, by which they might be well informed, and so be able to inform the King of the temper of the nation, before they offered an advice, that might have such effects as might very much perplex, if not disorder, all their affairs. Some smart repartees passed between the Earl of Glencairn and him. This was all the opposition that was made at that board: so a letter was writ to the King from thence, encouraging him to go on, and assuring him that the change he intended to make would give a general satisfaction to the main body of the nation.

Men sought out to be bishops.

Upon that the thing was resolved on. It remained after this only to consider the proper methods of doing it, and the men who ought to be employed in it. Sheldon and the English bishops had an aversion to all that had been engaged in the covenant; so they were for seeking out all the episcopal clergy, who had been driven out of Scotland in the beginning of the troubles, and preferring them. There was but one of the old bishops left alive, Sydserfe, who had been Bishop of Galloway. He had come up to London, not doubting but that he should be advanced to the primacy of Scotland. It is true, he had of late done some very irregular things; when the act of uniformity required all men who held any benefices in England to be episcopally ordained, he, who by observing the ill effects of their former violence was become very moderate, with others of the Scotch clergy that gathered about him, did set up a very indefensible practice of ordaining all those of the English clergy who came to him, and that without demanding either oaths or subscriptions of them. Some believed that this was done by him, only to subsist on the fees that arose from the letters of orders so granted, for he was very poor. This did so disgust the English bishops at him and his

company, that they took no care of him or them. Yet they were much against a set of presbyterian bishops: they believed they could have no credit, and that they would have no zeal. This touched Sharp to the quick; so he laid the matter before the Earl of Clarendon. He said these old episcopal men, by their long absence out of Scotland, knew nothing of the present generation; and by the ill usage they had met with, they were so irritated, that they would run matters quickly to great extremities: and, if there was a faction among the bishops, some valuing themselves upon their constant steadiness, and looking with an ill eye on those who had been carried away with the stream, this would divide and distract their counsels; whereas a set of men of moderate principles would be more uniform in their proceedings. This prevailed with the Earl of Clarendon, who saw the King so remiss in that matter, that he resolved to keep things in as great temper as was possible: and he, not doubting but that Sharp would pursue that in which he seemed to be so zealous and hot, and carry things with great moderation, persuaded the bishops of England to leave the management of that matter wholly to him. And Sharp, being assured of that at which he had long aimed, laid aside his mask, and owned, that he was to be archbishop of St. Andrew's. He said to some, from whom I had it, that when he saw that the King was resolved on the change, and that some hot men were like to be advanced, whose violence would ruin the country, he had submitted to that post on design to moderate matters, and to cover some good men from a storm that might otherwise break upon them; so deeply did he still dissemble, for now he talked of nothing so much as love and moderation. 1661.

Sydserfe was removed to be Bishop of Orkney, one of the best revenues of any of the bishopricks in Scotland; but it had been almost in all times a sinecure. He lived little more than a year after his translation: he had died in more esteem if he had died a year before it. But Sharp was ordered to find out proper men for filling up the other sees: that care was left entirely to him;—the choice was generally very bad.

Two men were brought up to be consecrated in England, Fairfoul, designed for the see of Glasgow; and Hamilton, brother to the Lord Belhaven, for Galloway. The former

1661. of these was a pleasant and facetious man, insinuating and crafty; but he was a better physician than a divine. His life was scarce free from scandal; and he was eminent in nothing that belonged to his own function. He had not only sworn the covenant, but had persuaded others to do it: and when one objected to him that it went against his conscience, he answered, there were some very good medicines that could not be chewed, but were to be swallowed down; and since it was plain that a man could not live in Scotland unless he sware it, therefore it must be swallowed down without any farther examination. Whatever the matter was, soon after the consecration, his parts sunk so fast, that in a few months he, who passed his whole life long for one of the cunningest men in Scotland, became almost a changeling; upon which it may be easily collected what commentaries the presbyterians would make. Sharp lamented this to me as one of their great misfortunes: he said it began to appear in less than a month after he came to London. Hamilton was a goodnatured man, but weak. He was always believed episcopal; yet he had so far complied in the time of the covenant, that he affected a peculiar expression of his counterfeit zeal for their cause to secure himself from suspicion: when he gave the sacrament, he excommunicated all that were not true to the covenant, using a form in the Old Testament of shaking out the lap of his gown, saying, so did he cast out of the church and communion all that dealt falsely in the covenant.

Bishop Leightoun's character.

With these there was a fourth man found out, who was then at London at his return from the Bath, where he had been for his health; and on him I will enlarge more copiously.—He was the son of Doctor Leightoun, who had, in Archbishop Laud's time, writ "Zion's plea against the Prelates;" for which he was condemned in the Star-Chamber to have his ears cut and his nose slit; he was a man of a violent and ungoverned heat. He sent his eldest son Robert to be bred in Scotland, who was accounted a saint from his youth up: he had great quickness of parts, a lively apprehension, with a charming vivacity of thought and expression. He had the greatest command of the purest Latin that ever I knew in any man; he was a master both of Greek and Hebrew, and of the whole compass of theological learning, chiefly in the study of the Scrip-

tures: but that which excelled all the rest was, he was possessed with the highest and noblest sense of divine things that I ever saw in any man. He had no regard to his person, unless it was to mortify it by a constant low diet, that was like a perpetual fast: he had a contempt both of wealth and reputation. He seemed to have the lowest thoughts of himself possible, and to desire that all other persons should think as meanly of him as he did himself: he bore all sorts of ill usage and reproach, like a man that took pleasure in it. He had so subdued the natural heat of his temper, that in a great variety of accidents, and in a course of twenty-two years intimate conversation with him, I never observed the least sign of passion, but upon one single occasion. He brought himself into so composed a gravity, that I never saw him laugh, and but seldom smile; and he kept himself in such a constant recollection, that I do not remember that I ever heard him say one idle word. There was a visible tendency in all he said to raise his own mind, and those he conversed with, to serious reflections. He seemed to be in a perpetual meditation; and though the whole course of his life was strict and ascetical, yet he had nothing of the sourness of temper that generally possesses men of that sort. He was the freest from superstition, of censuring others, or of imposing his own methods on them, possible; so that he did not so much as recommend them to others. He said there was a diversity of tempers, and every man was to watch over his own, and to turn it in the best manner he could. His thoughts were lively, oft out of the way and surprising, yet just and genuine; and he had laid together in his memory the greatest treasure of the best and wisest of all the ancient sayings of the heathens as well as Christians, that I have ever known any man master of; and he used them in the aptest manner possible. He had been bred up with the greatest aversion imaginable to the whole frame of the church of England. From Scotland his father sent him to travel: he spent some years in France, and spoke that language like one born there. He came afterwards and settled in Scotland, and had presbyterian ordination: but he quickly broke through the prejudices of his education. His preaching had a sublimity both of thought and expression in it. The grace and gravity of his pronuncia- 1661.

1661. tion was such, that few heard him without a very sensible emotion;—I am sure I never did. His style was rather too fine; but there was a majesty and beauty in it that left so deep an impression that I cannot yet forget the sermons I heard him preach thirty years ago:—and yet with this he seemed to look on himself as so ordinary a preacher, that while he had a cure he was ready to employ all others; and when he was a bishop he chose to preach to small auditories, and would never give notice beforehand: he had indeed a very low voice, and so could not be heard by a great crowd. He soon came to see into the follies of the presbyterians, and to dislike their covenant; particularly the imposing it, and their fury against all who differed from them. He found they were not capable of large thoughts; theirs were narrow, as their tempers were sour: so he grew weary of mixing with them. He scarce ever went to their meetings, and lived in great retirement, minding only the care of his own parish at Newbottle, near Edinburgh. Yet all the opposition that he made to them was, that he preached up a more exact rule of life than seemed to them consistent with human nature: but his own practice did even outshine his doctrine.

In the year 1648, he declared himself for the engagement for the King: but the Earl of Lothian, who lived in his parish, had so high an esteem for him, that he persuaded the violent men not to meddle with him, though he gave occasion to great exception; for when some of his parish, who had been in the engagement, were ordered to make public profession of their repentance for it, he told them, they had been in an expedition, in which, he believed, they had neglected their duty to God; and had been guilty of injustice and violence; of drunkenness and other immoralities; and he charged them to repent of these very seriously, without meddling with the quarrel or the grounds of that war. He entered into a great correspondence with many of the episcopal party, and with my own father in particular; and did wholly separate himself from the presbyterians. At last he left them, and withdrew from his cure; for he could not do the things imposed on him any longer: and yet he hated all contention so much, that he chose rather to leave them in a silent manner than to engage in any disputes with them. But he had generally the reputation of

a saint, and of something above human nature in him; so the mastership of the college of Edinburgh falling vacant some time after, and it being in the gift of the city, he was prevailed with to accept of it, because in it he was wholly separated from all church matters. He continued ten years in that post, and was a great blessing in it; for he talked so to all the youth of any capacity or distinction, that it had a great effect on many of them. He preached often to them; and if crowds broke in, which they were apt to do, he would have gone on with his sermon in Latin, with a purity and life that charmed all who understood it. Thus he had lived above twenty years in Scotland, in the highest reputation that any man, in my time, ever had in that kingdom. 1661.

He had a brother well known at court (Sir Elisha), who was very like him in face and in the vivacity of his parts, but the most unlike him in all other things that can be imagined; for, though he loved to talk of great sublimities in religion, yet he was a very immoral man. He was a papist of a form of his own, but he had changed his religion to raise himself at court; for he was at that time secretary to the Duke of York, and was very intimate with the Lord Aubigny, a brother of the Duke of Richmond's; who had changed his religion, and was a priest, and had probably been a cardinal if he had lived a little longer. He maintained an outward decency, and had more learning and better notions than men of quality, who enter into orders in that church, generally have. Yet he was a very vicious man; and that, perhaps, made him the more considered by the King, who loved and trusted him to a high degree. No man had more credit with the King; for he was in the secret as to his religion, and was more trusted with the whole design, that was then managed in order to establish it, than any man whatsoever. Sir Elisha brought his brother and him acquainted; for Leightoun loved to know men in all varieties of religion.

In the vacation time he made excursions, and came oft to London, where he observed all the eminent men in Cromwell's court, and in the several parties then about the city of London; but he told me, he could never see any thing among them that pleased him: they were men of unquiet and meddling tempers; and their discourses and

1661. sermons were dry and unsavoury, full of airy cant or of bombast swellings. Sometimes he went over to Flanders, to see what he could find in the several orders of the church of Rome. There he found some of Jansenius's followers, who seemed to be men of extraordinary tempers, and studied to bring things, if possible, to the purity and simplicity of the primitive ages; on which all his thoughts were much set. He thought controversies had been too much insisted on, and had been carried too far. His brother, who thought of nothing but the raising himself at court, fancied that his being made a bishop might render himself more considerable: so he possessed the Lord Aubigny with such an opinion of him, that he made the King apprehend, that a man of his piety and his notions (and his not being married was not forgot) might contribute to carry on their design. He fancied such a monastic man, who had a great stretch of thought, and so many other eminent qualities, would be a mean at least to prepare the nation for popery, if he did not directly come over to them; for his brother did not stick to say, he was sure that lay at root with him. So the King named him of his own proper motion, which gave all those that began to suspect the King himself great jealousies of him. Leightoun was averse to this promotion, as much as was possible. His brother had great power over him; for he took care to hide his vices from him, and to make before him a shew of piety. He seemed to be a papist rather in name and shew than in reality, of which I will set down one instance, that was then much talked of. Some of the church of England loved to magnify the sacrament in an extraordinary manner, affirming the real presence, only blaming the church of Rome for defining the manner of it; saying, Christ was present in a most unconceivable manner. This was so much the mode, that the King and all the court went into it: so the King, upon some raillery about transubstantiation, asked Sir Elisha if he believed it. He answered, he could not well tell; but he was sure the church of England believed it. And when the King seemed amazed at that, he replied, do not you believe that Christ is present in a most unconceivable manner? Which the King granted; then said he, that is just transubstantiation —the most unconceivable thing that was ever yet invented.

When Leightoun was prevailed on to accept a bishoprick, he chose Dunblane; a small diocese as well as a little revenue: but the deanery of the chapel royal was annexed to that see; so he was willing to engage in that, that he might set up the common prayer in the King's chapel, for the rebuilding of which orders were given. The English clergy were well pleased with him, finding him both more learned and more thoroughly theirs in the other points of uniformity than the rest of the Scotch clergy, whom they could not much value: and though Sheldon did not much like his great strictness, in which he had no mind to imitate him, yet he thought such a man as he was might give credit to episcopacy, in its first introduction to a nation much prejudiced against it. Sharp did not know what to make of all this; he neither liked his strictness of life, nor his notions. He believed they would not take the same methods, and fancied he might be much obscured by him; for he saw he would be well supported. He saw the Earl of Lauderdale began to magnify him. And so Sharp did all he could to discourage him, but without any effect; for he had no regard to him. I bear still the greatest veneration for the memory of that man, that I do for any person; and reckon my early knowledge of him, which happened the year after this, and my long and intimate conversation with him, that continued to his death, for twenty-three years, among the greatest blessings of my life; and for which I know I must give an account to God, in the great day, in a most particular manner. And yet, though I know this account of his promotion may seem a blemish upon him, I would not conceal it, being resolved to write of all persons and things with all possible candour. I had the relation of it from himself, and more particularly from his brother. But what hopes soever the papists had of him at this time, when he knew nothing of the design of bringing in popery, and had therefore talked of some points of popery with the freedom of an abstracted and speculative man; yet he expressed another sense of the matter, when he came to see it was really intended to be brought in among us. He then spoke of popery in the complex at much another rate; and he seemed to have more zeal against it, than I thought was in his nature with relation to any points in controversy; for his abstraction

1661.

1661. made him seem cold in all these matters. But he gave all who conversed with him a very different view of popery, when he saw we were really in danger of coming under the power of a religion that had, as he used to say, much of the wisdom that was earthly, sensual, and devilish; but had nothing in it of the wisdom that was from above, and was pure and peaceable. He did indeed think the corruptions and cruelties of popery were such gross and odious things, that nothing could have maintained that church under those just and visible prejudices, but the several orders among them, which had an appearance of mortification and contempt of the world; and with all the trash that was among them maintained a face of piety and devotion. He also thought the great and fatal error of the reformation was, that more of those houses, and of that course of life, free from the entanglements of vows and other mixtures, was not preserved: so that the protestant churches had neither places of education, nor retreat for men of mortified tempers. I have dwelt long upon this man's character; but it was so singular that it seemed to deserve it: and I was so singularly blessed by knowing him as I did, that I am sure he deserved it of me, that I should give so full a view of him; which, I hope, may be of some use to the world.

The Scotch bishops consecrated.

When the time fixed for the consecration of the bishops of Scotland came on, the English bishops finding that Sharp and Leightoun had not episcopal ordination, as priests and deacons, the other two having been ordained by bishops before the wars, they stood upon it, that they must be ordained first deacons and then priests. Sharp was very uneasy at this, and remembered them of what had happened when King James had set up episcopacy. Bishop Andrews moved at that time the ordaining them, as was now proposed: but that was overruled by King James, who thought it went too far towards the unchurching of all those who had no bishops among them. But the late war, and the disputes during that time, had raised these controversies higher, and brought men to stricter notions, and to maintain them with more fierceness. The English bishops did also say, that by the late act of uniformity that matter was more positively settled than it had been before; so that they could not legally consecrate any but those who were, according to that constitution, made first priests and

deacons. They also made this difference between the present time and King James's; for then the Scots were only in an imperfect state, having never had bishops among them since the Reformation; so in such a state of things, in which they had been under a real necessity, it was reasonable to allow of their orders, how defective soever; but that of late they had been in a state of schism, had revolted from their bishops, and had thrown off that order; so that orders given in such a wilful opposition to the whole constitution of the primitive church, was a thing of another nature. They were positive in the point, and would not dispense with it: Sharp stuck more at it than could have been expected from a man that had swallowed down greater matters: Leightoun did not stand much upon it; he did not think orders given without bishops were null and void: he thought the forms of government were not settled by such positive laws as were unalterable; but only by apostolical practices, which, as he thought, authorised episcopacy as the best form; yet he did not think it necessary to the being of a church: but he thought that every church might make such rules of ordination as they pleased, and that they might re-ordain all that came to them from any other church; and that the re-ordaining a priest, ordained in another church, imported no more, but that they received him into orders according to their rules; and did not infer the annulling the orders he had formerly received. These two were upon this privately ordained deacons and priests; and then all the four were consecrated publicly in the abbey of Westminster. Leightoun told me, he was much struck with the feasting and jollity of that day; it had not such an appearance of seriousness or piety as became the new modelling of a church. When that was over, he made some attempts to work up Sharp to the two designs which possessed him most; the one was, to try what could be done towards the uniting the presbyterians and them: he offered Usher's reduction as the plan upon which they ought to form their schemes. The other was, to try how they could raise men to a truer and higher sense of piety, and bring the worship of that church out of their extempore methods into more order; and so to prepare them for a more regular way of worship, which he thought was of much more importance than a

1661.

1661. form of government. But he was amazed, when he observed that Sharp had neither formed any scheme, nor seemed so much as willing to talk of any. He reckoned they would be established in the next session of parliament, and so would be legally possessed of their bishopricks; and then every bishop was to do the best he could to get all once to submit to his authority; and, when that point was carried, they might proceed to other things, as should be found expedient: but he did not care to lay down any scheme. Fairfoul, when he talked to him, had always a merry tale ready at hand to divert him; so that he avoided all serious discourse, and indeed did not seem capable of any. By these means Leightoun quickly lost all heart and hope; and said often to me upon it, that in the whole progress of that affair there appeared such cross characters of an angry Providence, that how fully soever he was satisfied in his own mind as to episcopacy itself, yet it seemed that God was against them, and that they were not like to be the men that should build up his church; so that the struggling about it seemed to him like a fighting against God. He who had the greatest hand in it proceeded with so much dissimulation; and the rest of the order were so mean and so selfish; and the Earl of Midletoun, with the other secular men that conducted it, were so openly impious and vicious, that it did cast a reproach upon every thing relating to religion, to see it managed by such instruments.

1662. All the steps that were made afterwards were of a-piece with this melancholy beginning. Upon the consecration of the bishops, the presbyteries of Scotland, that were still sitting, began now to declare openly against episcopacy; and to prepare protestations, or other acts or instruments, against them:—some were talking of entering into new engagements against the submitting to them. So Sharp moved, that since the King had set up episcopacy, a proclamation might be issued out, forbidding clergymen to meet together in any presbytery, or other judicatory, till the bishops should settle a method of proceeding in them. Upon the setting out this proclamation, a general obedience was given to it; only the ministers, to keep up a shew of acting on an ecclesiastic authority, met once and entered into their books a protestation against the procla-

The meetings of the presbyteries forbidden.

mation, as an invasion on the liberties of the church; to which they declared they gave obedience only for a time, and for peace sake. Sharp procured this without any advice, and it proved very fatal; for when King James brought in the bishops before, they had still suffered the inferior judicatories to continue sitting till the bishops came and sat down among them. Some of them protested indeed against that, yet they sat on ever after; and so the whole church had a face of unity, while all sat together in the same judicatories, though upon different principles. The old presbyterians said, they sat still as in a court settled by the laws of the church and state; and though they looked on the bishops sitting among them and assuming a negative vote, as an usurpation, yet, they said, it did not infer a nullity on the court: whereas now, by this silencing these courts, the case was much altered; for if they had continued sitting and the bishops had come among them, they would have said, it was like the bearing with an usurpation when there was no remedy; and what protestations soever they might have made, or what opposition soever they might have given the bishops, that would have been kept within their own walls, but would not have broken out into such a distraction as the nation was cast into upon this: all the opposition that might have been made would have died with those few that were disposed to make it; and, upon due care to fill the vacant places with worthy and well-affected men, the nation might have been brought off from their prejudices. But these courts being now once broken, and brought together afterwards by a sort of connivance, without any legal authority, only as the bishop's assistants and officials to give him advice, and to act in his name, they pretended they could not sit in them any more, unless they should change their principles, and become thoroughly episcopal, which was too great a turn to be so soon brought about. So fatally did Sharp precipitate matters. He affected to have the reins of the church wholly put into his hands. The Earl of Lauderdale was not sorry to see him commit errors; since the worse things were managed, his advices would be thereby the more justified: and the Earl of Midletoun and his party took no care of any business, being almost perpetually drunk; by which they came, in a great measure, to lose the King; 1661.

1662. for though, upon a frolic, the King with a few in whose company he took pleasure would sometimes run into excess, yet he did it seldom, and had a very bad opinion of all that got into the habit and love of drunkenness.

The new bishops came down to Scotland.

The bishops came down to Scotland soon after their consecration, all in one coach. Leightoun told me, he believed they were weary of him, for he was very weary of them: but he, finding they intended to be received at Edinburgh with some pomp, left them at Morpeth, and came to Edinburgh a few days before them:—he hated all the appearances of vanity; he would not have the title of lord given him by his friends, and was not easy when others forced it on him. In this I always thought him too stiff; it provoked the other bishops, and looked like singularity and affectation; and furnished those, that were prejudiced against him, with a specious appearance, to represent him as a man of odd notions and practices. The lord chancellor, with all the nobility and privy counsellors, then at Edinburgh, went out, together with the magistracy of the city, and brought the bishops in, as in triumph. I looked on; and though I was thoroughly episcopal, yet I thought there was somewhat in the pomp of that entry, that did not look like the humility that became their function. Soon after their arrival, six other bishops were consecrated, but not ordained priests and deacons. The see of Edinburgh was for some time kept vacant; Sharp hoped that Douglas might be prevailed on to accept it, but he would enter into no treaty about it: so the Earl of Midletoun forced upon Sharp one Wishart, who had been the Marquis of Montrose's chaplain, and had been taken prisoner, and used with so much cruelty in the gaol of Edinburgh, that it seemed but justice to advance a man in that place, where he had suffered so much.

They were brought into parliament.

The session of parliament came on in April, 1662; where the first thing that was proposed by the Earl of Midletoun was, that since the act rescissory had annulled all the parliaments after that held in the year 1633, the former laws in favour of episcopacy were now again in force, the King had restored that function which had been so long glorious in the church, and for which his blessed father had suffered so much; and though the bishops had a right to come and take their place in parliament, yet it was a piece of respect

to send some of every state to invite them to come, and sit among them. This was agreed to: so upon the message the bishops came and took their places. Leightoun went not with them, as indeed he never came to parliament but when there was something before them that related to religion, or to the church. 1662.

The first act that passed in this session was for restoring episcopacy, and settling the government of the church in their hands: Sharp had the framing of this act, as Primrose told me. The whole government and jurisdiction of the church in the several dioceses was declared to be lodged in the bishops; which they were to exercise with the advice and assistance of such of their clergy, as were of known loyalty and prudence: all men that held any benefice in the church were required to own and submit to the government of the church, as now by law established. This was plainly the setting episcopacy on another bottom than it had been ever on in Scotland before this time; for the whole body of the presbyterians did formerly maintain such a share in the administration, that the bishops had never pretended to any more, than to be their settled presidents with a negative voice upon them: but now it was said that the whole power was lodged simply in the bishop, who was only bound to carry along with him in the administration so many presbyters, as he thought fit to single out, as his advisers and assistants; which was the taking all power out of the body of the clergy. Church judicatories were now made only the bishop's assistants; and the few of the clergy that must assist, being to be picked out by him, that was only a matter of shew; nor had they any authority lodged with them, all that being vested only in the bishop: nor did it escape censure, that among the qualifications of those presbyters that were to be the bishop's advisers and assistants, loyalty and prudence were only named; and that piety and learning were forgot, which must always be reckoned the first qualifications of the clergy. As to the obligation to own and submit to the government thus established by law, they said it was hard to submit to so high an authority as was now lodged with the bishops; but to require them to own it, seemed to import an antecedent approving, or at least a subsequent justifying of such an authority, which carried the matter far beyond a bare obe-

1662.

dience, even to an imposing upon conscience. These were not only the exceptions made by the presbyterians, but by the episcopal men themselves, who had never carried the argument farther in Scotland, than for a precedency; with some authority in ordination, and a negative in matters of jurisdiction. They thought the body of the clergy ought to be a check upon the bishops, and that, without the consent of the majority, they ought not to be legally empowered to act in so imperious a manner, as was warranted by this act. Many of them would never subscribe to this form of owning and submitting; and the more prudent bishops did not impose it on their clergy. The whole frame of the act was liable to great censure. It was thought an inexcusable piece of madness, that when a government was brought in upon a nation so averse to it, the first step should carry their power so high. All the bishops, except Sharp, disowned their having any share in the penning this act; which indeed was passed in haste, without due consideration. Nor did any of the bishops, no not Sharp himself, ever carry their authority so high, as by the act they were warranted to do: but all the enemies to episcopacy had this act ever in their mouths, to excuse their not submitting to it; and said it asserted a greater stretch of authority in bishops, than they themselves thought fit to assume.

Scruples about the oath of supremacy.

Soon after that act passed, some of the presbyterian preachers were summoned to answer before the parliament, for some reflections made in their sermons against episcopacy: but nothing could be made of it; for their words were general, and capable of different senses. So it was resolved, for a proof of their loyalty, to tender them the oath of allegiance and supremacy. That had been enacted in the former parliament, and was refused by none but the Earl of Cassilis. He desired that an explanation might be made of the supremacy: the words of the oath were large; and when the oath was enacted in England, a clear explanation was given in one of the articles of the church of England, and more copiously afterwards in a discourse by Archbishop Usher, published by King James's order. But the parliament would not satisfy him so far: and they were well pleased to see scruples raised about the oath, that so a colour might be put on their severities against such as should refuse it, as being men that refused

to swear allegiance to the King. Upon that the Earl of Cassilis left the parliament, and quitted all his employments; for he was a man of a most inflexible firmness. Many said, there was no need of an explanation, since how ambiguous soever the words might be in themselves, yet that oath, being brought from Scotland to England, ought to be understood in the same sense in which it was imposed in that kingdom. On the other hand, there was just reason for some men's being tender in so sacred a matter as an oath. The Earl of Cassilis had offered to take the oath, provided he might join his explanation to it. The Earl of Midletoun was contented to let him say what he pleased, but he would not suffer him to put it in writing. The ministers, to whom it was now tendered, offered to take it upon the same terms; and in a petition to the lords of the articles they offered their explanation. Upon that a debate arose, whether an act explanatory of the oath should be offered to the parliament, or not. This was the first time that Leightoun appeared in parliament: he pressed it might be done, with much zeal. He said the land mourned by reason of the many oaths that had been taken: the words of this oath were certainly capable of a bad sense: in compassion to papists, a limited sense had been put on them in England; and he thought there should be a like tenderness shewed to protestants, especially when the scruple was just, and there was an oath in the case, in which the matter ought certainly to be made clear: to act otherwise looked like the laying snares for people, and the making men offenders for a word. Sharp took this ill from him, and replied upon him with great bitterness; and said it was below the dignity of government to make acts to satisfy the weak scruples of peevish men: it ill became them, who had imposed their covenant on all people without any explanation, and had forced all to take it, now to expect such extraordinary favours. Leightoun insisted that it ought to be done for that very reason, that all people might see a difference between the mild proceedings of the government now, and their severity: and that it ill became the very same persons, who had complained of that rigour, now to practice it themselves; for thus it may be said, the world goes mad by turns. This was ill taken by the Earl of Midletoun, and all his party; for they designed to keep

1662.

1662. the matter so, that the presbyterians should be possessed with many scruples on this head; and that when any of the party should be brought before them, whom they believed in fault, but had not full proof against, the oath should be tendered as the trial of their allegiance, and that on their refusing it, they should censure them as they thought fit. So the ministers' petition was rejected, and they were required to take the oath as it stood in the law, without putting any sense upon it. They refused to do it, and were upon that condemned to perpetual banishment, as men that denied allegiance to the King:—and by this an engine was found out to banish as many as they pleased; for the resolution was taken up by the whole party to refuse it, unless with an explanation. So soon did men forget all their former complaints of the severity of imposing oaths, and began to set on foot the same practices now, when they had it in their power to do it. But how unbecoming soever this rigour might be in laymen, it was certainly much more indecent when managed by clergymen: and the supremacy which was now turned against the presbyterians was, not long after this, laid much heavier on the bishops themselves; and then they desired an explanation, as much as the presbyterians did now, but could not obtain it.

The parliament was not satisfied with this oath; for they apprehended that many would infer, that since it came from England, it ought to be understood in the public and established sense of the words that was passed there, both in an article of doctrine and in an act of parliament; therefore another oath was likewise taken from the English pattern, of abjuring the covenant; both the league and the national covenant. It is true, this was only imposed on men in the magistracy, or in public employments. By it all the presbyterians were turned out; for this oath was decried by the ministers as little less than open apostacy from God, and a throwing off their baptismal covenant.

Debates about an act of indemnity.

The main business of this session of parliament, now that episcopacy was settled, and these oaths were enacted, was the passing of the act of indemnity. The Earl of Midletoun had obtained of the King an instruction to consent to the fining of the chief offenders, or to other punishments not extending to life. This was intended to enrich him and his party, since all the rich and great offenders

would be struck with the terror of this, and choose rather to make him a good present than to be fined on record, as guilty persons. This matter was debated at the council in Whitehall: the Earls of Lauderdale and Crawford argued against it:—they said the King had granted a full indemnity in England, out of which none were excepted but the regicides; it seemed therefore an unkind and an unequal way of proceeding towards Scotland, that had merited eminently at the King's hands ever since the year 1648, and suffered much for it, that the one kingdom should not have the same measure of grace and pardon that was granted in the other. The Earl of Midletoun answered, that all he desired was in favour of the loyal party in Scotland, who were undone by their adhering to the King: the revenue of the crown was too small, and to much charged, to repair their losses; so the King had no other way to be just to them, but to make their enemies pay for their rebellion. Some plausible limitations were offered to the fines to which any should be condemned, as that they should be only for offences committed since the year 1650; and that no man should be fined in above a year's rent of his estate: these were agreed to. So he had an instruction to pass an act of indemnity, with a power of fining restrained to these rules. There was one Sir George Mackenzie, since made Lord Tarbot and Earl of Cromarty, a young man of great vivacity of parts, but full of ambition, and had the art to recommend himself to all sides and parties by turns, and has made a great figure in that country now above fifty years: he had great notions of virtue and religion, but they were only notions; at least, they have not had great effect on himself at all times. He became now the Earl of Midletoun's chief favourite. Primrose was grown rich and cautious; and his maxim having always been, that when he apprehended a change, he ought to lay in for it by courting the side that was depressed, that so in the next turn he might secure friends to himself, he began to think that the Earl of Midletoun went too fast to hold out long. He had often advised him to manage the business of restoring episcopacy in a slow progress; he had formed a scheme, by which it would have been the work of seven years: but the Earl of Midletoun's heat, and Sharp's vehemence, spoiled all his project. The Earl of Midletoun, after his

1662.

1662. own disgrace, said often to him, that his advices had been always wise and faithful; but he thought princes were more sensible of services, and more apt to reflect on them, and to reward them than he found they were.

It was desired that some might be incapacitated.

When the settlement of episcopacy was over, the next care was to prepare the act of indemnity. Some proposed, that besides the power of fining, they should move the King, that he would consent to an instruction empowering them likewise to put some under an incapacity to hold any public trust. This had never been proposed in public; but the Earl of Midletoun pretended that many of the best affected of the parliament had proposed it in private to himself: so he sent the Lord Tarbot up to the King with two draughts of an act of indemnity; the one containing an exception of some persons to be fined; and the other containing likewise a clause for the incapacitating of some, not exceeding twelve, from all public trust. He was ordered to lay both before the King: the one was penned according to the Earl of Midletoun's instructions; the other was drawn at the desire of the parliament, for which he prayed an instruction, if the King thought fit to approve of it. The Earl of Lauderdale had no apprehension of any design against himself in the motion; so he made no objection to it: and an instruction was drawn, empowering the Earl of Midletoun to pass an act with that clause. Tarbot was then much considered at court, as one of the most extraordinary men that Scotland had produced; and was the better liked, because he was looked on as the person that the Earl of Midletoun intended to set up in the Earl of Lauderdale's room, who was then so much hated, that nothing could have preserved him but the course that was taken to ruin him. So Lord Tarbot went back to Scotland, and the Duke of Richmond and the Earl of Newburgh went down with him; by whose wild and ungoverned extravagancies the Earl of Midletoun's whole conduct fell under such an universal odium and so much contempt, that, as his own ill-management forced the King to put an end to his ministry, so he could not have served there much longer with any reputation.

One instance of unusual severity was, that a letter of the Lord Lorn's to the Lord Duffus was intercepted; in which he did a little too plainly, but very truly, complain

of the practices of his enemies in endeavouring to possess the King against him by many lies; but he said, he had now discovered them, and had defeated them, and had gained the person upon whom the chief among them depended. This was the Earl of Clarendon, upon whom the Earl of Berkshire had wrought so much, that he resolved to oppose his restoration no more: and for this the Earl of Berkshire was to have a thousand pounds. This letter was carried into the parliament, and complained of as leasing-making; since Lord Lorn pretended, he had discovered the lies of his enemies to the King, which was a sowing dissention between the King and his subjects, and the creating in the King an ill opinion of them: so the parliament desired the King would send him down to be tried upon it. The King thought the letter very indiscreetly writ, but could not see any thing in it that was criminal. Yet, in compliance with the desire of so zealous a parliament, Lord Lorn was sent down upon his parole; but the King writ positively to the Earl of Midletoun not to proceed to the execution of any sentence that might pass upon him. Lord Lorn, upon his appearance, was made a prisoner; and an indictment was brought against him for leasing-making. He made no defence; but, in a long speech, he set out the great provocation he had been under; the many libels that had been printed against him; some of these had been put in the King's own hands, to represent him as unworthy of his grace and favour; so, after all that hard usage, it was no wonder if he had writ with some sharpness: but he protested he meant no harm to any person; his design being only to preserve and save himself from the malice and lies of others, and not to make lies of any. In conclusion, he submitted to the justice of the parliament, and cast himself on the King's mercy. He was upon this condemned to die, as guilty of leasing-making; and the day of his execution was left to the Earl of Midletoun by the parliament. 1662. Lorn condemned.

I never knew any thing more generally cried out on than this was; unless it was the second sentence passed on him twenty years after this, which had more fatal effects, and a more tragical conclusion. He was certainly born to be the signalest instance in this age of the rigour, or rather of the mockery of justice. All that was said at this time to ex-

1662. cuse the proceeding was, that it was certain his life was in no danger: but since that depended on the King, it did not excuse those who passed so base a sentence, and left to posterity the precedent of a parliamentary judgment, by which any man may be condemned for a letter of common news. This was not all the fury with which this matter was driven; for an act was passed against all persons who should move the King for restoring the children of those who were attainted by parliament; which was an unheard-of restraint on applications to the King for his grace and mercy: this the Earl of Midletoun also passed, though he had no instruction for it. There was no penalty put in the act: for it was a maxim of the pleaders for prerogative, that the fixing a punishment was a limitation on the crown: whereas an act forbidding any thing, though without a penalty, made the offenders criminal; and in that case they did reckon that the punishment was arbitrary; only that it could not extend to life. A committee was next appointed for setting the fines; they proceeded without any regard to the rules the King had set them. The most obnoxious compounded secretly. No consideration was had either of men's crimes, or of their estates; no proofs were brought. Enquiries were not so much as made; but as men were delated, they were marked down for such a fine; and all was transacted in a secret committee. When the list of the men and of their fines was read in parliament, exceptions were made to divers; particularly some who had been under age all the time of transgression, and others abroad:—but to every thing of that kind an answer was made, that there would come a proper time in which every man was to be heard in his own defence; for the meaning of setting the fine was only this, that such persons should have no benefit by the act of indemnity unless they paid the fine; therefore every one that could stand upon his innocence, and renounce the benefit of the indemnity, was thereby free from the fine, which was only his composition for the grace and pardon of the act. So all passed in that great hurry.

Some incapacitated by ballot.

The other point concerning the incapacity, was carried farther than was perhaps intended at first, though the Lord Tarbot assured me he had from the beginning designed it. It was infused into all people that the King was weary of

the Earl of Lauderdale, but that he could not decently throw him off, and that therefore the parliament must help him with a fair pretence for doing it: yet others were very apprehensive that the King could not approve of a parliament's falling upon a minister. So Lord Tarbot proposed two expedients:—the one was, that no person should be named, but that every member should do it by ballot, and should bring twelve names in a paper; and that a secret committee of three of every estate should make the scrutiny; and that they, without making any report to the parliament, should put those twelve names on whom the greater number fell in the act of incapacity, which was to be an act apart, and not made a clause of the act of indemnity. This was taken from the ostracism in Athens, and seemed the best method in an act of oblivion, in which all that was past was to be forgotten; and no seeds of feuds would remain, when it was not so much as known against whom any one had voted. The other expedient was, that a clause should be put in the act that it should have no force, and that the names in it should never be published, unless the King should approve of it. By this means it was hoped, that if the King should dislike the whole thing, yet it would be easy to soften that, by letting him see how entirely the act was in his power. Emissaries were sent to every parliament-man, directing him how to make his list, that so the Earls of Lauderdale, Crawford, and Sir Robert Murray, might be three of the number: this was managed so carefully, that, by a great majority, they were three of the incapacitated persons. The Earl of Midletoun passed the act, though he had no instruction about it in this form. The matter was so secretly carried, that it was not let out till the day before it was done; for they reckoned their success in it was to depend on the secrecy of it, and in their carrying it to the King before he should be possessed against it by the Earl of Lauderdale or his party. So they took great care to visit the packet, and to stop any that should go to court post; and all people were under such terror that no courage was left. Only Lord Lorn sent one on his own horses, who was to go on in cross-roads, till he got into Yorkshire; for they had secured every stage to Durham. By this means the Earl of Lauderdale had the news three days before the Duke of Rich- 1662.

1662. mond and Lord Tarbot got to court. He carried it pre-
The King was displeased with this. sently to the King, who could scarce believe it. But when he saw by the letters that it was certainly true, he assured the Earl of Lauderdale that he would preserve him, and never suffer such a destructive precedent to pass. He said he looked for no better upon the Duke of Richmond's going to Scotland, and his being perpetually drunk there. This mortified the Earl of Lauderdale; for it looked like the laying in an excuse for the Earl of Midletoun. From the King, by his orders, he went to the Earl of Clarendon, and told all to him. He was amazed at it, and said that certainly he had some secret friend that had got into their confidence, and had persuaded them to do as they had done on design to ruin them: but growing more serious, he added, he was sure the King on his own account would take care not to suffer such a thing to pass; otherwise no man could serve him: if way was given to such a method of proceeding, he himself would go out of his dominions as fast as his gout would suffer him.

Two days after this, the Duke of Richmond and Lord Tarbot came to court. They brought the act of incapacity sealed up, together with a letter from the parliament, magnifying the Earl of Midletoun's services, and another letter signed by ten of the bishops, setting forth his zeal for the church, and his care of them all; and in particular they set out the design he was then on, of going round some of the worst affected counties to see the church established in them, as a work that was highly meritorious. At the same time he sent over the Earl of Newburgh to Ireland, to engage the Duke of Ormond to represent to the King the good effects that they began to feel in that kingdom, from the Earl of Midletoun's administration in Scotland; hoping the King would not discourage, much less change so faithful a minister. The King received the Duke of Richmond and Lord Tarbot very coldly. When they delivered the act of incapacity to him, he assured them, it should never be opened by him; and said their last actings were like madmen, or like men that were perpetually drunk. Lord Tarbot said, all was yet entire, and in his hands, the act being to live or to die as he pleased; he magnified the Earl of Midletoun's zeal in his service, and the loyal affections of his parliament, who had, on this oc-

casion, consulted both the King's safety and his honour: the incapacity act was only intended to put it out of the power of men, who had been formerly bad instruments, to be so any more: and even that was submitted by them to the King's judgment. The King heard them patiently, and, without any farther discourse on the subject, dismissed them; so they hoped they had mollified him. But the Earl of Lauderdale turned the matter upon the Earl of Midletoun and Lord Tarbot, who had made the King believe that the parliament desired leave to incapacitate some, whereas no such desire had ever been made in parliament; and then after the King, upon that misrepresentation, had given way to it, the parliament was made to believe that the King desired that some might be put under that censure; so that the abuse had been equally put on both. Honours went by ballot at Venice; but punishments had never gone so, since the ostracism at Athens, which was the factious practice of a jealous commonwealth, never to be set up as a precedent under a monarchy; even the Athenians were ashamed of it, when Aristides, the justest man among them, fell under the censure; and they laid it aside not long after. 1662.

The Earl of Clarendon gave up the thing as inexcusable; but he studied to preserve the Earl of Midletoun. The change newly made in the church of Scotland had been managed by him with zeal and success; but though it was well begun, yet if these laws were not maintained by a vigorous execution, the presbyterians, who were quite dispirited by the steadiness of his conduct, would take heart again, especially if they saw the Earl of Lauderdale grow upon him, whom they looked on as theirs in his heart; so he prayed the King to forgive one single fault that came after so much merit. He also sent advices to the Earl of Midletoun to go on in his care of establishing the church, and to get the bishops to send up copious accounts of all that he had done. The King ordered him to come up, and to give him an account of the affairs in Scotland: but he represented the absolute necessity of seeing some of the laws lately made put in execution; for it was hoped the King's displeasure would be allayed, and go off, if some time could be but gained. Great pains taken to excuse Midletoun.

One act passed in the last parliament that restored the

1662. The presbyterian ministers silenced.

rights of patronage, the taking away of which even presbytery could not carry till the year 1649, in which they had the parliament entirely in their hands. Then the election of ministers was put in the church session and the lay elders; so that from that time all that had been admitted to churches came in without presentations. One clause in the act declared all these incumbents to be unlawful possessors; only it indemnified them for what was past, and required them before Michaelmas to take presentations from the patrons, who were obliged to give them being demanded, and to get themselves to be instituted by the bishops; otherwise their churches were declared vacant on Michaelmas day. This took in all the young and hot men; so the presbyterians had many meetings about it, in which they all resolved not to obey the act. They reckoned the taking institution from a bishop was such an owning of his authority, that it was a renouncing of all their former principles: whereas some few that had a mind to hold their benefices, thought that was only a secular law that gave a legal right to their tithes and benefices, and had no relation to their spiritual concerns; and therefore, they thought they might submit to it, especially where bishops were so moderate as to impose no subscription upon them, as the greater part were. But the resolution taken by the main body of the presbyterians was, to pay no obedience to any of the acts made in this session, and to look on and see what the state would do. The Earl of Midletoun was naturally fierce, and that was heightened by the ill state of his affairs at court; so he resolved on a punctual execution of the law. He and all about him were at this time so constantly disordered, by high entertainments and other excesses, that even in the short intervals between their drunken bouts, they were not cool nor calm enough to consider what they were doing. He had also so mean an opinion of the party, that he believed they would comply with any thing rather than lose their benefices, and therefore he declared, he would execute the law in its utmost rigour. On the other hand, the heads of the presbyterians reckoned, that if great numbers were turned out all at once, it would not be possible to fill their places on the sudden; and that the government would be forced to take them in again, if there were such a vacancy made, that a great part of the nation

were left destitute, and had no divine service among them. 1662.
For that which all the wiser of the party apprehended most was, that the bishops would go on slowly, and single out some that were more factious, upon particular provocations, and turn them out by degrees, as they had men ready to put in their room; which would have been more insensible and more excusable, if indiscreet zealots had, as it were, forced censures from them. The advice sent over all the country, from their leaders who had settled measures at Edinburgh, was, that they should do and say nothing that might give a particular distaste, but should look on, and do their duty as long as they were connived at; and that if any proclamation should be issued out, commanding them to be silent, they should all obey at once. In these measures both sides were deceived in their expectations. The bishops went to their several dioceses; and according as the people stood affected they were well or ill received: and they held their synods every where in October. In the northern parts very few stood out; but in the western parts scarce any came to them. The Earl of Midletoun went to Glasgow before Michaelmas: so when the time fixed by the act was passed, and that scarce any one in all those counties had paid any regard to it, he called a meeting of the privy council, that they might consider what was fit to be done. Duke Hamilton told me, they were all so drunk that day that they were not capable of considering any thing that was laid before them, and would hear of nothing but the executing of the law without any relenting or delay. So a proclamation was issued out, requiring all who had their livings without presentations, and who had not obeyed the late act, to give over all farther preaching, or serving the cure, and to withdraw from their parishes immediately; and the military men that lay in the country were ordered to pull them out of their pulpits, if they should presume to go on in their functions. This was opposed only by Duke Hamilton and Sir James Lockhart, father to Sir William Lockhart. They represented, that the much greater part of the preachers in these counties had come into their churches since the year 1649; that they were very popular men, both esteemed and beloved of their people; it would be a great scandal if they should be turned out, and none be ready to be put in their places;

1662. and it would not be possible to find a competent number of well qualified men to fill the many vacancies that this proclamation would make. The Earl of Midletoun would hear of nothing but the execution of the law: so the proclamation was issued out; and upon it above two hundred churches were shut up in one day; and above one hundred and fifty more were to be turned out for not obeying, and submitting to the bishops' summons to their synods. All this was done without considering the consequence of it, or communicating it to the other bishops. Sharp said to myself, that he knew nothing of it, nor did he imagine that so rash a thing could have been done, till he saw it in print. He was glad that this was done without his having any share in it; for by it he was furnished with somewhat, in which he was no way concerned, upon which he might cast all the blame of all that followed. Yet this was suitable enough to a maxim that he and all that sort of people set up, that the execution of laws was that by which all governments maintained their strength, as well as their honour. The Earl of Midletoun was surprised at this extraordinary submission of the presbyterians: he had fancied, that the greatest part would have complied, and that some of the more intractable would have done some extraordinary thing, to have justified the severities he would have exercised in that case, and was disappointed both ways. Yet this obedience of a party so little accustomed to it, was much magnified at court: it was said, that all plied before him; they knew he was steady, so they saw how necessary it was not to change the management, if it was really intended to preserve the church. Lord Tarbot told me, that the King had expressed to himself the esteem he had for Sheldon, upon the account of the courage that he shewed in the debate concerning the execution of the act of uniformity at the day prefixed, which was St. Bartholomew's: for some suggested the danger that might arise, if the act were vigorously executed. From thence it seems the Earl of Midletoun concluded, the zeal he shewed now would be so acceptable, that all former errors would be forgiven, if he went through with it; as indeed he stuck at nothing. Yet the clamour of putting several counties, as it were, under an interdict, was very great: so all endeavours were used to get as many as could be had to fill those vacancies; and, among

others, I was much pressed, both by the Earl of Glencairn and the Lord Tarbot, to go into any of the vacant churches that I liked. I was then but nineteen; yet there is no law in Scotland limiting the age of a priest: and it was upon this account that I was let so far into the secret of all affairs; for they had such an imagination of some service I might do them, that they treated me with very particular freedom and confidence. But I had imbibed the principles of moderation so early, that, though I was entirely episcopal, yet I would not engage with a body of men, that seemed to have the principles and tempers of inquisitors in them, and to have no regard to religion in any of their proceedings: so I stood upon my youth, and could not be wrought on to go to the west, though the Earl of Glencairn offered to carry me with him under his protection. 1662.

There was a sort of an invitation sent over the kingdom, like a hue and cry, to all persons to accept of benefices in the west. The livings were generally well endowed, and the parsonage-houses were well built, and in good repair; and this drew many very worthless persons thither, who had little learning, less piety, and no sort of discretion: they came thither with great prejudices against them, and had many difficulties to wrestle with. The former incumbents, whom ere for the most part protestors, were a grave sort of people: their spirits were eager, and their tempers sour; but they had an appearance that created respect: they were related to the chief families in the country, either by blood or marriage; and had lived in so decent a manner, that the gentry paid great respect to them. They used to visit their parishes much, and were so full of the Scriptures, and so ready at extempore prayer, that from that they grew to practise extempore sermons: for the custom in Scotland was, after dinner or supper, to read a chapter in the Scripture; and where they happened to come, if it was acceptable, they on the sudden expounded the chapter. They had brought the people to such a degree of knowledge, that cottagers and servants would have prayed extempore. I have often overheard them at it; and though there was a large mixture of odd stuff, yet I have been astonished to hear how copious and ready they were in it. Their ministers generally brought them about them on the Sunday nights, where the sermons were talked over; and

A general character of them.

1662. every one, women as well as men, were desired to speak their sense and their experience; and by these means they had a comprehension of matters of religion, greater than I have seen among people of that sort any where. The preachers went all in one track, of raising observations on points of doctrine out of their text, and proving these by reasons, and then of applying those, and shewing the use that was to be made of such a point of doctrine, both for instruction and terror, for exhortation and comfort, for trial of themselves upon it, and for furnishing them with proper directions and helps; and this was so methodical, that the people grew to follow a sermon quite through every branch of it. To this some added, the resolving of doubts concerning the state they were in, or their progress or decay in it, which they called cases of conscience; and these were taken from what their people said to them at any time, very oft being under fits of melancholy, or vapours, or obstructions, which, though they flowed from natural causes, were looked on as the work of the spirit of God, and a particular exercise to them; and they fed this disease of weak minds too much. Thus they had laboured very diligently, though with a wrong method and wrong notions: but as they lived in great familiarity with their people, and used to pray and to talk oft with them in private, so it can hardly be imagined to what a degree they were loved and reverenced by them. They kept scandalous persons under a severe discipline: for breach of sabbath, for an oath, or the least disorder in drunkenness, persons were cited before the church session, that consisted of ten or twelve of the chief of the parish, who, with the minister, had this care upon them, and were solemnly reproved for it. For fornication they were not only reproved before these, but there was a high place in the church called the stool or pillar of repentance, where they sate at the times of worship for three Lord's days, receiving admonitions, and making profession of repentance on all those days; which some did with many tears, and serious exhortations to all the rest, to take warning by their fall: for adultery they were to sit six months in that place, covered with sackcloth. These things had a grave appearance. Their faults and defects were not so conspicuous; they had a very scanty measure of learning, and a narrow compass in it; they were little men,

of a very indifferent size of capacity, and apt to fly out into great excess of passion and indiscretion; they were servile, and too apt to fawn upon, and flatter their admirers; they were affected in their deportment, and very apt to censure all who differed from them, and to believe and report whatsoever they heard to their prejudice; and they were superstitious and haughty. In their sermons they were apt to enlarge on the state of the present time, and to preach against the sins of princes and courts—a topic that naturally makes men popular: it has an appearance of courage; and the people are glad to hear those sins insisted on in which they perceive they have no share, and to believe that all the judgments of God come down by the means and procurement of other men's sins. But their opinions about the independence of the church and clergy on the civil power, and their readiness to stir up the people to tumults and wars, was that which begot so ill an opinion of them at this time in all men, that very few, who were not deeply engaged with them in these conceits, pitied them much under all the ill usage they now met with. I hope this is no impertinent nor ungrateful digression: it is a just and true account of these men and those times, from which a judicious reader will make good inferences. I will conclude this with a judicious answer that one of the wisest and best of them, Colvil, who succeeded Leightoun in the headship of the college of Edinburgh, made to the Earl of Midletoun, when he pressed him in the point of defensive arms to tell plainly his opinion, whether they were lawful or not. He said the question had been often put to him, and he had always declined to answer it; but to him he plainly said, he wished that kings and their ministers would believe them lawful, and so govern as men that expect to be resisted; but he wished that all their subjects would believe them to be unlawful, and so the world would be at quiet. 1662.

Prejudices infused against episcopacy.

I do now return to end the account of the state of that country at this time. The people were much troubled when so many of their ministers were turned out. Their ministers had, for some months before they were thus silenced, been infusing this into their people, both in public and private, that all that was designed in this change of church government was to destroy the power of godliness, and to

1662. give an impunity to vice; that prelacy was a tyranny in the church, set on by ambitious and covetous men, who aimed at nothing but authority and wealth, luxury and idleness; and that they intended to encourage vice, that they might procure to themselves a great party among the impious and immoral. The people, thus prepossessed, seeing the Earl of Midletoun, and all the train that followed him through those counties, running into excesses of all sorts, and railing at the very appearance of virtue and sobriety, were confirmed in the belief of all that their ministers had told them. What they had heard concerning Sharp's betraying those that had employed him, and the other bishops, who had taken the covenant, and had forced it on others, and now preached against it, openly owning that they had in so doing, gone against the express dictate of their own conscience, did very much heighten all their prejudices, and fixed them so in them, that it was scarce possible to conquer them afterwards. All this was out of measure increased by the new incumbents, who were put in the places of the ejected preachers, and were generally very mean and despicable in all respects: they were the worst preachers I ever heard; they were ignorant to a reproach, and many of them were openly vitious: they were a disgrace to their orders and the sacred functions, and were indeed the dreg and refuse of the northern parts. Those of them who arose above contempt or scandal, were men of such violent tempers, that they were as much hated as the others were despised. This was the fatal beginning of restoring episcopacy in Scotland, of which few of the bishops seemed to have any sense. Fairfoul, the most concerned, had none at all; for he fell into a paralytic state, in which he languished a year before he died. I have thus opened the first settlement in Scotland, of which I myself observed what was visible, and understood the more secret transactions from those who had such a share in them, that it was not possible for them to mistake them; and I had no reason to think they intended to deceive or misinform me.

1660. The affairs of England. I will, in the next place, change the climate, and give as particular an account as I can of the settlement of England, both in church and state; which, though it will be perhaps imperfect, and will in some parts be immethodical, yet I am well assured it will be found true; having

picked it up at several times from the Earl of Lauderdale, Sir Robert Murray, the Earl of Shaftsbury, the Earl of Clarendon the son of the lord chancellor, the Lord Hollis, and Sir Harbottle Grimstone, who was the speaker of the House of Commons, under whose protection I lived nine years when I was preacher at the Rolls, he being then master of the rolls. From such hands I could not be misled, when I laid all together, and considered what reason I had to make allowances for the different accounts that diversity of parties and interests may lead men to give, they too easily believing some things, and as easily rejecting others, as they stood affected. 1660.

After the King came over, no person in the House of Commons had the courage to move the offering propositions for any limitation of prerogative, or the defining of any doubtful points:—all was joy and rapture. If the King had applied himself to business, and had pursued those designs which he studied to retrieve all the rest of his reign, when it was too late, he had probably in those first transports carried every thing that he would have desired, either as to revenue or power: but he was so given up to pleasure, that he devolved the management of all his affairs on the Earl of Clarendon; who, as he had his breeding in the law, so he had all along declared himself for the ancient liberties of England, as well as for the rights of the crown. A domestic accident had happened to him, which heightened his zeal for the former: he, when he began to grow eminent in his profession, came down to see his aged father, a gentleman of Wiltshire; who one day, as they were walking in the fields together, told him, that men of his profession did often stretch law and prerogative, to the prejudice of the liberty of the subject, to recommend and advance themselves; so he charged him, if ever he grew to any eminence in his profession, that he should never sacrifice the laws and liberties of his country to his own interests, or to the will of a prince: he repeated this twice, and immediately he fell into a fit of an apoplexy, of which he died in a few hours. This the Earl of Clarendon told the Lady Ranelagh, who put him often in mind of it; and from her I had it.

He resolved not to stretch the prerogative beyond what it was before the wars; and would neither set aside the pe-

1660. tition of right, nor endeavour to raise the courts of the star chamber, or the high commission again, which could have been easily done, if he had set about it; nor did he think fit to move for the repeal of the act for triennial parliaments, till other matters were well settled. He took care, indeed, to have all the things that were extorted by the long parliament from King Charles I. to be repealed; and since the dispute of the power of the militia was the most important, and the most insisted on, he was very earnest to have that clearly determined for the future: but as to all the acts relating to property, or the just limitation of the prerogative, such as the matter of the ship-money, the tonnage and poundage, and the habeas corpus act, he did not touch on these: and as for the standing revenue, 1,200,000*l.* a year was all that was asked; and, though it was much more than any of our kings had formerly, yet it was readily granted; this was to answer all the ordinary expense of the government. It was believed, that if two millions had been asked, he could have carried it; but he had no mind to put the King out of the necessity of having recourse to his parliament. The King came afterwards to believe, that he could have raised both his authority and revenue much higher, but that he had no mind to carry it farther, or to trust him too much. Whether all these things could have been got at that time, or not, is above my conjecture; but this I know, that all the Earl of Clarendon's enemies, after his fall, said these things had been easily obtained, if he had taken any pains in the matter; but that he himself had no mind to it; and they infused this into the King, so that he believed it, and hated him mortally on that account; and in his difficulties afterwards, he said often, all those things might have been prevented if the Earl of Clarendon had been true to him.

Clarendon's just and moderate notions.

Venner's fury.

The King had not been many days at Whitehall, when one Venner, a violent fifth-monarchy man, who thought it was not enough to believe that Christ was to reign on earth, and to put the saints in the possession of the kingdom (an opinion that they were all unspeakably fond of), but added to this, that the saints were to take the kingdom themselves. He gathered some of the most furious of the party to a meeting in Coleman-street: there they concerted the day and the manner of their rising to set Christ on his throne,

as they called it; but withal they meant to manage the government in his name; and were so formal, that they had prepared standards and colours with their devices on them, and furnished themselves with very good arms; but when the day came, there was but a small appearance, not exceeding twenty. However, they resolved to venture out into the streets, and cry out, No King but Christ! Some of them seemed persuaded that Christ would come down and head them. They scoured the streets before them, and made a great progress. Some were afraid, and all were amazed at this piece of extravagance. They killed a great many, but were at last mastered by numbers; and were all either killed, or taken and executed. Upon this some troops of guards were raised; and there was a great talk of a design, as soon as the army was disbanded, to raise a force that should be so chosen and modelled, that the King might depend upon it; and that it should be so considerable, that there might be no reason to apprehend new tumults any more. The Earl of Southampton looked on a while; and when he saw how this design seemed to be entertained and magnified, he entered into a very free expostulation with the Earl of Clarendon about it: he said, they had felt the effects of a military government, though sober and religious, in Cromwell's army: he believed vitious and dissolute troops would be much worse; the King would grow found of them; and they would quickly become insolent and ungovernable; and then such men as he was must be only instruments to serve their ends. He said, he would not look on, and see the ruin of his country begun, and be silent;—a white staff should not bribe him. The Earl of Clarendon was persuaded he was in the right, and promised he would divert the King from any other force than what might be decent to make a shew with, and what might serve to disperse unruly multitudes. The Earl of Southampton said, if it went no farther he could bear it; but it would not be easy to fix such a number as would please our princes and not give jealousy. The Earl of Clarendon persuaded the King, that it was necessary for him to carry himself with great caution till the old army should be disbanded; for, if an ill humour got among them, they knew both their courage and their principles, which the present times had for a while a little suppressed; yet upon any just jealousy 1660.

1660. there might be great cause to fear new and more violent disorders. By these means the King was so wrought on, that there was no great occasion given for jealousy. The army was to be disbanded, but in such a manner, with so much respect, and so exact an account of arrears, and such gratuities, that it looked rather to be the dismissing them to the next opportunity, and a reserving them till there should be occasion for their service, than a breaking of them. They were certainly the bravest, the best disciplined, and the soberest army, that had ever been known in these latter ages; every soldier was able to do the functions of an officer. The court was in great quiet when they got rid of such a burden as lay on them from the fear of such a body of men. The guards and the new troops that were raised, were made up of such of the army as Monk recommended and answered for; and with that his great interest at court came to a stand: he was little considered afterwards.

The trial and execution of the regicides.

In one thing the temper of the nation appeared to be contrary to severe proceedings; for though the regicides were at that time odious beyond all expression, and the trials and executions of the first that suffered were run to by vast crowds, and all people seemed pleased with the sight, yet the odiousness of the crime grew at last to be so much flattened by the frequent executions, and by most of those who suffered, dying with much firmness and shew of piety, justifying all they had done, not without a seeming joy for their suffering on that account, that the King was advised not to proceed farther; at least not to have the scene so near the court as Charing-cross. It was indeed remarkable, that Peters, a sort of an enthusiastical buffoon preacher, though a very vitious man, who had been of great use to Cromwell, and had been outrageous in pressing the King's death, with the cruelty and rudeness of an inquisitor, was the man, of them all, that was the most sunk in his spirit, and could not, in any sort, bear his punishment: he had neither the honesty to repent of it, nor the strength of mind to suffer for it, as all the rest of them did: he was observed all the while to be drinking some cordial liquors to keep him from fainting. Harrison was the first that suffered; he was a fierce and bloody enthusiast: and it was believed, that while the army was in doubt, whether it was fitter to kill the King privately, or to bring him to an

open trial, that he offered, if a private way was settled on, to be the man that should do it; so he was begun with: but, however reasonable this might be in itself, it had a very ill effect; for he was a man of great heat and resolution, fixed in his principles, and so persuaded of them, that he never looked after any interests of his own, but had opposed Cromwell when he set up for himself. He went through all the indignities and severities of his execution, in which the letter of the law in cases of treason was punctually observed, with a calmness, or rather a cheerfulness, that astonished the spectators. He spoke very positively, that what they had done was the cause and work of God, which he was confident God would own and raise up again, how much soever it suffered at that time: upon this a report was spread, and generally believed, that he said, he himself should rise again; though the party denied that, and reported the words as I have set them down. One person escaped, as was reported, merely by his vices—Henry Martin, who had been a most violent enemy to monarchy; but all that he moved for was upon Roman or Greek principles: he never entered into matters of religion, but on design to laugh both at them and all morality; for he was both an impious and vicious man; and now in his imprisonment, he delivered himself up to vice and blasphemy. It was said, that this helped him to so many friends, that upon that very account he was spared. John Goodwin and Milton did also escape all censure, to the surprise of all people. Goodwin had so often not only justified, but magnified the putting the King to death, both in his sermons and books, that few thought he could have been either forgot or excused; for Peters and he were the only preachers that spoke of it in that strain: but Goodwin had been so zealous an Arminian, and had sown such division among all the sectaries upon these heads, that it was said this procured him friends: upon what account soever it was, he was not censured. Milton had appeared so boldly, though with much wit, and great purity and elegancy of style, against Salmasius and others, upon that argument of putting the King to death; and had discovered such violence against the late King and all the royal family, and against monarchy, that it was thought a strange omission if he was forgot, and an odd strain of clemency,

1660.

1660. if it was intended he should be forgiven: he was not excepted out of the act of indemnity: and afterwards he came out of his concealment, and lived many years much visited by all strangers, and much admired by all at home for the poems he writ, though he was then blind; chiefly that of Paradise Lost, in which there is a nobleness both of contrivance and execution, that, though he affected to write in blank verse without rhyme, and made many new and rough words, yet it was esteemed the beautifullest and perfectest poem that ever was writ, at least in our language.

1661. Vane's character. But as the sparing these persons was much censured, so on the other hand the putting Sir Henry Vane to death was as much blamed; for the declaration from Breda being full for an indemnity to all, except the regicides, he was comprehended in that; since, though he was for changing the government and deposing the King, yet he did not approve of the putting him to death, nor of the force put on the parliament, but did for some time, while these things were acted, withdraw from the scene. This was so represented by his friends, that an address was made by both houses on his behalf, to which the King gave a favourable answer, though in general words. So he reckoned that he was safe, that being equivalent to an act of parliament, though it wanted the necessary forms. Yet the great share he had in the attainder of the Earl of Strafford, and in the whole turn of affairs to the total change of government, but, above all, the great opinion that was had of his parts and capacity to embroil matters again, made the court think it necessary to put him out of the way. He was naturally a very fearful man; this one who knew him well told me, and gave me eminent instances of it. He had a head as darkened in his notions of religion as his mind was clouded with fear: for though he set up a form of religion in a way of his own, yet it consisted rather in a withdrawing from all other forms, than in any new or particular opinions or forms; from which he and his party were called Seekers, and seemed to wait for some new and clearer manifestations. In these meetings he preached and prayed often himself, but with so peculiar a darkness, that though I have sometimes taken pains to see if I could find out his meaning in his works, yet I could never reach it: and since many others have said the same, it may be rea-

sonable to believe he hid somewhat that was a necessary key to the rest. His friends told me he leaned to Origen's notion of an universal salvation of all, both of devils and the damned, and to the doctrine of pre-existence. When he saw his death was designed, he composed himself to it, with a resolution that surprised all who knew how little of that was natural to him. Some instances of this were very extraordinary, though they cannot be mentioned with decency. He was beheaded on Tower-hill, where a new and very indecent practice was begun. It was observed that the dying speeches of the regicides had left impressions on the hearers, that were not at all to the advantage of the government. So strains of a peculiar nature being expected from him, to prevent that, drummers were placed under the scaffold, who as soon as he began to speak of the public, upon a sign given, struck up with their drums;—this put him in no disorder: he desired they might be stopped, for he understood what was meant by it. Then he went through his devotions; and, as he was taking leave of those about him, he happening to say somewhat with relation to the times, the drums struck up a second time; so he gave over, and died with so much composedness, that it was generally thought the government had lost more than it had gained by his death.

1661.

And execution.

The act of indemnity passed with very few exceptions, at which the cavaliers were highly dissatisfied, and made great complaints of it. In the disposal of offices and places, as it was not possible to gratify all, so there was little regard had to men's merits or services. The King was determined to most of these by the cabal that met at Mrs. Palmer's lodgings. And though the Earl of Clarendon did often prevail with the King to alter the resolutions taken there, yet he was forced to let a great deal go that he did not like. He would never make applications to Mrs. Palmer, nor let any thing pass the seal in which she was named; as the Earl of Southampton would never suffer her name to be in the Treasury-books. Those virtuous ministers thought it became them to let the world see that they did not comply with the King in his vices; but whether the Earl of Clarendon spoke so freely to the King about his course of life, as was given out, I cannot tell. When the cavaliers saw they had not that share in

The King gave himself up to his pleasures.

1661.

places that they expected, they complained of it so highly that the Earl of Clarendon, to excuse the King's passing them by, was apt to beat down the value they set on their services. This laid the foundation of an implacable hatred in many of them, that was completed by the extent and comprehensiveness of the act of indemnity, which cut off their hopes of being reimbursed out of the fines, if not the confiscations of those who had, during the course of the wars, been on the parliament's side. It is true, the first parliament, called by way of derogation, the Convention, had been too much on that side not to secure themselves and their friends; so they took care to have the most comprehensive words put in it that could be thought of: but when the new parliament was called a year after, in which there was a design to set aside the act of indemnity, and to have brought in a new one, the King did so positively insist on his adhering to the act of indemnity, that the design of breaking into it was laid aside. The Earl of Clarendon owned it was his counsel. Acts or promises of indemnity, he thought, ought to be held sacred: a fidelity in the observation of them was the only foundation upon which any government could hope to quiet seditions or civil wars; and if people once thought that those promises were only made to deceive them, without an intention to observe them religiously, they would never for the future hearken to any treaty. He often said it was the making those promises had brought the King home, and it was the keeping them must keep him at home: so that whole work from beginning to end was entirely his. The angry men, that were thus disappointed of all their hopes, made a jest of the title of it, "An act of oblivion and of indemnity;" and said, the King had passed an act of oblivion for his friends, and of indemnity for his enemies. To load the Earl of Clarendon the more, it was given out that he advised the King to gain his enemies, since he was sure of his friends by their principles: with this he was often charged, though he always denied it. Whether the King fastened it upon him after he had disgraced him, to make him the more odious, I cannot tell. It is certain the King said many very hard things of him, for which he was much blamed; and in most of them he was but little believed.

The act of indemnity maintained.

It was natural for the King, upon his restoration, to look

out for a proper marriage. And it was soon observed that he was resolved not to marry a protestant. He pretended a contempt of the Germans, and of the northern crowns. France had no sister. He had seen the Duke of Orleans's daughters, and liked none of them. Spain had only two infantas; and as the eldest was married to the King of France, the second was to go to Vienna. So the house of Portugal only remained to furnish him a wife among the crowned heads. Monk began to hearken to a motion made him for this by a Jew that managed the concerns of Portugal, which were now given for lost, since they were abandoned by France by the treaty of the Pyrenees; in which it appears, by Cardinal Mazarin's letters, that he did entirely deliver up their concerns, which was imputed to his desire to please the Queen-mother of France, who, being a daughter of Spain, owned herself still to be in the interests of Spain in every thing in which France was not concerned, for in that case she pretended she was true to the crown of France. And this was the true secret of Cardinal Mazarin's carrying on that war so feebly as he did, to gratify the Queen-mother on the one hand, and his own covetousness on the other; for the less public expense was made, he had the greater occasions of enriching himself, which was all he thought on. The Portuguese being thus, as they thought, cast off by France, were very apprehensive of falling under the Castillians; who, how weak soever they were in opposition to France, yet were like to be too hard for them, when they had nothing else on their hands: so vast offers were made, if the King would marry their Infanta and take them under his protection. Monk was the more encouraged to entertain the proposition, because some pretended, that, in the beginning of the war of Portugal, King Charles had entered into a negociation for a marriage between his son and this infanta. And the veneration paid his memory was then so high, that every thing he had projected was esteemed sacred. Monk promised to serve the interests of Portugal: and that was, as Sir Robert Southwell told me, the first step made in that matter. Soon after the King came into England, an embassy of congratulation came from thence, with orders to negociate that business. The Spanish ambassador, who had a pretension of merit from the King in behalf of that

1662. The King's marriage.

1662. crown, since they had received and entertained him at Brussels, when France had thrown him off, set himself much against this match; and among other things affirmed, that the Infanta was incapable of having children:—but this was little considered. The Spaniards are not very scrupulous in affirming any thing that serves their ends, and this marriage was like to secure the kingdom of Portugal: so it was no wonder that he opposed it; and little regard was had to all that he said to break it.

An alliance proposed from France.

At this time Monsieur Fouquet was gaining an ascendant in the counsels of France, Cardinal Mazarin falling then into a languishing, of which he died a year after. He sent one over to the King with a project of an alliance between France and England. He was addressed first to the Earl of Clarendon, to whom he enlarged on all the heads of the scheme he had brought, of which the match with Portugal was a main article; and, to make all go down the better, Fouquet desired to enter into a particular friendship with the Earl of Clarendon, and sent him the offer of 10,000*l.* and assured him of the renewing the same present every year. The Lord Clarendon told him he would lay all that related to the King faithfully before him, and give him his answer in a little time; but for what related to himself, he said, he served a great and bountiful master, who knew well how to support and reward his servants: he would ever serve him faithfully; and, because he knew he must serve those from whom he accepted the hire, therefore he rejected the offer with great indignation. He laid before the King the heads of the proposed alliance, which required much consultation; but, in the next place, he told both the King and his brother what had been offered to himself. They both advised him to accept of it. Why, said he, have you a mind that I should betray you? The King answered, he knew nothing could corrupt him. Then, said he, you know me better than I do myself; for if I take the money I shall find the sweet of it, and study to have it continued to me—by deserving it. He told them how he had rejected the offer, and very seriously warned the King of the danger he saw he might fall into, if he suffered any of those who served him, to be once pensioners to other princes: those presents were made only to bias them in their counsels, and to discover secrets by their means; and if the King

gave way to it, the taking money would soon grow to a habit, and spread like an infection through the whole court. 1662.

The Duke of York's marriage.

As the motion for the match with Portugal was carried on, an incident of an extraordinary nature happened in the court. The Earl of Clarendon's daughter, being with child, and near her time, called upon the Duke of York to own his marriage with her. She had been maid of honour to the Princess Royal; and the Duke, who was even to his old age of an amorous disposition, tried to gain her to comply with his desires: she managed the matter with so much address, that in conclusion he married her. Her father did very solemnly protest that he knew nothing of the matter, till now that it broke out. The Duke thought to have shaken her from claiming it by great promises, and as great threatenings; but she was a woman of a great spirit: she said she was his wife, and would have it known that she was so, let him use her afterwards as he pleased. Many discourses were set about upon this occasion; but the King ordered some bishops and judges to peruse the proofs she had to produce; and they reported that, according to the doctrine of the gospel and the law of England, it was a good marriage: so it was not possible to break it, but by trying how far the matter could be carried against her, for marrying a person so near the King without his leave. The King would not break with the Earl of Clarendon; and so he told his brother he must drink as he brewed, and live with her whom he had made his wife. All the Earl of Clarendon's enemies rejoiced at this; for they reckoned, how much soever it seemed to raise him at present, yet it would raise envy so high against him, and make the King so jealous of him, as being more in his brother's interests than in his own, that they looked on it as that which would end in his ruin. And he himself thought so, as his son told me; for, as soon as he knew of it, and when he saw his son lifted up with it, he protested to him that he knew nothing of the matter till it broke out; but added, that he looked on it as that which must be all their ruin, sooner or later.

The Duke's character.

Upon this I will digress a little, to give an account of the Duke's character, whom I knew for some years so particularly, that I can say much upon my own knowledge. He was very brave in his youth, and so much magnified by Monsieur Turenne, that, till his marriage lessened him, he

1662. rcally clouded the King, and passed for the superior genius. He was naturally candid and sincere, and a firm friend, till affairs and his religion wore out all his first principles and inclinations. He had a great desire to understand affairs, and in order to that, he kept a constant journal of all that passed, of which he shewed me a great deal. The Duke of Buckingham gave me once a short but severe character of the two brothers; it was the more severe, because it was true. The King (he said) could see things if he would, and the Duke would see things if he could: he had no true judgment, and was soon determined by those whom he trusted, but was obstinate against all other advices. He was bred with high notions of the kingly authority, and laid it down for a maxim, that all who opposed the King were rebels in their hearts. He was perpetually in one amour or other, without being very nice in his choice; upon which the King said once, he believed his brother had his mistresses given him by his priests for penance. He gave me this account of his changing his religion:—when he escaped out of the hands of the Earl of Northumberland, who had the charge of his education trusted to him by the parliament, and had used him with great respect, all due care was taken, as soon as he got beyond sea, to form him to a strict adherence to the church of England: among other things, much was said of the authority of the church, and of the tradition from the apostles in support of episcopacy; so that when he came to observe that there was more reason to submit to the catholic church than to one particular church, and that other traditions might be taken on her word, as well as episcopacy was received among us, he thought the step was not great, but that it was very reasonable to go over to the church of Rome: and Doctor Steward having taught him to believe a real but inconceivable presence of Christ in the sacrament, he thought this went more than half way to transubstantiation. He said that a nun's advice to him, to pray every day, that if he was not in the right way, God would set him right, did make a great impression on him; but he never told me when or where he was reconciled. He suffered me to say a great deal to him on all these heads. I shewed the difference between submission and obedience in matters of order and indifferent things, and an implicit submission from

the belief of infallibility; I also shewed him the difference between a speculation of a mode of Christ's presence, when it rested in an opinion, and an adoration founded on it: though the opinion of such a presence was wrong, there was no great harm in that alone, but the adoration of an undue object was idolatry. He suffered me to talk much and often to him on these heads, but I plainly saw it made no impression; and all that he seemed to intend by it was, to make use of me as an instrument to soften the aversion that people began to be possessed with to him. He was naturally eager and revengeful; and was against the taking off any that set up in opposition to the measures of the court, and who by that means grew popular in the House of Commons; he was for rougher methods. He continued for many years dissembling his religion, and seemed zealous for the church of England; but it was chiefly on design to hinder all propositions that tended to unite us among ourselves. He was a frugal Prince, and brought his court into method and magnificence, for he had 100,000*l.* a-year allowed him. He was made high admiral; and he came to understand all the concerns of the sea very particularly. He had a very able secretary about him, Sir William Coventry; a man of great notions and eminent virtues, the best speaker in the House of Commons, and capable of bearing the chief ministry, as it was once thought he was very near it. The Duke found all the great seamen had a deep tincture from their education; they both hated popery and loved liberty; they were men of severe tempers, and kept good discipline: but in order to the putting the fleet into more confident hands, the Duke began a method of sending pages of honour, and other young persons of quality, to be bred to the sea; and these were put in command as soon as they were capable of it, if not sooner. This discouraged many of the old seamen, when they saw in what a channel advancement was like to go; who upon that left the service, and went and commanded merchantmen. By this means the virtue and discipline of the navy is much lost. It is true, we have a breed of many gallant men, who do distinguish themselves in action, but it is thought the nation has suffered much by the vices and disorders of those captains, who have risen by their quality more than by merit or service. 1662.

1662.

The Dutchess's character.

The Dutchess of York was a very extraordinary woman: she had a great knowledge, and a lively sense of things: she soon understood what belonged to a princess, and took state on her rather too much. She writ well, and had begun the Duke's life, of which she shewed me a volume: it was all drawn from his journal, and he intended to have employed me in carrying it on. She was bred to great strictness in religion, and practised secret confession: Morley told me he was her confessor. She began at twelve years old, and continued under his direction, till, upon her father's disgrace, he was put from the court. She was generous and friendly, but was too severe an enemy.

The Duke of Gloucester's character.

The King's third brother, the Duke of Gloucester, was of a temper different from his two brothers. He was active, and loved business; was apt to have particular friendships, and had an insinuating temper, which was generally very acceptable. The King loved him much better than the Duke of York: but he was uneasy when he saw there was no post left for him, since Monk was general; so he spoke to the Earl of Clarendon, that he might be made lord treasurer. But he told him it was a post below his dignity: he would not be put off with that, for he could not bear an idle life, nor to see his brother at the head of the fleet, when he himself had neither business nor dependence. But the mirth and entertainments of that time raised his blood so high, that he took the small pox, of which he died, much lamented by all, but most particularly by the King; who was never in his whole life seen so much troubled, as he was on that occasion. Those who would not believe he had much tenderness in his nature, imputed this rather to his jealousy of the brother that survived, since he had now lost the only person that could balance him. Not long after him, the Princess Royal died likewise of the small pox, but was not much lamented. She had lived in her widowhood for some years with great reputation, kept a decent court, and supported her brothers very liberally, and lived within bounds. But her mother, who had the art of making herself believe any thing she had a mind to, upon a conversation with the Queen-mother of France, fancied the King of France might be inclined to marry her; so she writ to her to come to Paris. In order to that, she made

an equipage far above what she could support: so she ran herself into debt, sold all her jewels, and some estates that were in her power as her son's guardian; and was not only disappointed of that vain expectation, but fell into some misfortunes, that lessened the reputation she had formerly lived in. Upon her death it might have been expected, both in justice and gratitude, that the King would in a most particular manner have taken her son, the young Prince of Orange, into his protection: but he fell into better hands; for his grandmother became his guardian, and took care both of his estate and his education. 1662.

The prospect of the royal family much changed.

Thus two of the branches of the royal family were cut off soon after the Restoration: and so little do the events of things answer the first appearances, that a royal family of three princes and two princesses, all young and graceful persons, that promised a numerous issue, did moulder away so fast, that now, while I am writing, all is reduced to the person of the Queen, and the Dutchess of Savoy. The King had a very numerous issue, though none by his Queen. The Duke had by both his wives, and some irregular amours, a very numerous issue. And the present Queen has had a most fruitful marriage as to issue, though none of them survive. The Princess Henriette was so pleased with the diversion of the French court, that she was glad to go thither again to be married to that King's brother.

Schomberg went through England to Portugal.

As the treaty with Portugal went on, France did engage in the concerns of that crown, though they had by treaty promised the contrary to the Spaniards. To excuse their perfidy, Count Schomberg, a German by birth, and a calvinist by his religion, was ordered to go thither, as one prevailed with by the Portugal ambassador, and not as sent over by the orders of the court of France. He passed through England to concert with the King the matters of Portugal, and the supply that was to be sent thither from England. He told me, the King had admitted him into great familiarities with him at Paris. He had known him first at the Hague: for he was the Prince of Orange's particular favourite; but had so great a share in the last violent actions of his life, seizing the states, and the attempt upon Amsterdam, that he left the service upon his death; and gained so great a reputation in France, that, after the Prince of Conde and Turenne, he

1662. was thought the best general they had. He had much free discourse with the King, though he found his mind was so turned to mirth and pleasure, that he seemed scarce capable of laying any thing to heart. He advised him to set up for the head of the protestant religion; for though, he said to him, he knew he had not much religion, yet his interests led him to that. It would keep the princes of Germany in a great dependence on him, and make him the umpire of all their affairs; and would procure him great credit with the hugonots of France, and keep that crown in perpetual fear of him. He advised the King to employ the military men that had served under Cromwell, whom he thought the best officers he had ever seen; and he was sorry to see they were dismissed, and that a company of wild young men were those the King relied on. But what he pressed most on the King, as the business then in agitation, was concerning the sale of Dunkirk: the Spaniards pretended it ought to be restored to them, since it was taken from them by Cromwell, when they had the King and his brothers in their armies; but that was not much regarded. The French pretended, that by their agreement with Cromwell, he was only to hold it till they had repaid the charge of the war; therefore they, offering to lay that down, ought to have the place delivered to them. The King was in no sort bound by this. So the matter under debate was, whether it ought to be kept or sold? The military men, who were believed to be corrupted by France, said the place was not tenable; that in time of peace it would put the King to a great charge; and in time of war it would not quit the cost of keeping it. The Earl of Clarendon said, he understood not those matters, but appealed to Monk's judgment, who did positively advise the letting it go for the sum that France offered. To make the business go the easier, the King promised that he would lay up all the money in the Tower, and that it should not be touched but upon extraordinary occasions. Schomberg advised, in opposition to all this, that the King should keep it; for, considering the naval power of England, it could not be taken. He knew, that though France spoke big, as if they would break with England unless that was delivered up, yet they were far from the thoughts of it. He had considered the place well, and he was sure it could never be taken as long as England was

Dunkirk sold to the French.

master of the sea; the holding it would keep both France and Spain in a dependence on the King: but he was singular in that opinion: so it was sold, and all the money that was paid for it was immediately squandered away among the mistress's creatures. 1662.

By this the King lost his reputation abroad: the court was believed venal; and because the Earl of Clarendon was in greatest credit, the blame was cast chiefly on him; though his son assured me, he kept himself out of that affair entirely.* The cost bestowed on that place since that time, and the great prejudice we have suffered by it, has made that sale to be often reflected on very severely: but it was pretended, that Tangier, which was offered as a part of the portion that the Infanta of Portugal was to bring with her, was a place of much greater consequence. Its situation in the map is indeed very eminent; and if Spain had been then in a condition to put any restraint on our trade, it had been of great use to us, especially if the making a mole there had been more practicable than it proved to be. It was then spoken of in the court in the highest strains of flattery. It was said, this would not only give us the entire command of the Mediterranean trade, but it would be a place of safety for a squadron to be always kept there, for securing our West and East India trade: and such mighty things were said of it, as if it had been reserved for the King's reign, to make England as glorious abroad, as it was happy at home: though since that time we have never been able, neither by force nor treaty, to get ground enough round the town from the Moors, to maintain the garrison: but every man that was employed there studied only his own interest, and how to rob the King. If the money that was laid out in the mole at different times, had been raised successively, as fast as the work could be carried on, it might have been made a very valuable place. But there were so many discontinuings, and so many new undertakings, that after an immense charge the court grew weary of it, and in the year 1638 they sent a

Tangier a part of the Queen's portion.

* By Monsieur D'Estrade's Letters, published some years after the author's death, it should seem, that the Earl of Clarendon had a considerable share in that negociation.

1662. squadron of ships to bring away the garrison, and to destroy all the works.

This matter of the King's marriage with the Infanta of Portugal was at last concluded. The Earl of Sandwich went for her, and was the King's proxy in the nuptial ceremony. The King communicated the matter both to the parliament of England, and Scotland. And so strangely were people changed, that though they all had seen the mischievous effects of a popish queen in the former reign, yet not one person moved against it in either parliament, except the Earl of Cassilis in Scotland, who moved for an address to the King to marry a protestant. He had but one to second him; so entirely were men run from one extreme to another.

The manner of the King's marriage.

When the Queen was brought over, the King met her at Winchester in summer, 1662: the Archbishop of Canterbury came to perform the ceremony; but the Queen was bigotted to such a degree, that she would not say the words of matrimony, nor bear the sight of the Archbishop. The King said the words hastily, and the Archbishop pronounced them married persons. Upon this some thought afterwards to have dissolved the marriage, as a marriage only *de facto*, in which no consent had been given. But the Duke of York told me, they were married by the Lord Aubigny according to the Roman ritual, and that he himself was one of the witnesses; and he added, that a few days before he told me this, the Queen had said to him, that she heard some intended to call her marriage in question, and that if that was done, she must call on him as one of her witnesses to prove it. I saw the letter that the King writ to the Earl of Clarendon the day after their marriage, by which it appeared very plainly that the marriage was consummated, and that the King was well pleased with her. The King himself told me, she had been with child; and Willis the great physician told Dr. Lloyd, from whom I had it, that she had once miscarried of a child, which was so far advanced, that if it had been carefully looked to, the sex might have been distinguished. But she proved a barren wife, and was a woman of mean appearance, and of no agreeable temper: so that the King never considered her much, and she made ever after but a very mean figure. For some time the King carried things decently, and did

not visit his mistress openly; but he grew weary of that restraint, and shook it off so entirely, that he had ever after that, mistresses to the end of his life; to the great scandal of the world, and to the particular reproach of all that served about him in the church. He usually came from his mistress's lodgings to church, even on sacrament days: he held, as it were, a court in them, and all his ministers made applications to them. Only the Earls of Clarendon and Southampton would never so much as make a visit to any of them, which was maintaining the decencies of virtue in a very solemn manner. The Lord Clarendon put the justice of the nation in very good hands; and employed some who had been on the bench in Cromwell's time, the famous Sir Matthew Hale in particular.

1662. The King lived in an avowed course of lewdness.

The business of Ireland was a harder province. The Irish that had been in the rebellion had made a treaty with the Duke of Ormond, then acting in the King's name, though he had no legal power under the great seal, the King being then a prisoner; but the Queen-mother got, as they gave out, the crown of France to become the guarantee for the performance, By the treaty they were to furnish him with an army, to adhere to the King's interests, and serve under the Duke of Ormond; and for this they were to be pardoned all that was past, to have the open exercise of their religion, and a free admission into all employments, and to have a free parliament without the curb of Poyning's law. But after the misfortune at Dublin, they set up a supreme council again and refused to obey the Duke of Ormond; in which the pope's nuncio conducted them. After some disputes, and that the Duke of Ormond saw he could not prevail with them to be commanded by him any more, he left Ireland; and Cromwell came over, and reduced the whole country, and made a settlement of the confiscated estates, for the pay of the undertakers for the Irish war, and of the officers that had served in it. The King had in his declaration from Breda promised to confirm the settlement of Ireland. So now a great debate arose between the native Irish and the English settled in Ireland: the former claimed the articles that the Duke of Ormond had granted them; he, in answer to this, said they had broken them first on their part, and so had forfeited their claim to them. They seemed to rely much on the court of

1660. The settlement of Ireland.

1660. France, and on the whole popish party abroad, as they were the most considerable branch of it here at home. But England did naturally incline to support the English interests: and, as that interest in Ireland had gone in very unanimously, to the design of the King's restoration, and had merited much on that account, so they drew over the Duke of Ormond to join with them, in order to an act confirming Cromwell's settlement. Only a court of claims was set up, to examine the pretensions of some of the Irish, who had special excuses for themselves, why they should not be included in the general forfeiture of the nation:—some were under age; others were travelling, or serving abroad; and many had distinguished themselves in the King's service, when he was in Flanders, chiefly under the Duke of York; who pleaded much for them, and was always depended on by them, as their chief patron. It was thought most equitable to send over men from England, who were not concerned in the interests or passions of the parties of that kingdom, to try those claims. Their proceedings were much cried out on; for it was said, that every man's claim who could support it with a good present, was found good, and that all the members of that court came back very rich: so that, though the Irish thought they had not justice enough done them, the English said they had too much. When any thing was to be proved by witnesses, sets of them were hired to depose according to the instructions given them. This was then cried out on, as a new scene of wickedness, that was then opened, and which must in the end subvert all justice and good government. The infection has spread since that time, and crossed the sea: and the danger of being ruined by false witnesses has become so terrible, that there is no security against it, but from the sincerity of juries: and if these come to be packed, then all men may be soon at mercy, if a wicked government should set on a violent prosecution, as has happened oftener than once. I am not instructed enough in the affairs of Ireland, to carry this matter into farther particulars. The English interest was managed chiefly by two men of a very indifferent reputation, the Earls of Anglesey and Orrery. The chief manager of the Irish interest was Richard Talbot, one of the Duke's bedchamber men, who had much cunning, and had the secret both of his master's pleasures, and of his religion,

for some years, and was afterwards raised by him to be Earl and Duke of Tyrconnel. Thus I have gone over the several branches of the settlement of matters after the Restoration. I have reserved the affairs of the church last, as those about which I have taken the most pains to be well informed; and which I do, therefore, offer to the reader with some assurance; and on which I hope due reflection will be made. 1660.

The bishops who had then the greatest credit.

At the Restoration, Juxon, the ancientest and most eminent of the former bishops, who had assisted the late King, in his last hours, was promoted to Canterbury, more out of decency than that he was then capable to fill that post; for as he was never a great divine, so he was now superannuated: though others have assured me, that after some discourses with the King, he was so much struck with what he observed in him, that upon that he lost both heart and hope. The King treated him with outward respect, but had no great regard to him. Sheldon and Morley were the men that had the greatest credit. Sheldon was esteemed a learned man before the wars; but he was now engaged so deep in politics, that scarce any prints of what he had been remained. He was a very dexterous man in business, had a great quickness of apprehension, and a very true judgment. He was a generous and charitable man: he had a great pleasantness of conversation, perhaps too great: he had an art, that was peculiar to him, of treating all that came to him in a most obliging manner; but few depended much on his professions of friendship. He seemed not to have a deep sense of religion, if any at all; and spoke of it most commonly as of an engine of government, and a matter of policy: by this means the King came to look on him as a wise and honest clergyman. Sheldon was first made Bishop of London, and was, upon Juxon's death, promoted to Canterbury. Morley had been first known to the world as a friend of the Lord Falkland's; and that was enough to raise a man's character: he had continued for many years in the Lord Clarendon's family, and was his particular friend: he was a Calvinist with relation to the Arminian points, and was thought a friend to the puritans before the wars; but he took care, after his promotion, to free himself from all suspicion of that kind. He was a pious and charitable man, of a very exemplary life;

1660. but extremely passionate, and very obstinate. He was first made Bishop of Worcester. Doctor Hammond, for whom that see was designed, died a little before the Restoration, which was an unspeakable loss to the church; for, as he was a man of great learning, and of most eminent merit, he having been the person that, during the bad times, had maintained the cause of the church in a very singular manner, so he was a very moderate man in his temper, though with a high principle; and probably he would have fallen into healing counsels. He was also much set on reforming abuses, and for raising in the clergy a due sense of the obligations they lay under: but by his death Morley was advanced to Worcester; and not long after he was removed to Winchester, void by Duppa's death; who had been the King's tutor, though no way fit for that post; but he was a meek and humble man, and much loved for the sweetness of his temper; and would have been more esteemed, if he had died before the Restoration; for he made not that use of the great wealth that flowed in upon him that was expected. Morley was thought always the honester man of the two, as Sheldon was certainly the abler man.

Debates concerning the uniting with the presbyterians.

The first point in debate was, whether concessions should be made, and pains taken, to gain the dissenters or not, especially the presbyterians: the Earl of Clarendon was much for it; and got the King to publish a declaration, soon after his restoration, concerning ecclesiastical affairs, to which, if he had stood, very probably the greatest part of them might have been gained: but the bishops did not approve of this; and after the service they did that Lord, in the Duke of York's marriage, he would not put any hardship on those who had so signally obliged him. This disgusted the Lord Southampton, who was for carrying on the design, that had been much talked of during the wars, of moderating matters, both with relation to the government of the church, and the worship and ceremonies; which created some coldness between him and the Earl of Clarendon, when the lord chancellor went off from those designs. The consideration that those bishops and their party had in the matter was this; the presbyterians were possessed of most of the great benefices in the church, chiefly in the city of London, and in the two universities.

It is true, all that had come into the room of those who were turned out by the parliament, or by the visitors sent by them, were removed by the course of law, as men that were illegally possessed of other men's rights; and that even where the former incumbents were dead, because a title originally wrong was still wrong in law: but there were a great many of them in very eminent posts, who were legally possessed of them. Many of these, chiefly in the city of London, had gone into the design of the Restoration in so signal a manner, and with such success, that they had great merit, and a just title to very high preferment. Now, as there remained a great deal of the old animosity against them for what they had done during the wars, so it was said, it was better to have a schism out of the church than within it; and that the half conformity of the puritans before the war, had set up a faction in every city and town between the lecturers and the incumbents; that the former took all methods to render themselves popular, and to raise the benevolence of their people, which was their chief subsistence, by disparaging the government both in church and state. They had also many stories among them of the credit they had in the elections of parliament-men, which they infused in the King, to possess him with the necessity of having none to serve in the church, but persons that should be firmly tied to his interest, both by principle, and by subscriptions and oaths. It is true the joy then spread through the nation had got at this time a new parliament to be elected, of men so high and so hot, that unless the court had restrained them, they would have carried things much farther than they did against all that had been concerned in the late wars: but they were not to expect such success at all times; therefore they thought it was necessary to make sure work at this time; and, instead of using methods to bring in the sectaries, they resolved rather to seek the most effectual ones for casting them out, and bringing a new set of men into the church. This took with the King; at least it seemed to do so: but, though he put on an outward appearance of moderation, yet he was in another and deeper-laid design, to which the heat of these men proved subservient, for bringing in of popery. A popish Queen was a great step to keep it in countenance at court, and to have a great many priests going about the court making converts. 1660.

1660. It was thought a toleration was the only method for setting it a going all the nation over; and nothing could make a toleration for popery pass, but the having great bodies of men put out of the church, and put under severe laws, which should force them to move for a toleration, and should make it reasonable to grant it to them; and it was resolved that whatever should be granted of that sort, should go in so large a manner, that papists should be comprehended within it; so the papists had this generally spread among them, that they should oppose all propositions for comprehension, and should animate the church party to maintain their ground against all the sectaries; and in that point they seemed zealous for the church: but, at the same time, they spoke of toleration as necessary both for the peace and quiet of the nation, and for the encouragement of trade: and with this the Duke was so possessed, that he declared himself a most violent enemy to comprehension, and as zealous for toleration. The King being thus resolved on fixing the terms of conformity to what they had been before the war, without making the least abatement or alteration, they carried on still an appearance of moderation, till the strength of the parties should appear in the new parliament.

A treaty in the Savoy. So, after the declaration was set out, a commission was granted to twelve of a side, with nine assistants to each side, who were appointed to meet at the Savoy, and to consider on the ways of uniting both sides. At their first meeting, Sheldon told them that those of the church had not desired this meeting, as being satisfied with the legal establishment, and therefore they had nothing to offer; but it belonged to the other side, who moved for alterations, to offer both their exceptions to the laws in being, and the alterations that they proposed. He told them they were to lay all they had to offer before them at once, for they would not engage to treat about any one particular till they saw how far their demands went; and he said that all was to be transacted in writing, though the others insisted on an amicable conference, which was at first denied, yet some hopes were given of allowing it at last. Papers were upon this given in. The presbyterians moved that Bishop Usher's reduction should be laid down as a ground-work to treat on; that bishops should not govern their diocese by their

single authority, nor depute it to lay officers in their courts but should, in matters of ordination and jurisdiction, take along with them the counsel and concurrence of the presbyters. They did offer several exceptions to the liturgy, against the many responses by the people; and they desired all might be made one continued prayer: they desired that no lessons should be taken out of the apocryphal books; that the psalms used in the daily service should be according to the new translation. They excepted to many parts of the office of baptism, that import the inward regeneration of all that were baptized. But as they proposed these amendments, so they did also offer a liturgy new drawn by Mr. Baxter. They insisted mainly against kneeling at the sacrament of the Lord's supper, chiefly against the imposing it, and moved that the posture might be left free; and that the use of the surplice, of the cross in baptism, of godfathers being the sponsors in baptism, and of the holy days, might be abolished. Sheldon saw well what the effect would be of putting them to make all their demands at once: the number of them raised a mighty outcry against them, as people that could never be satisfied; but nothing gave so great an advantage against them as their offering a new liturgy. In this they were divided among themselves; some were for insisting only on a few important things, reckoning that if they were gained, and a union followed upon that, it would be easier to gain other things afterwards. But all this was overthrown by Mr. Baxter, who was a man of great piety; and if he had not meddled in too many things, would have been esteemed one of the learned men of the age: he writ near two hundred books; of these, three are large folios: he had a very moving and pathetical way of writing, and was his whole life long a man of great zeal and much simplicity; but was most unhappily subtle and metaphysical in every thing. There was a great submission paid to him by the whole party; so he persuaded them, that from the words of the commission, they were bound to offer every thing that they thought might conduce to the good or peace of the church, without considering what was like to be obtained, or what effect their demanding so much might have, in irritating the minds of those who were then the superior body in strength and number. All the whole matter was at last reduced to one single point—whether

1660.

1660. was lawful to determine the certain use of things indifferent in the worship of God? The bishops held them to that point, and pressed them to shew that any of the things imposed were of themselves unlawful. The presbyterians declined this; but affirmed that other circumstances might make it become unlawful to settle a peremptory law about things indifferent, which they applied chiefly to kneeling in the sacrament; and stood upon it that a law, which excluded all that did not kneel from the Sacrament, was unlawful, as a limitation in the point of communion put on the laws of Christ, which ought to be the only condition of those who had a right to it. Upon this point there was a free conference, that lasted some days. The two men that had the chief management of the debate were the most unfit to heal matters, and the fittest to widen them, that could have been found out. Baxter was the opponent, and Gunning was the respondent; who was afterwards advanced, first to Chichester, and then to Ely. He was a man of great reading, and noted for a special subtilty of arguing; all the arts of sophistry were made use of by him on all occasions, in as confident a manner as if they had been sound reasoning: he was a man of an innocent life; unweariedly active to very little purpose: he was much set on the reconciling us with popery in some points; and because the charge of idolatry seemed a bar to all thoughts of reconciliation with them, he set himself with very great zeal to clear the church of Rome of idolatry. This made many suspect him as inclining to go over to them; but he was far from it, and was a very honest, sincere man, but of no sound judgment, and of no prudence in affairs: he was for our conforming in all things to the rules of the primitive church, particularly in praying for the dead, in the use of oil, with many other rituals: he formed many in Cambridge upon his own notions, who have carried them perhaps farther than he intended. Baxter and he spent some days in much logical arguing, to the diversion of the town, who thought here were a couple of fencers engaged in disputes, that could never be brought to an end, nor have any good effect. In conclusion, this commission being limited to such a number of days came to an end before any one thing was agreed on. The bishops insisted on the laws that were still in force, to which they would admit of no exception, unless it was proved

that the matter of those laws was sinful. They charged the presbyterians with having made a schism, upon a charge against the church, for things which now they themselves could not call sinful. They said, there was no reason to gratify such a sort of men in any thing: one demand granted would draw on many more: all authority, both in church and state, was struck at by the position they had insisted on—that it was not lawful to impose things indifferent, since they seemed to be the only proper matter in which human authority could interpose: so this furnished an occasion to expose them as enemies to all order. Things had been carried at the Savoy with great sharpness and many reflections; Baxter said once, such things would offend many good men in the nation. Stearn, the Archbishop of York, upon that took notice that he would not say kingdom, but nation, because he would not acknowledge a king. Of this great complaints were made, as an indecent return for the zeal they had shewn in the Restoration. 1660.

The conference broke up without doing any good: it did rather hurt, and heightened the sharpness that was then in people's minds to such a degree, that it needed no addition to raise it higher. The presbyterians laid their complaints before the King, but little regard was had to them; and now all the concern that seemed to employ the bishops' thoughts was, not only to make no alteration on their account, but to make the terms of conformity much stricter than they had been before the war. So it was resolved to maintain conformity to the height, and to put lecturers in the same condition with the incumbents, as to oaths and subscriptions; and to oblige all persons to subscribe an unfeigned assent and consent to all and every particular contained and prescribed in the book of Common Prayer. Many who thought it lawful to conform in submission yet scrupled at this, as importing a particular approbation of every thing; and great distinction was made between a conformity in practice, and so full and distinct an assent. Yet men got over that, as importing no more but a consent of obedience; for though the words of the subscription, which were also to be publicly pronounced before the congregation, declaring the person's unfeigned assent and consent, seemed to import this, yet the clause of the act that enjoined 1661. The terms of conformity made harder.

1661. this, carried a clear explanation of it; for it enacted this declaration as an assent and consent to the use of all things contained in the book. Another subscription was enacted, with relation to the league and covenant, by which they were required to declare it unlawful, upon any pretence whatsoever, to take arms against the King, renouncing the traitorous position of taking arms by his authority against his person, or those commissioned by him, together with a declaration, that no obligation lay on them, or any other person, from the league or covenant, to endeavour any change or alteration of government in church and state, and that the covenant was in itself an unlawful oath. This was contrived against all the old men, who had both taken the covenant themselves and had pressed it upon others. So they were now to own themselves very guilty in that matter: and those who thought it might be lawful, upon great and illegal provocation, to resist unjust invasions on the laws and liberties of the subjects, excepted to the subscription, though it was scarce safe for any at that time to have insisted on that point; some thought, that since the King had taken the covenant, he at least was bound to stand to it.

The act of uniformity.

Another point was fixed by the act of uniformity, which was more at large formerly: those who came to England from the foreign churches, had not been required to be ordained among us; but now all that had not episcopal ordination were made incapable of holding any ecclesiastical benefice. Some few alterations were made in the liturgy by the bishops themselves: a few new collects were made, as the prayer for all conditions of men, and the general thanksgiving. A collect was also drawn for the parliament, in which a new epithet was added to the King's title that gave great offence, and occasioned much indecent raillery; he was styled our most religious King. It was not easy to give a proper sense to this, and to make it go well down; since, whatever the signification of religion might be in the Latin word, as importing the sacredness of the King's person, yet in the English language it bore a signification that was no way applicable to the King; and those who took great liberties with him have often asked him, what must all his people think when they heard him prayed for as their most religious King? Some other lesser

additions were made; but care was taken that nothing should be altered, as it had been moved by the presbyterians, for it was resolved to gratify them in nothing. One important addition was made, chiefly by Gawden's men; he pressed that a declaration explaining the reasons of their kneeling at the sacrament, which had been in King Edward's liturgy, but was left out in Queen Elizabeth's time, should be again set where it had once been. The papists were highly offended when they saw such an express declaration made against the real presence, and the Duke told me that when he asked Sheldon how they came to declare against a doctrine, which he had been instructed was the doctrine of the church, Sheldon answered, ask Gawden about it, who is a bishop of your own making; for the King had ordered his promotion for the service he had done. The convocation that prepared those alterations, as they added some new holy days, St. Barnabas, and the conversion of St. Paul, so they took in more lessons out of the Apocrypha, in particular the story of Bell and the Dragon: new offices were also drawn for two new days, the 30th of January, called King Charles the Martyr, and the 29th of May, the day of the King's birth and return. Sancroft drew for these some offices of a very high strain. Yet others of a more moderate strain were preferred to them; but he, coming to be advanced to the see of Canterbury, got his offices to be published by the King's authority, in a time when so high a style as was in them did not sound well in the nation. Such care was taken in the choice and returns of the members of the convocation, that every thing went among them as was directed by Sheldon and Morley. When they had prepared all their alterations, they offered them to the King, who sent them to the House of Commons, upon which the act of uniformity was prepared by Keeling, afterwards lord chief justice. 1661.

When it was brought into the House, many did apprehend that so severe an act might have ill effects, and began to abate of their first heat; upon which reports were spread, and much aggravated as they were reported to the House of Commons, of the plots of the presbyterians in several counties. Many were taken up on those reports; but none were ever tried for them: so the thing being let fall, it has been given out since that these were forged by the direc-

1661. tion of some hot spirits, who might think such arts were necessary to give an alarm, and by rendering the party odious, to carry so severe an act against them. The Lord Clarendon himself was charged as having directed this piece of artifice; but I could never see any ground for fastening it on him, though there were great appearances of foul dealing among some of the fiercer sort. The act passed by no great majority; and by it all who did not conform to the liturgy by the 24th of August, St. Bartholomew's day, in the year 1662, were deprived of all ecclesiastical benefices, without leaving any discretional power with the King in the execution of it, and without making provision for the maintenance of those who should be so deprived; a severity neither practised by Queen Elizabeth in the enacting her liturgy, nor by Cromwell in ejecting the royalists, in both which a fifth part of the benefice was reserved for their subsistence. St. Bartholomew's day was pitched on, that, if they were then deprived, they should lose the profits of the whole year, since the tithes are commonly due at Michaelmas. The presbyterians remembered what a St. Bartholomew's had been held at Paris ninety years before, which was the day of that massacre, and did not stick to compare the one to the other. The book of Common Prayer, with the new corrections, was that to which they were to subscribe: but the corrections were so long a preparing, and the vast number of copies, above two thousand, that were to be wrought off for all the parish churches of England, made the impression go on so slowly that there were few books set out to sale when the day came; so many that were well affected to the church, but that made conscience of subscribing to a book that they had not seen, left their benefices on that very account. Some made a journey to London on purpose to see it: with so much precipitation was that matter driven on, that it seemed expected that the clergy should subscribe implicitly to a book they had never seen. This was done by too many, as I was informed by some of the bishops. But the presbyterians were now in great difficulties. They had many meetings and much disputing about conformity. Reynolds accepted of the bishoprick of Norwich: but Calamy and Baxter refused the sees of Litchfield and Hereford; and about two thousand of them fell under the

parliamentary deprivation, as they gave out.—The numbers have been much controverted. This raised a grievous outcry over the nation, though it was less considered at that time than it would have been at any other. Baxter told me, that had the terms of the King's declaration been stood to, he did not believe that above three hundred of these would have been so deprived. Some few, and but few, of the episcopal party were troubled at this severity, or apprehensive of the very ill effects it was like to have. Here were many men, much valued, some on better grounds, and others on worse, who were now cast out ignominiously; reduced to great poverty, provoked by much spiteful usage, and cast upon those popular practices that both their principles and their circumstances seemed to justify—of forming separate congregations, and of diverting men from the public worship, and from considering their successors as the lawful pastors of those churches in which they had served. The blame of all this fell heaviest on Sheldon. The Earl of Clarendon was charged with his having entertained the presbyterians with hopes and good words, while he was all the while carrying on, or at least giving way to the bishops' project. When the convocation had gone through the book of Common Prayer, it was in the next place proposed, that, according to a clause in the King's licence, they should consider the canons of the church. They had it then in their power to have reformed many abuses, and particularly to have provided an effectual remedy to the root of all those which arise from the poor maintenance that is reserved to the incumbents. Almost all the leases of the church estates over England were fallen in, there having been no renewal for twenty years. The leases for years were determined; and the wars had carried off so many men that most of the leases for lives were fallen into the incumbents hands, so that the church estates were in them; and the fines raised by the renewing the leases rose to about a million and a half. It was an unreasonable thing to let those who were now promoted carry off so great a treasure. If the half had been applied to the buying of tithes or glebes for small vicarages, here a foundation had been laid down for a great and effectual reformation. In some sees forty or fifty thousand pound was raised, and applied to the enriching the bishops'

1661.

The great fines then raised on the church estates ill applied.

1661. families. Something was done to churches and colleges, in particular to St. Paul's in London; and a noble collection was made for redeeming all the English slaves that were in any part of Barbary: but this fell far short of what might have been expected. In this the Lord Clarendon was heavily charged, as having shown that he was more the bishops' friend than the church's. It is true, the law made those fines belong to the incumbents; but such an extraordinary occasion deserved that a law should be made on purpose. What the bishops did with those great fines was a pattern to all the lower dignitaries, who generally took more care of themselves than of the church. The men of merit and service were loaded with many livings and many dignities. With this great accession of wealth there broke in upon the church a great deal of luxury and high living, on the pretence of hospitality; while others made purchases, and left great estates, most of which we have seen melt away. And with this overset of wealth and pomp that came on men in the decline of their parts and age, they who were now growing into old age, became lazy and negligent in all the true concerns of the church: they left preaching and writing to others, while they gave themselves up to ease and sloth; in all which sad representation some few exceptions are to be made, but so few, that if a new set of men had not appeared of another stamp, the church had quite lost her esteem over the nation.

Divines called latitudinarians.

These were generally of Cambridge, formed under some divines, the chief of whom were Drs. Whitchcot, Cudworth, Wilkins, More, and Worthington. Whitchcot was a man of a rare temper; very mild and obliging. He had great credit with some that had been eminent in the late times; but made all the use he could of it to protect good men of all persuasions. He was much for liberty of conscience; and being disgusted with the dry systematical way of those times, he studied to raise those who conversed with him to a nobler set of thoughts, and to consider religion as a seed of a deiform nature (to use one of his own phrases). In order to this, he set young students much on reading the ancient philosophers, chiefly Plato, Tully, and Plotin, and on considering the Christian religion as a doctrine sent from God, both to elevate and sweeten human nature; in which he was a great example, as well as a wise

and kind instructor. Cudworth carried this on with a great strength of genius, and a vast compass of learning. He was a man of great conduct and prudence; upon which his enemies did very falsely accuse him of craft and dissimulation. Wilkins was of Oxford, but removed to Cambridge: his first rise was in the Elector Palatine's family, when he was in England. Afterwards he married Cromwell's sister; but made no other use of that alliance but to do good offices, and to cover the university from the sourness of Owen and Goodwin. At Cambridge he joined with those who studied to propagate better thoughts, to take men off from being in parties, or from narrow notions, from superstitious conceits, and a fierceness about opinions. He was also a great observer and a promoter of experimental philosophy, which was then a new thing, and much looked after. He was naturally ambitious, but was the wisest clergyman I ever knew. He was a lover of mankind, and had a delight in doing good. More was an open-hearted and sincere Christian philosopher; who studied to establish men in the great principles of religion against atheism, that was then beginning to gain ground, chiefly by reason of the hypocrisy of some, and the fantastical conceits of the more sincere enthusiasts. 1661.

Hobbs's Leviathan.

Hobbs, who had long followed the court, and passed there for a mathematical man, though he really knew little that way, being disgusted by the court, came into England in Cromwell's time, and published a very wicked book, with a very strange title—The Leviathan. His main principles were, that all men acted under an absolute necessity; in which he seemed protected by the then received doctrine of absolute decrees. He seemed to think that the universe was God, and that souls were material—thought being only subtile and imperceptible motion. He thought interest and fear were the chief principles of society; and he put all morality in the following that which was our own private will or advantage. He thought religion had no other foundation than the laws of the land; and he put all the law in the will of the prince, or of the people; for he writ his book first in favour of absolute monarchy, but turned it afterwards to gratify the republican party. These were his true principles, though he had disguised them, in order to catch unwary readers; and this set of notions

1661. came to spread much: the novelty and boldness of them set many on reading them; the impiety of them was acceptable to men of corrupt minds, which were but too much prepared to receive them, by the extravagancies of the late times. So this set of men at Cambridge studied to assert and examine the principles of religion and morality on clear grounds, and in a philosophical method: in this More led the way to many that came after him. Worthington was a man of eminent piety and great humility, and practised a most sublime way of self-denial and devotion. All these, and those who were formed under them, studied to examine farther into the nature of things than had been done formerly; they declared against superstition on the one hand, and enthusiasm on the other; they loved the constitution of the church, and the liturgy, and could well live under them; but they did not think it unlawful to live under another form. They wished that things might have been carried with more moderation; and they continued to keep a good correspondence with those who had differed from them in opinion, and allowed a great freedom both in philosophy and in divinity; from whence they were called men of latitude: and upon this men of narrower thoughts and fiercer tempers fastened upon them the name of latitudinarians. They read Episcopius much; and the making out the reasons of things being a main part of their studies, their enemies called them Socinians. They were all very zealous against popery; and so, they becoming soon very considerable, the papists set themselves against them to decry them as atheists, deists, or at best Socinians. And now that the main principle of religion was struck at by Hobbs and his followers, the papists acted upon this a very strange part: they went in so far even into the argument for atheism, as to publish many books, in which they affirmed that there was no certain proofs of the Christian religion, unless we took it from the authority of the church as infallible: this was such a delivering up of the cause to them, that it raised in all good men a very high indignation at popery; that party shewing that they chose to make men who would not turn papists, become atheists rather than believe Christianity upon any other ground than infallibility.

The most eminent of those, who were formed under

those great men I have mentioned, were Tillotson, Stillingfleet, and Patrick. The first of these was a man of a clear head, and a sweet temper. He had the brightest thoughts and the most correct style of all our divines, and was esteemed the best preacher of the age. He was a very prudent man, and had such a management with it, that I never knew any clergyman so universally esteemed and beloved, as he was for above twenty years. He was eminent for his opposition to popery: he was no friend to persecution, and stood up much against atheism: nor did any man contribute more to bring the city to love our worship than he did. But there was so little superstition, and so much reason and gentleness in his way of explaining things, that malice was long levelled at him, and in conclusion broke out fiercely on him. Stillingfleet was a man of much more learning, but of a more reserved and a haughtier temper. He in his youth writ an Irenicum for healing our divisions, with so much learning and moderation, that it was esteemed a master-piece. His notion was, that the apostles had settled the church in a constitution of bishops, priests, and deacons, but had made no perpetual law about it, having only taken it in, as they did many other things, from the customs and practice of the synagogue; from which he inferred, that certainly the constitution was lawful since authorised by them, but not necessary, since they had made no settled law about it. This took with many; but was cried out upon by others as an attempt against the church. Yet the argument was managed with so much learning and skill, that none of either side ever undertook to answer it. After that he wrote against infidelity, beyond any that had gone before him: and then he engaged to write against popery, which he did with such an exactness and liveliness, that no books of controversy were so much read and valued as his were. He was a great man in many respects: he knew the world well, and was esteemed a very wise man. The writing of his Irenicum was a great snare to him; for, to avoid the imputations which that brought upon him, he not only retracted the book, but he went into the humours of a high sort of people, beyond what became him, perhaps beyond his own sense of things. He applied himself much to the study of the law and records, and the original of our constitution, and was a very

1661. A character of some divines.

1661. extraordinary man. Patrick was a great preacher. He wrote much, and well, and chiefly on the Scriptures: he was a laborious man in his function, of great strictness of life, but a little too severe against those who differed from him; but that was, when he thought their doctrines struck at the fundamentals of religion; he became afterwards more moderate. To these I shall add another divine, who, though of Oxford, yet as he was formed by Bishop Wilkins, so he went into most of their principles; but went far beyond them in learning. Lloyd was a great critic in the Greek and Latin authors, but chiefly in the Scriptures; of the words and phrases of which he carried the most perfect concordance in his memory, and had it the readiest about him of all men that ever I knew. He was an exact historian, and the most punctual in chronology of all our divines: he had read the most books, and with the best judgment, and had made the most copious abstracts out of them, of any in this age; so that Wilkins used to say, he had the most learning in ready cash of any he ever knew. He was so exact in every thing he set about, that he never gave over any part of study till he had quite mastered it; but when that was done, he went to another subject, and did not lay out his learning with the diligence with which he laid it in. He had many volumes of materials upon all subjects, laid together in so distinct a method, that he could, with very little labour, write on any of them: he had more life in his imagination, and a truer judgment, than may seem consistent with such a laborious course of study; yet, as much as he was set on learning, he had never neglected his pastoral care. For several years he had the greatest cure in England, St. Martin's, which he took care of with an application and diligence beyond any about him; to whom he was an example, or rather a reproach, so few following his example. He was a holy, humble, and patient man, ever ready to do good when he saw a proper opportunity; even his love of study did not divert him from that. He did, upon his promotion, find a very worthy successor in his cure, Tenison, who carried on and advanced all those good methods that he had begun in the management of that great cure. He endowed schools, set up a public library, and kept many curates to assist him in his indefatigable labours among them. He

was a very learned man, and took much pains to state the notions and practices of heathenish idolatry, and so to fasten that charge on the church of Rome: and Whitehall lying within that parish, he stood as in the front of the battle all King James's reign; and maintained, as well as managed that dangerous post with great courage and much judgment, and was held in very high esteem for his whole deportment, which was ever grave and moderate. These have been the greatest divines we have had these forty years: and may we ever have a succession of such men, to fill the room of those who have already gone off the stage, and of those who, being now very old, cannot hold their posts long. Of these I have writ the more fully, because I knew them well, and have lived long in great friendship with them; but most particularly with Tillotson and Lloyd: and as I am sensible I owe a great deal of the consideration that has been had for me, to my being known to be their friend, so I have really learned the best part of what I know from them: but I owed them much more on the account of those excellent principles and notions, of which they were in a particular manner communicative to me. This set of men contributed more than can be well imagined to reform the way of preaching, which among the divines of England before them was overrun with pedantry, a great mixture of quotations from fathers and ancient writers, a long opening of a text with the concordance of every word in it, and a giving all the different expositions with the grounds of them, and the entering into some parts of controversy, and all concluding in some, but very short, practical applications, according to the subject or the occasion. This was both long and heavy, when all was pye-balled, full of many sayings of different languages. The common style of sermons was either very flat and low, or swelled up with rhetoric to a false pitch of a wrong sublime. The King had little or no literature, but true and good sense, and had got a right notion of style; for he was in France at a time when they were much set on reforming their language. It soon appeared that he had a true taste. So this helped to raise the value of these men, when the King approved of the style their discourses generally ran in; which was clear, plain, and short. They gave a short paraphrase of their text, unless where great difficulties re-

1661.

The way of preaching which then prevailed.

1661. quired a more copious enlargement: but even then they cut off unnecessary shews of learning, and applied themselves to the matter, in which they opened the nature and reasons of things so fully, and with that simplicity that their hearers felt an instruction of another sort than had commonly been observed before: so they became very much followed; and a set of these men brought off the city in a great measure from the prejudices they had formerly to the church.

1662. The act of uniformity executed with rigour.

There was a great debate in council, a little before St. Bartholomew's day, whether the act of uniformity should be punctually executed or not. Some moved to have the execution of it delayed to the next session of parliament; others were for executing it in the main, but to connive at some eminent men, and to put curates into their churches to read and officiate according to the Common Prayer, but to leave them to preach on, till they should die out. The Earl of Manchester laid all these things before the King with much zeal but with no great force. Sheldon, on the other hand, pressed the execution of the law; England was accustomed to obey laws, so while they stood on that ground they were safe, and needed fear none of the dangers that seemed to be threatened: he also undertook to fill all the vacant pulpits that should be forsaken in London, better and more to the satisfaction of the people, than they had been before; and he seemed to apprehend that a very small number would fall under the deprivation, and that the gross of the party would conform. On the other hand, those who led the party took great pains to have them all stick together; they infused it into them, that if great numbers stood out, that would shew their strength and produce new laws in their favour; whereas they would be despised, if after so much noise made, the greater part of them should conform: so it was thought, that many went out in the crowd to keep their friends company. Many of these were distinguished by their abilities and zeal. They cast themselves upon the providence of God, and the charity of their friends, which had a fair appearance, as of men that were ready to suffer persecution for their consciences. This begot esteem, and raised compassion; whereas the old clergy, now much enriched, were as much despised: but the young clergy that came from the univer-

sities did good service. Learning was then high at Oxford; chiefly the study of the oriental tongues, which was much raised by the Polyglot Bible, then lately set forth. They read the fathers much there; mathematics and the new philosophy were in great esteem; and the meetings that Wilkins had begun at Oxford were now held in London too, in so public manner, that the King himself encouraged them much, and had many experiments made before him. 1662.

The men that formed the Royal Society in London, were Sir Robert Murray, the Lord Brounker, a profound mathematician, and Dr. Ward, soon after promoted to Exeter, and afterwards removed to Salisbury. Ward was a man of great reach, went deep in mathematical studies, and was a very dexterous man, if not too dexterous; for his sincerity was much questioned: he had complied during the late times, and held in by taking the covenant; so he was hated by the high men as a time-server. But the Lord Clarendon saw, that most of the bishops were men of merit by their sufferings, but of no great capacity for business. He brought Ward in, as a man fit to govern the church; for Ward, to get his former errors to be forgot, went into the high notions of a severe conformity, and became the most considerable man on the bishops' bench: he was a profound statesman, but a very indifferent clergyman. Many physicians, and other ingenious men, went into the society for natural philosophy: but he who laboured most, at the greatest charge, and with the most success at experiments, was Robert Boyle, the Earl of Cork's youngest son: he was looked on by all who knew him, as a very perfect pattern. He was a very devout Christian, humble and modest, almost to a fault, of a most spotless and exemplary life in all respects: he was highly charitable, and was a mortified and self-denied man, that delighted in nothing so much as in the doing good. He neglected his person, despised the world, and lived abstracted from all pleasures, designs, and interests. I preached his funeral sermon, in which I gave his character so truly, that I do not think it necessary now to enlarge more upon it. The society for philosophy grew so considerable, that they thought fit to take out a patent, which constituted them a body, by the name of the Royal Society; of which Sir Robert Murray

The Royal Society.

1662. was the first president, Bishop Ward the second, and the Lord Brounker the third. Their history is writ so well by Dr. Sprat, that I will insist no more on them, but go on to other matters.

Consultations among the papists. After St. Bartholomew's day, the dissenters, seeing both court and parliament was so much set against them, had much consultation together what to do. Many were for going over to Holland, and settling there with their ministers: others proposed New-England, and the other plantations. Upon this the Earl of Bristol drew to his house a meeting of the chief papists in town; and after an oath of secresy he told them, now was a proper time for them to make some steps towards the bringing in of their religion: in order to that it seemed advisable for them to take pains to procure favour to the nonconformists; (for that became the common name to them all, as puritan had been before the war:) they were the rather to bestir themselves to procure a toleration for them in general terms, that they themselves might be comprehended within it: the Lord Aubigny seconded the motion; he said, it was so visibly the interest of England to make a great body of the trading men stay within the kingdom, and be made easy in it, that it would have a good grace in them to seem zealous for it; and to draw in so great a number of those, who had been hitherto the hottest against them, to feel their care, and to see their zeal to serve them; he recommended to them to make this the subject of all their discourses, and to engage all their friends in the design. Bennet did not meet with them, but was known to be of the secret; as the Lord Stafford told me in the Tower a little before his death. But that Lord soon withdrew from those meetings; for he apprehended the Earl of Bristol's heat, and that he might raise a storm against them by his indiscreet meddling.

A declaration for toleration. The King was so far prevailed on by them, that in December, 1662, he set out a declaration, that was generally thought to be procured by the Lord Bristol; but it had a deeper root, and was designed by the King himself. In it the King expressed his aversion to all severities on the account of religion, but more particularly to all sanguinary laws: and gave hopes both to papists and nonconformists, that he would find out such ways for tempering the severities of the laws, that all his subjects should be easy under

them. The wiser of the nonconformists saw at what all this was aimed, and so received it coldly: but the papists went on more warmly, and were preparing a scheme for a toleration of them; and one part of it raised great disputes among themselves. Some were for their taking the oath of allegiance, which renounced the pope's deposing power; but all those that were under a management from Rome refused this; and the internuncio at Brussels proceeded to censure those that were for it, as enemies to the papal authority. A proposition was also made for having none but secular priests tolerated in England, who should be under a bishop, and under an established government; but that all the regulars, in particular all Jesuits, should be under the strictest penalties forbid the kingdom. 1662.

Designed for the papists.

The Earl of Clarendon set this on, for he knew well it would divide the papists among themselves. But, though a few honest priests, such as Blacklow, Serjeant, Caron, and Walsh were for it, yet they could not make a party among the leading men of their own side. It was pretended, that this was set on foot with a design to divide them, and so to break their strength. The Earl of Clarendon knew that Cardinal de Retz, for whom he saw the King had a particular esteem, had come over incognito, and had been with the King in private: so, to let the King see how odious a thing his being suspected of popery would be, and what a load it would lay on his government if it came to be believed, he got some of his party, as Sir Allen Brodrick told me, to move in the House of Commons for an act rendering it capital to say the King was a papist. And, whereas the King was made to believe that the old cavaliers were become milder with relation to popery, the Lord Clarendon upon this new act inferred, that it still appeared that the opinion of his being a papist would so certainly make him odious, that for that reason the parliament had made the spreading those reports so penal. But this was taken by another handle, while some said, that this act was made on purpose, that, though the design of bringing in popery should become ever so visible, none should dare speak of it. The Earl of Clarendon had a quite contrary design in it, to let the King see how fatal the effects of any such suspicions were like to be. When the Earl of Bristol's declaration was proposed in council, Lord Clarendon

1662. and the bishops opposed it: but there was nothing in it directly against law, hopes being only given of endeavours to make all men easy under the King's government: so it passed. The Earl of Bristol carried it as a great victory; and he, with the Duke of Buckingham, and all Lord Clarendon's enemies, declared openly against him: but the poor priests, who had made those honest motions, were very ill looked on by all their own party, as men gained on design to betray them. I knew all this from Peter Walsh himself, who was the honestest and learnedest man I ever knew among them: he was of Irish extraction, and of the Franciscan order, and was indeed in all points of controversy almost wholly protestant; but he had senses of his own, by which he excused his adhering to the church of Rome; and he maintained that with these he could continue in the communion of that church without sin: and he said that he was sure he did some good, staying still on that side, but that he could do none at all if he should come over: he thought no man ought to forsake that religion in which he was born and bred, unless he was clearly convinced that he must certainly be damned if he continued in it: he was an honest and able man, much practiced in intrigues, and knew well the methods of the Jesuits, and other missionaries. He told me often, there was nothing which the whole popish party feared more than an union of those of the church of England with the presbyterians; they knew we grew the weaker the more our breaches were widened, and that the more we were set against one another, we would mind them the less. The papists had two maxims, from which they never departed—the one was, to divide us; and the other was, to keep themselves united, and either to set on an indiscriminated toleration, or a general prosecution; for so we loved to soften the harsh word of persecution: and he observed, not without great indignation at us for our folly, that we, instead of uniting among ourselves, and dividing them, according to their maxims, did all we could to keep them united, and to disjoint our own body; for he was persuaded, if the government had held an heavy hand on the regulars and the Jesuits, and had been gentle to the seculars, and had set up a distinguishing test, renouncing all sort of power in the pope over the temporal rights of princes, to which the regulars and the Je-

suits could never submit, that this would have engaged them into such violent quarrels among themselves, that censures would have been thundered at Rome against all that should take any such test; which would have procured much disputing, and might have probably ended in the revolt of the soberer part of that church: but he found that though the Earl of Clarendon and the Duke of Ormond liked the project, little regard was had to it by the governing party in the court. 1662.

The church party was alarmed at all this; and though they were unwilling to suspect the King or the Duke, yet the management for popery was so visible, that in the next session of parliament the King's declaration was severely arraigned, and the authors of it were plainly enough pointed at. This was done chiefly by the Lord Clarendon's friends; and at this the Earl of Bristol was highly displeased, and resolved to take all possible methods to ruin the Earl of Clarendon. He had a great skill in astrology, and had possessed the King with an high opinion of it; and told the Duke of Buckingham, as he said to the Earl of Rochester, Wilmot, from whom I had it, that he was confident that he would lay that before the King, which would totally alienate him both from his brother and from the Lord Clarendon; for he could demonstrate by the principles of that art, that he was to fall by his brother's means, if not by his hand: and he was sure this would work on the King. It would so, said the Duke of Buckingham, but in another way than he expected; for it would make the King be so afraid of offending him, that he would do any thing rather than provoke him. Yet the Lord Bristol would lay this before the King; and the Duke of Buckingham believed that it had the effect ever after that he had apprehended; for though the King never loved nor esteemed the Duke, yet he seemed to stand in some sort of awe of him. 1663. Bristol's designs.

But this was not all; the Lord Bristol resolved to offer articles of impeachment against the Earl of Clarendon to the House of Lords, though it was plainly provided against by the statute against appeals in the reign of Henry the Fourth; yet both the Duke of Buckingham and the Lord Bristol, the fathers of these two lords, had broken through that in the former reign: so the Lord Bristol drew his impeachment and carried it to the King, who took much He accused Clarendon in the House of Lords.

1663 pains on him, in a soft and gentle manner, to dissuade him from it; but he would not be wrought on: and he told the King plainly, that if he forsook him, he would raise such disorders, that all England should feel them, and the King himself should not be without a large share in them. The King, as the Earl of Lauderdale told me who said he had it from himself, said, he was so provoked at this, that he durst not trust himself in answering it, but went out of the room, and sent the Lord Aubigny to soften him; but all was in vain. It is very probable that the Lord Bristol knew the secret of the King's religion, which both made him so bold, and the King so fearful. The next day he carried the charge to the House of Lords. It was of a very mixed nature: in one part he charged the Lord Clarendon with raising jealousies, and spreading reports of the King's being a papist; and yet in the other articles he charged him with correspondence with the court of Rome, in order to the making the Lord Aubigny a cardinal, and several other things of a very strange nature. As soon as he put it in, he it seems either repented of it, or at least was prevailed with to abscond. He was ever after that looked on as a man capable of the highest extravagancies possible. He made the matter worse by a letter that he wrote to the Lords, in which he expressed his fear of the danger the King was in by the Duke's having of guards. Proclamations went out for discovering him, but he kept out of the way till the storm was over. The parliament expressed a firm resolution to maintain the act of uniformity; and the King being run much in debt, they gave him four subsidies, being willing to return to the ancient way of taxes by subsidies. But these were so evaded, and brought in so little money, that the court resolved never to have recourse to that method of raising money any more, but to betake themselves for the future to the assessment begun in the war. The convocation gave at the same time four subsidies, which proved as heavy on them as they were light on the temporality. This was the last aid that the spirituality gave; for the whole proving so inconsiderable, and yet so unequally heavy on the clergy, it was resolved on hereafter to tax church benefices as temporal estates were taxed, which proved indeed a lighter burden, but was not so honourable as when it was given by themselves; yet interest prevailing above the point of

honour, they acquiesced in it: so the convocations being no more necessary to the crown, this made that there was less regard had to them afterwards. They were often discontinued and prorogued; and when they met, it was only for form. The parliament did pass another act, that was very acceptable to the court, and that showed a confidence in the King—repealing the act of triennial parliaments, which had been obtained with so much difficulty, and was clogged with so many clauses, which seemed to transfer the power from the crown to the people, that when it was carried, it was thought the greatest security that the people had for all their other liberties: but it was now given up without a struggle, or any clauses for a certainty of parliaments, besides a general one, that there should be a parliament called within three years after the dissolution of the present parliament, and so ever afterwards; but without any severe clauses, in case the act was not observed. 1663.

As for our foreign negotiations, I know nothing in particular concerning them. Secretary Bennet had them all in his hands, and I had no confidence with any about him. Our concerns with Portugal were public, and I knew no secrets about these.

A plot discovered.

By a melancholy instance to our private family, it appeared that France was taking all possible methods to do every thing that the King desired. The commonwealthsmen were now thinking that they saw the stream of the nation beginning to turn against the court, and upon that they were meeting, and laying plots to retrieve their lost game. One of these being taken, and apprehending he was in danger, begged his life of the King, and said, if he might be assured of his pardon, he would tell where my uncle Waristoun was, who was then in Rouen; for the air of Hamborough agreed so ill with him, that he was advised to go to France, and this man was in the secret. The King sent one to the court of France, desiring he might be put in his hands; and this was immediately done, and no notice was sent to my uncle to go out of the way, as is usual in such cases, when a person is not charged with assassinations or any infamous action, but only with crimes of state. He was sent over, and kept some months in the Tower of London; and from that was sent to Scotland, as shall be told afterwards.

1663. The design of a war with Holland was now working. I have been very positively assured by statesmen of both sides, that the French set it on in a very artificial manner for while they encouraged us to insist on some extravagant demands, they at the same time pressed the Dutch not to yield to them: and as they put them in hopes, that if a rupture should follow, they would assist them according to their alliance, so they assured us that they would do us no hurt. Downing was then employed in Holland, a crafty fawning man, who was ready to turn to every side that was uppermost, and to betray those who by their former friendship and services thought they might depend on him; as he did some of the regicides, whom he got in his hands under trust, and then delivered them up. He had been Cromwell's ambassador in Holland, where he had offered personal affronts both to the King and the Duke; yet he had by some base practices got himself to be so effectually recommended by the Duke of Albemarle, that all his former offences were forgiven, and he was sent into Holland as the King's ambassador, whose behaviour towards the King himself the States had observed; so they had reason to conclude he was sent over with no good intent, and that he was capable of managing a bad design and very ready to undertake it. There was no visible cause of war. A complaint of a ship taken was ready to have been satisfied; but Downing hindered it: so it was plain the King hated them, and fancied they were so feeble, and the English were so much superior to them, that a war would humble them to an entire submission and dependence on him in all things. The States had treated, and presented the King with great magnificence, and at a vast charge, during the time that he staid among them, after England had declared for him; and, as far as appearances could go, the King seemed sensible of it, insomuch that the party for the Prince of Orange were not pleased, because their applications to him could not prevail to make him interpose, either in the behalf of himself, or of his friends, to get the resolutions taken against him to be repealed, or his party again put in places of trust and command. The King put that off as not proper to be pressed by him at that time; but neither then nor afterwards did he bestir himself in that matter. Though, if either gratitude or interest had been of force, and if these

had not been overruled by some more prevalent considerations, he must have been inclined to make some returns for the services the late Prince did him; and he must have seen what a figure he must make by having the Prince of Orange tied to him in interest as much as he was by blood. France and popery were the true springs of all these counsels. It was the interest of the King of France that the armies of the States might fall under such a feebleness that they should be in no condition to make a vigorous resistance when he should be ready either to invade them, or to fall into Flanders; which he was resolved to do, whensoever the King of Spain should die. The French did thus set on the war between the English and the Dutch, hoping that our fleets should mutually weaken one another so much, that the naval force of France, which was increasing very considerably, should be near an equality to them, when they should be shattered by a war. The States were likewise the greatest strength of the protestant interest, and were therefore to be humbled. So, in order to make the King more considerable both at home and abroad, the court resolved to prepare for a war, and to seek for such colours as might serve to justify it. The Earl of Clarendon was not let into the secret of this design, and was always against it; but his interest was now sunk low, and he began to feel the power of an imperious mistress over an amorous King; who was so disgusted at the Queen that he abandoned himself wholly to amour and luxury. 1663.

This was, as far as I could penetrate into it, the state of the court for the first four years after the Restoration. I was in the court a great part of the years 1662, 1663, and 1664; and was as inquisitive as I could possibly be, and had more than ordinary occasions to hear and see a great deal.

The affairs of Scotland.

But now I return to the affairs of Scotland: the Earl of Midletoun, after a delay of some months, came up to London, and was very coldly received by the King: the Earl of Lauderdale moved that a Scotch council might be called; the Lord Clarendon got this to be delayed a fortnight: when it met the Lord Lauderdale accused the Earl of Midletoun of many malversations in the great trust he had been in, which he aggravated severely. The Lord

Midletoun was accused by Lauderdale.

1663. Midletoun desired he might have what was objected to him in writing; and when he had it, he sent it to Scotland, so that it was six weeks before he had his answer ready, all on design to gain time. He excused some errors in point of form, by saying, that having served in a military way, he understood not so exactly what belonged to law and form; but insisted on this, that he designed nothing but that the King's service might go on, and that his friends might be taken care of, and his enemies be humbled, and that so loyal a parliament might be encouraged, who were full of zeal and affection to his service; that, in complying with them, he had kept every thing so entirely in his Majesty's power, that the King was under no difficulties by any thing they had done. In the mean while Sheldon was very earnest with the King to forgive the Lord Midletoun's crime, otherwise he concluded the change so newly made in the church would be so ill supported, that it must fall to the ground. The Duke of Albermarle, who knew Scotland, and had more credit on that head than on any other, pretended that the Lord Midletoun's party was that on which the King could only rely: he magnified both their power and their zeal; and represented the Earl of Lauderdale's friends as cold and hollow in the King's service; and, to support all this, the letters that came from Scotland were full of the insolencies of the presbyterians, and of the dejection the bishops and their friends were under. Sharp was prevailed on to go up: he promised to all the Earl of Midletoun's friends that he would stick firm to him; and that he would lay before the King, that his standing or falling must be the standing or falling of the church; of this the Earl of Lauderdale had advice sent him: yet when he came to London, and saw that the King was alienated from the Lord Midletoun, he resolved to make great submissions to the Lord Lauderdale. When he reproached him for his engagements with the Earl of Midletoun, he denied all; and said he had never gone farther than what was decent, considering his post; he also denied he had writ to the King in his favour: but the King had given the original letter to the Lord Lauderdale, who upon that shewed it to Sharp; with which he was so struck, that he fell a crying in a most abject manner: he begged pardon for it; and said, what could a company of

poor men refuse to the Earl of Midletoun, who had done so much for them, and had them so entirely in his power: the Lord Lauderdale upon this comforted him; and said, he would forgive them all that was past, and would serve them and the church at another rate than Lord Midletoun was capable of doing. So Sharp became wholly his. Of all this Lord Lauderdale gave me a full relation the next day; and shewed me the papers that passed between Lord Midletoun and him. Sharp thought he had escaped well. The Earl of Midletoun treated the bishops too much as his creatures, and assumed a great deal to himself, and expressed a sort of authority over them; which Sharp was uneasy under, though he durst not complain of it or resist it; whereas he reckoned that Lord Lauderdale, knowing the suspicions that lay on him, as favouring the presbyterians, would have less credit and courage in opposing any thing that should be necessary for their support. It proved that in this he judged right; for the Lord Lauderdale, that he might maintain himself at court, and with the church of England, was really more compliant and easy to every proposition that the bishops made, than he would otherwise have been, if he had been always of the episcopal party; but all he did that way was against his heart, except when his passions were vehemently stirred, which a very slight occasion would readily do. 1663.

When the Earls of Lauderdale and Midletoun had been writing papers and answers for above three months, an accident happened which hastened Lord Midletoun's disgrace: the Earl of Lauderdale laid before the King the unjust proceedings in the laying on of the fines; and, to make all that party sure to himself, he procured a letter from the King to the council in Scotland, ordering them to issue out a proclamation for superseding the execution of the act of fining till farther order. The privy council being then, for the greater part, composed of Lord Midletoun's friends, it was pretended by some of them, that as long as he was the King's commissioner, they could receive and execute no orders from the King but through his hands: so they writ to him, desiring him to represent to the King, that this would be an affront put on the proceedings of parliament, and would raise the spirits of a party that ought to be kept down: Lord Midletoun writ back, that

1663. he had laid the matter before the King; and that he, considering better of it, ordered that no proceeding should be made upon his former letter. This occasioned a hot debate in council; it was said, a letter under the King's hand could not be countermanded but by the same hand; so the council wrote to know the King's mind in the matter: the King protested he knew nothing of it, and that Lord Midletoun had not spoke one word on the subject to him. He upon that sent for him, and chid him so severely, that Lord Midletoun concluded from it that he was ruined; yet he always stood upon it, that he had the King's order by word of mouth for what he had done, though he was not so cautious as to procure an instruction under his hand for his warrant. It is very probable that he spoke of it to the King when his head was full of somewhat else, so that he did not mind it; and that, to get rid of the Earl of Midletoun, he bid him do whatsoever he proposed, without reflecting much on it; for the King was at that time often so distracted in his thoughts, that he was not at all times master of himself. The Queen-mother had brought over from France one Mrs. Steward, reckoned a very great beauty, who was afterwards married to the Duke of Richmond; the King was believed to be deeply in love with her: yet his former mistress kept her ground still; and what with her humours and jealousy, and what with this new amour, the King had very little quiet between both their passions and his own.

Towards the end of May the King called many of the English counsellors together, and did order all the papers that had passed between the Earls of Lauderdale and Midletoun to be read to them; when that was done, many of them who were Midletoun's friends, said much in excuse of his errors, and of the necessity of continuing him still in that high trust: but the King said, his errors were so great, and so many, that the credit of his affairs must suffer, if he continued them any longer in such hands. Yet he promised them he would be still kind to him; for he looked on him as a very honest man. A few days after that Secretary Morrice was sent to him, with a warrant under the King's hand, requiring him to deliver up his commission, which he did; and so his ministry came to an end, after a sort of a reign of much violence and injustice; for he was

And turned out of all.

become very imperious. He and his company were delivered up to so much excess, and to such a madness of frolic and intemperance, that as Scotland had never seen any thing like it, so upon this disgrace there was a general joy over the kingdom; though that lasted not long, for those that came after him grew worse than ever he was like to be. He had lived in great magnificence, which made him acceptable to many; and he was a firm friend, though a violent enemy. The Earl of Rothes was declared the King's commissioner. But the Earl of Lauderdale would not trust him: so he went down with him, and kept him too visibly in a dependence on him, for all his high character. 1663.

One of the first things that was done in this session of parliament, was the execution of my unfortunate uncle, Waristoun. He was so disordered both in body and mind, that it was a reproach to a government to proceed against him: his memory was so gone that he did not know his own children. He was brought before the parliament to hear what he had to say, why his execution should not be awarded. He spoke long, but in a broken and disordered strain, which his enemies fancied was put on to create pity. He was sentenced to die. His deportment was unequal, as might be expected from a man in his condition; yet when the day of his execution came, he was very serene: he was cheerful, and seemed fully satisfied with his death: he read a speech twice over on the scaffold, that to my knowledge he composed himself, in which he justified all the proceedings in the covenant, and asserted his own sincerity; but condemned his joining with Cromwell and the sectaries, though even in that his intentions had been sincere for the good of his country and the security of religion. Lord Lauderdale had lived in great friendship with him; but he saw the King was so set against him, that he, who at all times took more care of himself than of his friends, would not in so critical a time seem to favour a man whom the presbyterians had set up as a sort of an idol among them, and on whom they did depend more than on any other man then alive. Waristoun's execution.

The business of the parliament went on as the Lord Lauderdale directed. The whole proceeding in the matter of the balloting was laid open. It appeared that the par-

1663. liament had not desired it, but had been led into it by being made believe that the King had a mind to it: and, of all the members of parliament, not above twelve could be prevailed on to own that they had advised the Earl of Middletoun to ask leave of the King for it, whose private suggestions he had represented to the King as the desire of the parliament. This finished his disgrace, as well as it occasioned the putting all his party out of employments.

An act against conventicles.

While they were going on with their affairs, they understood that an act had passed in the parliament of England against all conventicles, empowering justices of peace to convict offenders without juries; which was thought a great breach on the security of the English constitution, and a raising the power of justices to a very arbitrary pitch. Any meeting for religious worship, at which five were present more than the family, was declared a conventicle. And every person above sixteen that was present at it, was to lie three months in prison, or to pay 5*l.* for the first offence; six months for the second offence, or to pay 20*l.* fine; and for the third offence, being convict by a jury, was to be banished to any plantation, except New England or Virginia, or to pay 100*l.* All people were amazed at this severity. But the bishops in Scotland took heart upon it, and resolved to copy from it: so an act passed there almost in the same terms; and, at the passing it, Lord Lauderdale in a long speech expressed great zeal for the church. There was some little opposition made to it by the Earl of Kincardin, who was an enemy to all persecution: but, though some few voted against it, it was carried by a great majority.

The constitution of a national synod.

Another act passed declaring the constitution of a national synod. It was to be composed of the archbishops and bishops, of all deans, and of two to be deputed from every presbytery; of which the moderator of the presbytery named by the bishop was to be one: all things were to be proposed to this court by the King or his commissioner. And whatsoever should be agreed to by the majority and the president, the Archbishop of St. Andrews, was to have the force of an ecclesiastical law, when it should be confirmed by the King. Great exceptions were taken to this act. The church was restrained from meddling with any thing but as it should be laid before them

by the King, which was thought a severe restraint, like that of the proponentibus legatis, so much complained of at Trent. The putting the negative, not in the whole bench of the bishops, but singly in the president, was thought very irregular; but it passed with so little observation, that the Lord Lauderdale could scarce believe it was penned as he found it to be when I told him of it. Primrose told me, Sharp put that clause in with his own hand. The inferior clergy complained that the power was wholly taken from them; since as one of their deputies was to be a person named by the bishops, so the moderators claiming a negative vote in their presbyteries as the bishops' delegates, the other half were only to consist of persons to whom they consented. The act was indeed so penned that nobody moved for a national synod, when they saw how it was to be constituted. 1663.

Two other acts passed in favour of the crown. The parliament of England had laid great impositions on all things imported from Scotland; so the parliament, being speedily to be dissolved, and not having time to regulate such impositions on English goods, as might force the English to bring that matter to a just balance, they put that confidence in the King, that they left the laying of impositions on all foreign merchandize wholly to him.

An act offering an army to the King.

Another act was looked on as a pompous compliment; and so it passed without observation or any opposition. In it they made an offer to the King of an army of twenty thousand foot and two thousand horse, to be ready upon summons to march with forty days' provision into any part of his Majesty's dominions, to oppose invasions, to suppress insurrections, or for any other cause in which his authority, power, or greatness was concerned. Nobody dreamt that any use was ever to be made of this: yet the Earl of Lauderdale had his end in it, to let the King see what use he might make of Scotland, if he should intend to set up arbitrary government in England. He told the King that the Earl of Midletoun and his party understood not what was the greatest service that Scotland could do him: they had not much treasure to offer him: the only thing they were capable of doing was, to furnish him with a good army, when his affairs in England should require it. And of this he made great use afterwards to advance him-

1663. self, though it could never have signified any thing to the advancing the King's ends: yet so easy was it to draw the parliament of Scotland to pass acts of the greatest consequence in a hurry, without considering the effects they might have. After these acts were passed, the parliament was dissolved; which gave a general satisfaction to the country, for they were a furious set of people. The government was left in the Earl of Glencairn's hands, who began, now that he had little favour at court, to set himself on all occasions to oppose Sharp's violent notions. The Earl of Rothes stuck firm to Sharp, and was recommended by him to the bishops of England as the only man that supported their interests. The King at this time restored Lord Lorn to his grandfather's honour, of being Earl of Argyle, passing over his father; and gave him a great part of his estate, leaving the rest to be sold for the payment of debts, which did not raise in value above a third part of them. This occasioned a great outcry, that continued long to pursue him.

1664. Sharp drove very violently.

Sharp went up to London to complain of the Lord Glencairn, and of the privy council, where he said there was such a remissness, and so much popularity appeared on all occasions, that unless some more spirit were put into the administration, it would be impossible to preserve the church. That was the word always used, as if there had been a charm in it. He moved, that a letter might be writ, giving him the precedence of the lord chancellor. This was thought an inexcusable piece of vanity; for in Scotland, when there was no commissioner, all matters passed through the lord chancellor's hands, who, by act of parliament, was to preside in all courts, and was considered as representing the King's person. He also moved that the King would grant a special commission to some persons for executing the laws relating to the church. All the privy counsellors were to be of it: but to these he desired many others might be added, for whom he undertook that they would execute them with zeal. Lord Lauderdale saw that this would prove a high-commission court; yet he gave way to it, though much against his own mind. Upon these things I took the liberty, though then too young to meddle in things of that kind, to expostulate very freely with him. I thought he was acting the Earl of Traquair's

Lauderdale gave way to it.

part, giving way to all the follies of the bishops on design to ruin them. He upon that ran into a great deal of freedom with me: he told me many passages of Sharp's past life: he was persuaded he would ruin all: but, he said, he was resolved to give him line; for he had not credit enough to stop him; nor would he oppose any thing that he proposed, unless it were very extravagant: he saw the Earl of Glencairn and he would be in a perpetual war: and it was indifferent to him how matters might go between them: things would run to a height, and then the King would of himself put a stop to their career; for the King said often he was not priest-ridden: he would not venture a war, nor travel again for any party. This was all that I could obtain from the Earl of Lauderdale. I pressed Sharp himself to think of more moderate methods; but he despised my applications; and from that time he was very jealous of me. 1664.

Fairfoul, Archbishop of Glasgow, died this year, and one Burnet succeeded him, who was a near kinsman of the Lord Rutherford's; who, from being governor of Dunkirk, when it was sold, was sent to Tangier; but soon after, in an unhappy encounter, going out to view some grounds, was intercepted and cut to pieces by the Moors. Upon Rutherford's recommendation, Burnet, who had lived many years in England, and knew nothing of Scotland, was sent thither, first to be bishop of Aberdeen; and from thence he was raised to Glasgow. He was of himself a soft and goodnatured man, tolerably learned, and of a blameless life; but was a man of no genius; and though he was inclined to peaceable and moderate counsels, yet he was much in the power of others, and took any impression that was given him very easily. I was much in his favour at first, but could not hold it long; for as I had been bred up by my father to love liberty and moderation, so I spent the greatest part of the year 1664 in Holland and France, which contributed not a little to root and fix me in those principles. Burnet, Archbishop of Glasgow.

I saw much peace and quiet in Holland, notwithstanding the diversity of opinions among them; which was occasioned by the gentleness of the government, and the toleration that made all people easy and happy. An universal industry was spread through the whole country: there A view of the state of affairs in Holland and France.

1664. was little aspiring to preferment in the state, because little was to be got that way. They were then apprehending a war with England, and were preparing for it. From thence, where every thing was free, I went to France, where nothing was free. The King was beginning to put things in great method, in his revenue, in his troops, in his government at home, but above all in the increasing of trade, and the building of a great fleet. His own deportment was solemn and grave, save only that he kept his mistresses very avowedly: he was diligent in his own counsels, and regular in the dispatch of his affairs: so that all things about him looked like the preparing of matters for all that we have seen acted since. The King of Spain was considered as dying, and the infant his son was like to die as soon as he: so that it was generally believed, the French King was designing to set up a new empire in the west. He had carried the quarrel at Rome about the Corses so high with the House of Ghigi, that the protestants were beginning to flatter themselves with great hopes. When I was in France, Cardinal Ghigi came, as legate, to give the King full satisfaction in that matter. Lord Hollis was then ambassador at Paris: I was so effectually recommended to him, that he used me with great freedom, which he continued to do to the end of his days. He stood upon all the points of an ambassador with the stiffness of former ages, which made him very unacceptable to a high-spirited young prince, who began even then to be flattered, as if he had been somewhat more than a mortal. This established me in my love of law and liberty, and in my hatred of absolute power. When I came back, I staid for some months at court, and observed the scene as carefully as I could, and became acquainted with all the men that were employed in Scotch affairs. I had more than ordinary opportunities of being informed about them. This drew a jealousy on me from the bishops, which was increased from the friendship into which Leighton received me. I passed for one who was no great friend to church power, nor to persecution: so it was thought, that Lord Lauderdale was preparing me, as one who was known to have been always episcopal, to be set up against Sharp and his set of men, who were much hated by one side, and not loved nor trusted by the other.

1664.

Sharp aspired to be chancellor of Scotland.

In the meanwhile the Earl of Glencairn died, which set Sharp at ease, but put him on new designs. He apprehended that the Earl of Tweedale might be advanced to that post; for in the settlement of the Dutchess of Buccleugh's estate, who was married to the Duke of Monmouth, the best beloved of all the King's children, by which, in default of issue by her, it was to go to the Duke of Monmouth and the issue he might have by any other wife, the Earl of Tweedale, though his children were the next heirs, who were by this deprived of their right, had yet given way to it in so frank a manner, that the King was enough inclined both to oblige and to trust him. But Sharp had great suspicions of him, as cold in their concerns: so he writ to Sheldon, that upon the disposal of the seals the very being of the church did so absolutely depend, that he begged he would press the King very earnestly in the matter, and that he would move that he might be called up before that post should be filled. The King bid Sheldon assure him, he should take a special care of that matter, but that there was no occasion for his coming up: for the King by this time had a very ill opinion of him. Sharp was so mortified with this, that he resolved to put all to hazard, for he believed all was at stake, and he ventured to come up. The King received him coldly, and asked him if he had not received the Archbishop of Canterbury's letter. He said, he had; but he would choose rather to venture on his Majesty's displeasure, than to see the church ruined through his caution or negligence: he knew the danger they were in in Scotland, where they had but few and cold friends, and many violent enemies: his Majesty's protection, and the execution of the law, were the only things they could trust to; and these so much depended on the good choice of a chancellor, that he could not answer it to God and the church, if he did not bestir himself in that matter: he knew many thought of himself for that post; but he was so far from that thought, that, if his Majesty had any such intention, he would rather choose to be sent to a plantation: he desired that he might be a churchman in heart, but not in habit, that should be raised to that trust. These were his very words, as the King reported them. From him he went to Sheldon, and pressed him to move the King for himself, and furnished him with many reasons

1664. to support the proposition; a main one being, that the late King had raised his predecessor Spotswood to that trust. Sheldon, upon that, did move the King with more than ordinary earnestness in it: the King suspected Sharp had set him on, and charged him to tell him the truth: the other did it, though not without some uneasiness. Upon that the King told him what he had said to himself; and then it may be easily imagined in what a style they both spoke of him. Yet Sheldon prayed the King, that whatsoever he might think of the man, he would consider the archbishop and the church; which the King assured him he would do. Sheldon told Sharp, that he saw the motion for himself did not take, so he must think of somewhat else. Sharp proposed that the seals might be put into the Earl of Rothes' hands, till the King should pitch on a proper person. He also proposed, that the King would make him his commissioner, in order to the preparing matters for a national synod, that they might settle a book of Common Prayer, and a book of Canons. This, he said, must be carried on slowly, and with great caution; of which the late troubles did demonstrate the necessity.

Rothes had the whole power of Scotland put in his hands.

All this was easily agreed to; for the King loved the Lord Rothes, and the Earl of Lauderdale would not oppose his advancement: though it was a very extravagant thing to see one man possess so many of the chief places of so poor a kingdom. The Earl of Crawford would not abjure the covenant, so he had been made lord treasurer in his place: he continued to be still what he was before, lord president of the council; and, upon the Earl of Midletoun's disgrace, he was made captain of a troop of guards; and now he was both the King's commissioner, and upon the matter lord chancellor. Sharp reckoned this was his master-piece: Lord Rothes, being thus advanced by his means, was in all things governed by him. His instructions were such as Sharp proposed, to prepare matters for a national synod, and in the meanwhile to execute laws that related to the church with a steady firmness: so, when he parted from Whitehall, Sharp said to the King, that he had now done all that could be desired of him for the good of the church; so that, if all matters went not right in Scotland, none must bear the blame, but either the Earl of Lauderdale or Rothes. And so they came to Scotland, where

a very furious scene of illegal violence was opened. Sharp governed Lord Rothes, who abandoned himself to pleasure; and, when some censured this, all the answer that was made was, a severe piece of raillery, that the King's commissioner ought to represent his person. 1664.

The government of Scotland, as to civil matters, was very easy: all were quiet and obedient. But all those counties that lie towards the west becam every fierce and intractable; and the whole work of the council was to deal with them, and to subdue them. It was not easy to prove any thing against any of them, for they did stick firm to one another. The people complained of the new set of ministers that was sent among them, as immoral, stupid, and ignorant: generally they forsook their churches; and if any of them went to church, they said they were little edified with their sermons: and the whole country was full of strange reports of the weakness of their preaching, and of the indecency of their whole deportment. The people treated them with great contempt, and with an aversion that broke out often into violence and injustice. But their ministers, on their parts, were not wanting in their complaints, aggravating matters, and possessing the bishops with many stories of designs and plottings against the state. So many were brought before the council, and the new ecclesiastical commission, for pretended riots, and for using their ministers ill, but chiefly for not coming to church, and for holding conventicles. The proofs were often defective, and lay rather in presumptions, than clear evidence; and the punishments proposed were often arbitrary, not warranted by law. So the judges and other lawyers, that were of those courts, were careful to keep proceedings according to forms of law; upon which Sharp was often complaining that favour was shewn to the enemies of the church, under the pretence of law. It was said, that the people of the country were in such a combination, that it was not possible to find witnesses to prove things fully; and he often said, must the church be ruined for punctilios of law? When he could not carry matters by a vote, as he had a mind, he usually looked to the Earl of Rothes; who upon that was ever ready to say, he would take it upon him to order the matter as Sharp proposed, and would do it in the King's name. Great numbers were cast in prison, where they 1665. Illegal and severe proceedings in Scotland.

1665. were kept long, and ill used: and sometimes they were fined, and the younger sort whipped about the streets. The people grew more sullen on all this ill usage: many were undone by it, and went over to the Scots in Ulster, where they were well received, and had all manner of liberty as to their way of religion.

Burnet was sent up to possess the King with the apprehensions of a rebellion, in the beginning of the Dutch war. He proposed that about twenty of the chief gentlemen of those counties might be secured, and he undertook for the peace of the country, if they were clapped up: this was plainly illegal; but the Lord Lauderdale opposed nothing: so it was done, but with a very ill effect. For those gentlemen, knowing how obnoxious they were, had kept measures a little better; but they being put in prison, both their friends and tenants laid all to the door of the clergy, and hated them the more, and used them the worse for it. The Earls of Argyle, Tweedale, and Kincardin, who were considered as the Lord Lauderdale's chief friends, were cold in all those matters. They studied to keep proceedings in a legal channel, and were for moderate censures; upon which Sharp said, they appeared to be the friends and favourers of the enemies of the church.

Turner executed the laws in a military way.

Wherever the people had generally forsaken their churches, the guards were quartered through the country. Sir James Turner, that commanded them, was naturally fierce, but was mad when he was drunk, and that was very often: so he was ordered by the Lord Rothes to act according to such directions as Burnet should send him; and he went about the country, and received such lists, as the ministers brought him, of those who came not to church; and, without any other proof or any legal conviction, he set such a fine on them as he thought they could pay, and sent soldiers to lie on them till it was paid. I knew him well afterwards, when he came to himself, being out of employment. He was a learned man, but had been always in armies, and knew no other rule but to obey orders. He told me he had no regard to any law, but acted as he was commanded, in a military way: he confessed it went often against the grain with him, to serve such a debauched and worthless company, as the clergy generally were; and that sometimes he did not act up to the rigour of his orders, for

which he was often chid, both by Lord Rothes and Sharp, but was never checked for his illegal and violent proceedings: and though the complaints of him were very high, so that, when he was afterwards seized on by the party, they intended to make a sacrifice of him; yet when they looked into his orders, and found that his proceedings, how fierce soever, fell short of these, they spared him, as a man that had merited by being so gentle among them. 1665.

The truth is, the whole face of the government looked liker the proceedings of an inquisition than of legal courts; and yet Sharp was never satisfied: so the Lord Rothes and he went up to court in the first year of the Dutch war. When they waited first on the King, Sharp put him in mind of what he had said at his last parting, that if their matters went not well, none must be blamed for it, but either the Earl of Lauderdale, or of Rothes: and now he came to tell his Majesty that things were worse than ever; and he must do the Earl of Rothes the justice to say he had done his part. Lord Lauderdale was all on fire at this, but durst not give himself vent before the King; so he only desired that Sharp would come to particulars, and then he should know what he had to say. Sharp put that off in a general charge; and said he knew the party so well, that, if they were not supported by secret encouragements, they would have been long ago weary of the opposition they gave the government. The King had no mind to enter farther into their complaints; so Lord Rothes and he withdrew, and were observed to look very pleasantly upon one another, as they went away. Lord Lauderdale told the King he was now accused to his face; but he would quickly let him see what a man Sharp was. So he obtained a message from the King to him, of which he himself was to be the bearer, requiring him to put his complaints in writing, and to come to particulars. He followed Sharp home, who received him with such a gaiety, as if he had given him no provocation: but Lord Lauderdale was more solemn, and told him it was the King's pleasure that he should put the accusation with which he charged him in writing. Sharp pretended he did not comprehend his meaning. He answered, the matter was plain: he had accused him to the King, and he must either go through with it, and make it out, otherwise he would charge him with leasing-making; and spoke in a

1665. terrible tone to him. Upon that, as he told me, Sharp fell a trembling and weeping: he protested he meant no harm to him; he was only sorry that his friends were, upon all occasions, pleading for favour to the fanatics (that was become the name of reproach). Lord Lauderdale said that would not serve his turn: he was not answerable for his friends, except when they acted by directions from him. Sharp offered to go with him presently to the King, and to clear the whole matter. Lord Lauderdale had no mind to break openly with him; so he accepted of this, and carried him to the King, where he retracted all he had said, in so gross a manner, that the King said afterwards, Lord Lauderdale was ill-natured to press it so heavily, and to force Sharp on giving himself the lie in such coarse terms.

Sharp studies to bring Midletoun into business again.

This went to Sharp's heart: so he made a proposition to the Earl of Dumfries, who was a great friend of the Lord Midletoun's, to try if a reconciliation could be made between him and the Earl of Rothes, and if he would be content to come into the government under Lord Rothes. Lord Dumfries went into Kent, where the Lord Midletoun was then employed in a military command, on the account of the war, and he laid Sharp's proposition before him. The Earl of Midletoun gave Lord Dumfries power to treat in his name; but said he knew Sharp too well to regard any thing that came from him. Before Lord Dumfries came back, Sharp had tried Lord Rothes, but found he would not meddle in it; and they both understood that the Earl of Clarendon's interest was declining, and that the King was like to change his measures. So when Lord Dumfries came back to give Sharp an account of his negotiation, he seemed surprised, and denied he had given him any such commission. This enraged the Earl of Dumfries so, that he published the thing in all companies; among others, he told it very particularly to myself.

At that time Leightoun was prevailed on to go to court, and to give the King a true account of the proceedings in Scotland; which he said were so violent, that he could not concur in the planting the Christian religion itself in such a manner, much less a form of government: he therefore begged leave to quit his bishopric, and to retire; for he thought he was in some sort accessary to the violences done by others, since he was one of them, and all was pre-

tended to be done to establish them and their order. There were indeed no violences committed in his diocese; he went round it continually every year, preaching and catechising from parish to parish. He continued in his private and ascetic course of life, and gave all his income, beyond the small expense of his own person, to the poor; he studied to raise in his clergy a greater sense of spiritual matters, and of the care of souls; and was in all respects a burning and shining light, highly esteemed by the greater part of his diocese; even the presbyterians were much mollified, if not quite overcome, by his mild and heavenly course of life. The King seemed touched with the state that the country was in; he spoke very severely of Sharp; and assured Leightoun he would quickly come to other measures, and put a stop to those violent methods; but he would by no means suffer him to quit his bishopric. So the King gave orders that the ecclesiastical commission should be discontinued; and signified his pleasure that another way of proceeding was necessary for his affairs. 1665.

More forces raised in Scotland.

He understood by his intelligence from Holland, that the exiles at Rotterdam were very busy, and that perhaps the Dutch might furnish the malcontents of Scotland with money and arms; so he thought it was necessary to raise more troops. Two gallant officers, that had served him in the wars, and when these were over had gone with his letters to serve in Muscovy, where one of them, Dalziell, was raised to be a general, and the other, Drumond, was advanced to be a lieutenant-general, and governor of Smolensko, were now, not without great difficulty, sent back by the Czar: so the King intended they should command some forces that he was to raise. Sharp was very apprehensive of this, but the King was positive. A little before this, the act of fining, that had lain so long asleep that it was thought forgot, was revived; and all who had been fined were required to bring in one moiety of their fines, but the other moiety was forgiven those who took the declaration renouncing the covenant. The money was by act of parliament to be given among those who had served and suffered for the King, so that the King had only the trust of distributing it. There was no more Scotch councils called at Whitehall after Lord Midletoun's fall; but, upon particular occasions, the King ordered the privy

1665. counsellors of that kingdom, that were about the town, to be brought to him, before whom he now laid the necessity of raising some more force for securing the quiet of Scotland; he only asked their advice how they should be paid. Sharp very readily said, the money raised by the fining was not yet disposed of; so he proposed the applying it to that use. None opposed this; so it was resolved on: and by that means the cavaliers, who were come up with their pretensions, were disappointed of their last hopes of being recompensed for their sufferings. The blame of all this was cast upon Sharp; at which they were out of measure enraged, and charged him with it. He denied it boldly; but the King published it so openly, that he durst not contradict him. Many, to whom he had denied that he knew any thing of the matter, and called that advice a diabolical invention, affirmed it to the King: and the Lord Lauderdale, to complete his disgrace with the King, got many of his letters, which he had writ to the presbyterians, after the time in which the King knew that he was negotiating for episcopacy, in which he had continued to protest, with what zeal he was soliciting their concerns, not without dreadful imprecations on himself, if he was prevaricating with them, and laid these before the King; so that the King looked on him as one of the worst of men.

1666. Some eminent clergymen in Scotland offended at these proceedings.

Many of the episcopal clergy in Scotland were much offended at all these proceedings. They saw the prejudices of the people were increased by them: they hated violent courses, and thought they were contrary to the meek spirit of the gospel, and that they alienated the nation more from the church. They set themselves much to read church history, and to observe the state of the primitive church, and the spirit of those times; and they could not but observe so great a difference between the constitution of the church under those bishops and our own, that they seemed to agree in nothing but the name. I happened to be settled near two of the most eminent of them, who were often moved to accept of bishoprics, but always refused them, both out of a true principle of humility and self-denial, and also because they could not engage in the methods by which things were carried on. One of these, Mr. Nairn, was one of the politest clergymen I ever knew bred in Scotland: he had formed clear and

lively schemes of things, and was the most eloquent of all our preachers: he considered the pastoral function as a dedication of the whole man to God and his service: he read the moral philosophers much, and had wrought himself into their equal temper, as much as could consist with a great deal of fire that was in his own; but he turned it all to melting devotion: he had a true notion of superstition, as a narrowness of soul, and a meanness of thought in religion: he studied to raise all that conversed with him to great notions of God, and to an universal charity. This made him pity the presbyterians as men of low notions and ill tempers. He had indeed too much heat of imagination, which carried him to be very positive in some things, in which he afterwards changed his mind; and that made him pass for an inconstant man. In a word, he was the brightest man I ever knew among all our Scotch divines. Another of these was Mr. Charteris, a man of a composed and serene gravity, but without affectation or sourness. He scarce ever spoke in company, but was very open and free in private: he made true judgments of things and of men; and had a peculiar talent in managing such as he thought deserved his pains: he had little heat, either in body or mind; for as he had a most emaciated body, so he spoke both slow, and in so low a voice, that he could not easily be heard: he had great tenderness in his temper, and was a very perfect friend, and a most sublime Christian: he lived in a constant contempt of the world, and a neglect of his person. There was a gravity in his conversation that raised an attention, and begot a composedness in all about him, without frightening them; for he made religion appear amiable in his whole deportment: he had read all the lives and the epistles of great men very carefully: he had read the fathers much; and gave me this notion of them, that in speculative points, for which writers of controversy searched into their works, they were but ordinary men; but their excellency lay in that which was least sought for, their sense of spiritual things, and of the pastoral care. In these he thought their strength lay. And he often lamented, not without some indignation, that, in the disputes about the government of the church, much pains were taken to seek out all those passages that shewed what their opinions were; but that due care was not taken

1666.

1666. to set out the notions that they had of the sacred function, of the preparation of mind, and inward vocation, with which men ought to come to holy orders, or of the strictness of life, the deadness to the world, the heavenly temper, and the constant application to the doing of good that became them. Of these he did not talk like an angry reformer, that set up in that strain because he was neglected or provoked, but like a man full of a deep but humble sense of them. He was a great enemy to large confessions of faith, chiefly when they were imposed in the lump as tests; for he was positive in very few things: he had gone through the chief parts of learning; but was then most conversant in history, as the innocentest sort of study, that did not fill the mind with subtilty, but helped to make a man wiser and better. These were both single persons, and men of great sobriety; and they lived in a constant low diet, which they valued more than severer fasting: yet they both became miserable by the stone. Nairn went to Paris where he was cut of a great one, of which he recovered, but lived not many years after. Charteris lived to a great age, and died in the end of the year 1700, having in his last years suffered unspeakable torment from the stone, which the operators would not venture to cut: but all that saw what he suffered, and how he bore it, acknowledged that in him they saw a most perfect pattern of patience and submission to the will of God. It was a great happiness for me, after I had broke into the world by such a ramble as I had made, that I fell into such hands, with whom I entered into a close and particular friendship. They both set me right, and kept me right; though I made at this time a sally that may be mentioned, since it had some relation to public affairs. I observed the deportment of our bishops was in all points so different from what became their function, that I had a more than ordinary zeal kindled within me upon it. They were not only furious against all that stood out against them, but were very remiss in all the parts of their function. Some did not live within their diocese; and those who did, seemed to take no care of them: they shewed no zeal against vice: the most eminently wicked in the county were their particular confidents: they took no pains to keep their clergy strictly to rules, and to their duty; on the contrary, there was a levity and car-

nal way of living about them, that very much scandalized me. There was, indeed, one Scougal, Bishop of Aberdeen, that was a man of rare temper, great piety, and prudence; but I thought he was too much under Sharp's conduct, and was at least too easy to him. 1665.

Upon all this I took a resolution of drawing up a memorial of the grievances we lay under by the ill conduct of our bishops. I resolved that no other person besides myself should have a share in any trouble it might bring on me; so I communicated it to none: this made it not to be, in all the parts of it, so well digested as it otherwise might have been; and I was then but three-and-twenty. I laid my foundation in the constitution of the primitive church, and shewed how they had departed from it, by their neglecting their diocese, meddling so much in secular affairs, raising their families out of the revenues of the church, and, above all, by their violent prosecution of those who differed from them. Of this I writ out some copies, and signed them, and sent them to all the bishops of my acquaintance. Sharp was much alarmed at it, and fancied I was set on to it by some of the Lord Lauderdale's friends. I was called before the bishops, and treated with great severity. Sharp called it a libel: I said, I had set my name to it, so it could not be called a libel: he charged me with the presumption of offering to teach my superiors: I said, such things had been not only done, but justified in all ages. He charged me for reflecting on the King's putting them on his counsels: I said, I found no fault with the King for calling them to his counsels; but with them for going out of that which was their proper province, and for giving ill counsel. Then he charged me for reflecting on some severities, which he said was a reproaching public courts, and a censuring the laws. I said, laws might be made *in terrorem*, not always fit to be executed; but I only complained of clergymen's pressing the rigorous execution of them, and going often beyond what the law dictated: he broke out into a great vehemence, and proposed to the bishops that I should be summarily deprived and excommunicated; but none of them would agree to that. By this management of his the thing grew public: what I had ventured on was variously censured; but the greater part approved of it: Lord Lauderdale and all his friends

Some of the grievances of the clergy laid before the bishops.

1666. were delighted with it; and he gave the King an account of it, who was not ill pleased at it. Great pains were taken to make me ask pardon, but to no purpose; so Sharp let the thing fall: but, that it might appear that I had not done it upon any factious design, I entered into a very close state of retirement, and gave myself wholly to my study, and the duties of my function.

1664. Affairs in England. Thus I have run over the state of Scotland in the years 1663, 1664, 1665, and till near the end of 1666. I now return to the affairs of England; in which I must write more defectively, being then so far from the scene. In winter, 1664, the King declared his resolution of entering into a war with the Dutch: the grounds were so slight, that it was visible there was somewhat more at bottom than was openly owned. A great comet, which appeared that winter, raised the apprehension of those who did not enter into just speculations concerning those matters. The House of Commons was so far from examining nicely into the grounds of the war, that without any difficulty they gave the King two millions and a half for carrying it on. A great fleet was set out, which the Duke commanded in person; as Opdam had the command of the Dutch fleet: but as soon as the war broke out, a most terrible plague broke out also in the city of London, that scattered all the inhabitants that were able to remove themselves elsewhere; it broke the trade of the nation, and swept away about an hundred thousand souls; the greatest havoc that any plague had ever made in England. This did dishearten all people; and, coming in the very time when so unjust a war was begun, it had a dreadful appearance. All the King's enemies, and the enemies of monarchy, said, here was a manifest character of God's heavy displeasure upon the nation; as indeed the ill life the King led, and the viciousness of the whole court, gave but a melancholy prospect: yet God's ways are not as our ways: what all had seen in the year 1660 ought to have silenced those who, at this time, pretended to comment on Providence: but there will be always much discourse of things that are very visible, as well as very extraordinary.

The Dutch war.

1665. The plague broke out at the same time.

The victory at sea not followed. When the two fleets met, it is well known what accidents disordered the Dutch, and what advantage the English had: if that first success had been followed, as was

proposed, it might have been fatal to the Dutch: who, finding they had suffered so much, steered off. The Duke ordered all the sail to be set on to overtake them: there was a council of war called, to concert the method of action when they should come up with them: in that council Penn, who commanded under the Duke, happened to say, that they must prepare for hotter work in the next engagement; he knew well the courage of the Dutch was never so high as when they were desperate. The Earl of Montague, who was then a volunteer, and one of the Duke's court, said to me, it was very visible that made an impression; and all the Duke's domestics said, he had got honour enough; why should he venture a second time? The Dutchess had also given a strict charge to all the Duke's servants, to do all they could to hinder him to engage too far. When matters were settled, they went to sleep; and the Duke ordered a call to be given him when they should get up to the Dutch fleet. It is not known what passed between the Duke and Brounker, who was one of his bed-chamber, and was then in waiting; but he came to Penn, as from the Duke, and said, the Duke ordered the sail to be slackened: Penn was struck with the order, but did not go to argue the matter with the Duke himself, as he ought to have done, but obeyed it. When the Duke had slept, he, upon his waking, went out on the quarter-deck, and seemed amazed to see the sails slackened, and that thereby all hope of overtaking the Dutch was lost: he questioned Penn upon it: Penn put it on Brounker, who said nothing: the Duke denied he had given any such order; but he neither punished Brounker for carrying it, nor Penn for obeying it. He indeed put Brounker out of his service; and it was said that he durst do no more, because he was so much in the King's favour, and in the mistress's. Penn was more in his favour after that than ever before, which he continued to his son after him, though a quaker; and it was thought that all that favour was to oblige him to keep the secret. Lord Montague did believe, that the Duke was struck, seeing the Earl of Falmouth, the King's favourite, and two other persons of quality, killed very near him; and that he had no mind to engage again, and that Penn was privately with him. If Brounker was so much in fault as he seemed to be, it was thought the Duke, in the passion that this

1665.

1665. must have raised in him, would have proceeded to greater extremities, and not have acted with so much phlegm. This proved the breaking the designs of the King's whole reign; for the Dutch themselves believed, that if our fleet had followed them with full sail, we must have come up with them next tide, and have either sunk or taken their whole fleet. De Wit was struck with this misfortune, and imputing some part of it to errors in conduct, he resolved to go on board himself, as soon as their fleet was ready to go to sea again.

An account of the affairs in Holland.

Upon this occasion I will say a little of him, and of the affairs of Holland. His father was the deputy of the town of Dort in the states, when the late Prince of Orange was so much offended with their proceedings, in disbanding a great part of their army; and he was one of those whom he ordered upon that, to be carried to the Castle of Lovestein. Soon after that, his design on Amsterdam miscarrying, he saw the necessity of making up the best he could with the states: but before he had quite healed that wound, he died of the small-pox. Upon his death, all his party fell into disgrace, and the Lovesteiners carried all before them. So De Wit got his son John, then but twenty-five years of age, to be made pensioner of Dort: and within a year after, the pensioner of Holland dying, he was made pensioner of Holland. His breeding was to the civil law, which he understood very well; he was a great mathematician, and as his "Elementa Curvarum" shew what a man he was that way, so perhaps no man ever applied algebra to all matters of trade so nicely as he did. He made himself so entirely the master of the state of Holland, that he understood exactly all the concerns of their revenue, and what sums, and in what manner, could be raised upon any emergency of state: for this he had a pocket-book full of tables, and was ever ready to shew how they could be furnished with money. He was a frank, sincere man, without fraud, or any other artifice but silence: to which he had so accustomed the world, that it was not easy to know, whether he was silent on design or custom. He had a great clearness of apprehension; and when any thing was proposed to him, how new soever, he heard all patiently, and then asked such questions as occurred to him: and by the time he had done all this, he was as much master of the propo-

sition as the person was that made it. He knew nothing of modern history, nor of the state of courts, and was eminently defective in all points of form. But he laid down this for a maxim, that all princes and states followed their own interest; so, by observing what their true interests were, he thought he could without great intelligence calculate what they were about. He did not enough consider how far passions, amours, humours, and opinions wrought on the world, chiefly on princes: he had the notion of a commonwealth from the Greeks and Romans; and from them he came to fancy, that an army, commanded by officers of their own country, was both more in their own power, and would serve them with the more zeal, since they themselves had such an interest in the success. And so he was against their hiring foreigners, unless it was to be common soldiers, thereby to save their own people. But he did not enough consider the phlegm and covetousness of his countrymen, of which he felt the ill effects afterwards: this was his greatest error, and it turned fatally upon him. But for the administration of justice at home, and for the management of their trade and their forces by sea, he was the ablest minister they ever had. He had an hereditary hatred to the house of Orange; he thought it was impossible to maintain their liberty, if they were still stadtholders: therefore he did all that was possible to put an invincible bar in their way, by the perpetual edict. But at the same time he took great care of preserving the young Prince's fortune; and looked well to his education; and gave him, as the Prince himself told me, very just notions of every thing relating to their state. For he said, he did not know but that at some time or other he would be set over them; therefore, he intended to render him fit to govern well. 1665.

The town of Amsterdam became at that time very ungovernable. It was thought, that the West-India Company had been given up chiefly by their means; for it was in value so equal to the East-India Company, that the actions of both were often exchanged for one another. When the Bishop of Munster began his pretensions on the city of Munster, and on a great part of Westphalia, they offered themselves up to the states, if they would preserve them: but the town of Amsterdam would not consent to it, nor submit to the charge; yet they never seemed to set up for

1665. a superiority over the rest, nor to break the credit of the court at the Hague: only they were backward in every thing that was proposed, that increased the charge. And they were become so weary of De Wit, that he felt how much the late miscarriage at sea had shaken his credit, since misfortunes are always imputed to the errors of those that govern. So he resolved to go on board: De Ruyter often said, that he was amazed to see how soon he came to a perfect understanding of all the sea affairs. The winds were so long backward, that it was not easy to get their great ships through the Zuyder Sea: so he went out in boats himself, and plummed it so carefully, that he found many more ways to get out by different winds, than was thought formerly practicable. He got out in time to be master of the sea, before the end of the season; and so recovered the affront of the former losses, by keeping at sea after the English fleet was forced to put in. The Earl of Sandwich was sent to the North with a great part of the fleet, to watch for the East-India ships: but he was thought too remiss. They got, before he was aware of it, into Berghen in Norway; if he had followed them quick, he would have forced the port, and taken them all: but he observed forms, and sent to the Viceroy of Norway demanding entrance; that was denied him. But while these messages went backward and forward, the Dutch had so fortified the entrance into the port, that though it was attempted with great courage, yet Tiddiman, and those who composed that squadron, were beat off with great loss, and forced to let go a very rich fleet; for which Lord Sandwich was very much blamed, though he was sent ambassador into Spain, that his disgrace might be a little softened by that employment. The Duke's conduct was also much blamed; and it was said, he was most in fault, but that the Earl of Sandwich was made the sacrifice.

An account of the affairs of Berghen.

Here I will add a particular relation of a transaction relating to that affair, taken from the account given of it by Sir Gilbert Talbot, then the King's envoy at the court of Denmark, in a MS. that I have in my hands. That King did in June 1665 open himself very freely to Talbot, complaining of the states, who, as he said, had drawn the Swedish war on him, on design that he might be forced to depend on them for supplies of money and shipping, and

so to get the customs of Norway and the Sound into their hands for their security. Talbot upon that told him that the Dutch Smyrna fleet was now in Berghen, besides many rich West-India ships; and that they staid there in expectation of a double East-India fleet, and of De Ruyter, who was returning with the spoils of the coast of Guinea: so he said the King of Denmark might seize those ships before the convoy came, which they expected. The King of Denmark said he had not strength to execute that. Talbot said the King, his master, would send a force to effect it; but it was reasonable he should have half the spoil. To which the King of Denmark readily agreed, and ordered him to propose it to his master. So he immediately transmitted it to the King, who approved of it, and promised to send a fleet to put it in execution. The ministers of Denmark were appointed to concert the matter with Tabot; but nothing was put in writing, for the King of Denmark was ashamed to treat of such an affair, otherwise than by word of mouth. Before the end of July, news came that De Ruyter, with the East-India fleet, was on the coast of Norway. Soon after he came into Berghen. The riches then in that port were reckoned at many millions. 1665.

The Earl of Sandwich was then in those seas, so Talbot sent a vessel express to him with the news; but that vessel fell into the hands of the Dutch fleet, and was sent to Holland. The King of Denmark writ to the Viceroy of Norway, and to the Governor of Berghen, ordering them to use all fair means to keep the Dutch still in their harbour, promising to send particular instructions in a few days to them how to proceed. Talbot sent letters with these, to be delivered secretly to the commanders of the English frigates, to let them know that they might boldly assault the Dutch in port, for the Danes would make no resistance, pretending a fear that the English might destroy their town; but that an account was to be kept of their prizes, that the King of Denmark might have a just half of all: they were not to be surprised if the Danes seemed at first to talk high, that was to be done for shew; but they would grow calmer when they came to engage. The Earl of Sandwich sent his secretary to Talbot, to know the particulars of the agreement with the King of Denmark; but the vessel that brought him was ordered, upon landing the secretary, to come back to the

1665. fleet, so that it was impossible to send by that vessel what was desired, and no other ships could be got to carry back the secretary: and thus the Earl of Sandwich went to attack the Dutch fleet without staying for an answer from Talbot, or knowing what orders the Governor of Berghen had yet received; for though the orders were sent, yet it was so great a way, ten or twelve days' journey, that they could not reach the place but after the English fleet had made the attack. The Viceroy of Norway, who resided at Christiana, had his orders sooner, and sent out two gallies to communicate the agreement to the Earl of Sandwich, but missed him, for he was then before Berghen. The Governor of Berghen, not having yet the orders that the former express promised him, sent a gentleman to the English fleet, desiring they would make no attack for two or three days, for by that time he expected his orders. Clifford was sent to the Governor, who insisted that till he had orders he must defend the port, but that he expected them in a very little time. Upon Clifford's going back to the fleet, a council of war was called, in which the officers, animated with the hope of a rich booty, resolved, without farther delay, to attack the port, either doubting the sincerity of the Danish court, or unwilling to give them so large a share of that on which they reckoned as already their prize. Upon this Tiddiman began the attack, which ended fatally: divers frigates were disabled, and many officers and seamen were killed. The squadron was thus ruined, and Tiddiman was ready to sink; so he was forced to slip his cables, and retire to the fleet, which lay without the rocks. This action was on the 3d of August, and on the 4th the Governor received his orders. So he sent for Clifford, and shewed him his orders; but as the English fleet had by their precipitation forced him to do what he had done, so he could not, upon what had happened the day before, execute those orders, till he sent an account of what had passed to the court of Denmark, and had the King's second orders upon it; and if the whole English fleet would not stay in those seas so long, he desired they would leave six frigates before the harbour, and he would engage the Dutch should not in the meanwhile go out to sea: but the English were sullen upon their disappointment, and sailed away. The King of Denmark was unspeakably troubled at the loss of the greatest

treasure he was ever like to have in his hands. This was a design well laid, that would have been as fatal to the Dutch as ignominious to the King of Denmark, and was, by the impatient ravenousness of the English, lost without possibility of recovering it: and indeed there was not one good step made after this in the whole progress of the war. 1665.

England was at this time in a dismal state. The plague continued for the most part of the summer in and about London, and began to spread over the country. The Earl of Clarendon moved the King to go to Salisbury, but the plague broke out there: so the court went to Oxford, where another session of parliament was held. And though the conduct at sea was severely reflected on, yet all that was necessary for carrying on the war another year was given. The House of Commons kept up the ill humour they were in against the nonconformists very high. A great many of the ministers of London were driven away by the plague, though some few staid. Many churches being shut up, when the inhabitants were in a more than ordinary disposition to profit by good sermons, some of the nonconformists upon that went into the empty pulpits, and preached; and it was given out with very good success: and in many other places they began to preach openly, not without reflecting on the sins of the court, and on the ill usage that they themselves had met with. This was represented very odiously at Oxford: so a severe bill was brought in, requiring all the silenced ministers to take an oath, declaring it was not lawful on any pretence whatsoever to take arms against the King, or any commissioned by him, and that they would not at any time endeavour an alteration in the government of the church or state. Such as refused this were not to come within five miles of any city, or parliament borough, or of the church where they had served. This was much opposed in both houses, but more faintly in the House of Commons. The Earl of Southampton spoke vehemently against it in the House of Lords: he said he could take no such oath himself; for how firm soever he had always been to the church, yet, as things were managed, he did not know but he himself might see cause to endeavour an alteration. Doctor Earl, Bishop of Salisbury, died at that time; but, before his death, he declared himself much against this act. He was the man

The parliament at Oxford.

1665. of all the clergy for whom the King had the greatest esteem. He had been his sub-tutor, and had followed him in all his exile with so clear a character, that the King could never see or hear of any one thing amiss in him. So he, who had a secret pleasure in finding out any thing that lessened a man esteemed eminent for piety, yet had a value for him beyond all the men of his order. Sheldon and Ward were the bishops that acted and argued most for this act, which came to be called the Five Mile Act. All that were the secret favourers of popery promoted it: their constant maxim being, to bring all the sectaries into so desperate a state, that they should be at mercy, and forced to desire a toleration on such terms, as the King should think fit to grant it on. Clifford began to make a great figure in the House of Commons. He was the son of a clergyman, born to a small fortune: but was a man of great vivacity. He was reconciled to the church of Rome before the restoration. The Lord Clarendon had many spies among the priests: and the news of this was brought him among other things. So, when Clifford began first to appear in the house, he got one to recommend him to the Lord Clarendon's favour. The Lord Clarendon looked into the advice that was brought him; and, by comparing things together, he perceived that he must be that man: and upon that he excused himself the best he could. So Clifford struck in with his enemies, and tied himself particularly to Bennet, made Lord, and afterwards Earl of Arlington. While the act was before the House of Commons, Vaughan, afterwards made chief justice of the common-pleas, moved that the word "legally" might be added to the word "commissioned by the King:" but Finch, the attorney-general, said, that was needless; since unless the commission was legal it was no commission, and to make it legal, it must be issued out for a lawful occasion, and to persons capable of it, and must pass in the due form of law. The other insisted that the addition would clear all scruples, and procure an universal compliance; but that could not be obtained, for it was intended to lay difficulties in the way of those, against whom the act was levelled. When the bill came up to the Lords, the Earl of Southampton moved for the same addition; but was answered by the Earl of Anglesey, upon the same grounds on which Finch went. Yet this gave great satisfaction to ma-

ny who heard it, this being the avowed sense of the legislators. The whole matter was so explained by Bridgman, when Bates, with a great many more, came into the Court of Common-pleas to take the oath. The act passed; and the nonconformists were put to great straits. They had no mind to take the oath; and they scarce knew how to dispose of themselves according to the terms of the act. Some moderate men took pains to persuade them to take the oath. It was said by "endeavour" was only meant an unlawful endeavour; and that it was so declared in the debates of both houses. Some judges did on the bench expound it in that sense. Yet few of them* took it. Many more refused it, who were put to hard shifts to live, being so far separated from the places from which they drew their chief subsistence. Yet as all this severity in a time of war, and of such a public calamity, drew very hard censures on the promoters of it, so it raised the compassions of their party so much, that I have been told they were supplied more plentifully at that time than ever. There was better reason than perhaps those of Oxford knew, to suspect practices against the state. 1665.

The designs of the commonwealth party.

Algernon Sidney, and some others of the commonwealth party, came to De Wit, and pressed him to think of an invasion of England and Scotland, and gave him great assurances of a strong party; and they were bringing many officers to Holland to join in the undertaking. They dealt also with some in Amsterdam, who were particularly sharpened against the King, and were for turning England into a commonwealth. The matter was for some time in agitation at the Hague; but De Wit was against it, and got it to be laid aside. He said, their going into such a design would provoke France to turn against them: it might engage them in a long war, the consequences of which could not be foreseen; and, as there was no reason to think, that while the parliament was so firm to the King, any discontents could be carried so far as to a general rising, which these men undertook for; so, he said, what would the effect be of turning England into a commonwealth, if it could possibly be brought about, but the ruin of Holland? since it would naturally draw many of the Dutch to leave their

* That is, the Nonconformists.

1665.

country, which could not be kept and maintained but at a vast charge, to exchange it for the plenty and security that England afforded: therefore all that he would engage in was, to weaken the trade of England, and to destroy their fleet; in which he succeeded the following year beyond all expectation. The busy men in Scotland, being encouraged from Rotterdam, went about the country, to try if any men of weight would set themselves at the head of their designs for an insurrection. The Earl of Cassilis and Lockhart were the two persons they resolved to try; but they did it at so great a distance, that, from the proposition made to them there was no danger of misprision of treason. Lord Cassilis had given his word to the King, that he would never engage in any plots; and he had got under the King's hand a promise, that he and his family should not be disturbed, let him serve God in what way he pleased; so he did not suffer them to come so far as to make him any propositions: Lockhart did the same; they seeing no other person that had credit enough in the country to bring the people about him, gave over all the projects for that year; but, upon the informations that the King had of their caballing at Rotterdam, he raised those troops of which mention was formerly made.

The Duke of York's jealousy.

An accident happened this winter at Oxford, too inconsiderable, and too tender to be mentioned, if it were not that great effects were believed to have followed on it. The Duke had always one private amour after another, in the managing of which, he seemed to stand more in awe of the Dutchess, than, considering the inequality of their rank, could have been imagined. Talbot was looked on as the chief manager of those intrigues. The Dutchess's deportment was unexceptionable, which made her authority the greater. At Oxford there was then a very graceful young man of quality that belonged to her court, whose services were so acceptable, that she was thought to look at him in a particular manner: this was so represented to the Duke, that he being resolved to emancipate himself into more open practices, took up a jealousy, and put the person out of his court with so much precipitation, that the thing became very public by this means. The Dutchess lost the power she had over him so entirely, that no method she could think of was like to recover it, except one. She

began to discover what his religion was, though he still came not only to church, but to sacrament; and upon that she, to regain what she had lost, entered into private discourses with his priests; but in so secret a manner, that there was not for some years after this the least suspicion given. She began by degrees to slacken in her constant coming to prayers and to sacrament, in which she had been before that regular, almost to superstition. She excused that on her ill health; for she fell into an ill habit of body, which some imputed to the effect of some of the Duke's distempers communicated to her. A story was set about, and generally believed, that the Earl of Southesk, that had married a daughter of Duke Hamilton's, suspecting some familiarities between the Duke and his wife, had taken a sure method to procure a disease to himself, which he communicated to his wife, and was by that means set round till it came to the Dutchess, who was so tainted with it that it was the occasion of the death of all her children, except the two daughters, our two queens; and was believed the cause of an illness, under which she languished long, and died so corrupted, that in dressing her body after death, one of her breasts burst, being a mass of corruption. Lord Southesk was for some years not ill pleased to have this believed: it looked like a peculiar strain of revenge, with which he seemed much delighted: but I know he has to some of his friends denied the whole of the story very solemnly: another acted a better part: he did not like a commerce that he observed between the Duke and his wife. He went and expostulated with him upon it. The Duke fell a commending his wife much: he told him he came not to seek his wife's character from him: the most effectual way of commending her was to have nothing to do with her. He added, that if princes would do those wrongs to subjects, who could not demand such reparations of honour from them, as they could from their equals, it would put them on secreter methods of revenge: for some injuries were such, that men of honour could not bear them; and upon a new observation he made of the Duke's designs upon his wife, he quitted a very good post, and went with her into the country, where he kept her till she died: upon the whole matter the Duke was often ill. His children were born with ulcers, or they broke out upon them soon

1665.

His amours.

1665. after; and all his sons died young and unhealthy: this has, as far as any thing presumptive only, and not to be brought in the way of proof, prevailed to create a suspicion, that so healthy a child as the pretended Prince of Wales, could neither be his, nor be born of any wife, with whom he had lived long. The violent pain that his eldest daughter had in her eyes, and the gout which has early seized our present Queen, are thought the dregs of a tainted original. Willis, the great physician, being called to consult for one of his sons, gave his opinion in those words: *Mala stamina vitæ;* which gave such offence, that he was never called for afterwards.

1666. I know nothing of the counsels of the year 1666, nor whose advices prevailed. It was resolved that the Duke should not go to sea; but that Monk should command the great fleet of between fifty and sixty ships of the line, and that Prince Rupert should be sent with a squadron of about twenty-five ships, to meet the French fleet, and to hinder their conjunction with the Dutch; for the French had promised a fleet to join the Dutch, but never sent it. Monk went out so certain of victory, that he seemed only concerned for fear the Dutch should not come out. The court flattered themselves with the hopes of a very happy year; but it proved a fatal one. The Dutch fleet came out, De Wit and some of the states being on board. They engaged the English fleet for two days, in which they had a manifest superiority; but it cost them dear, for the English fought well. But the Dutch were superior in number, and were so well furnished with chained-shot (a peculiar contrivance of which De Wit had the honour to be thought the inventor, that the English fleet was quite unrigged); and they were in no condition to work themselves off: so they must have all been taken, sunk, or burnt, if Prince Rupert, being yet in the channel, and hearing that they were engaged by the continued roaring of guns, had not made all possible haste to get to them. He came in good time. And the Dutch, who had suffered much, seeing so great a force come up sheered off. He was in no condition to pursue them, but brought off our fleet, which saved us a great loss that seemed otherwise unavoidable. The court gave out that it was a victory; and public thanksgivings were ordered, which was a horrid mocking of God, and a

The fleet was almost quite lost, and happily saved by Prince Rupert.

lying to the world. We had in one respect reason to thank God, that we had not lost our whole fleet. A dreadful fire completed the miseries of this year. The plague was so sunk in London, that the inhabitants began to return to it, and brought with them a great deal of manufacture, which was lying on the hands of the clothiers and others, now in the second year of the war, in which trade and all other consumptions were very low. It was reckoned that a peace must come next winter. The merchants were upon that preparing to go to market as soon as possible. The summer had been the driest that was known of some years: and London being for the most part built of timber filled up with plaister, all was extreme dry. On the 2d of September a fire broke out, that raged for three days, as if it had a commission to devour every thing that was in its way. On the fourth day it stopped in the midst of very combustible matter.

1666.

The fire of London.

I will not enlarge on the extent nor the destruction made by the fire: many books are full of it. That which is still a great secret is, whether it was casual or raised on design. The English fleet had landed on the Vly, an island lying near the Texel, and had burnt it: upon which some came to De Wit and offered a revenge, that, if they were assisted, they would set London on fire. He rejected the proposition; for he said he would not make the breach wider, nor the quarrel irreconcileable: he said it was brought him by one of the Labadists, as sent to them by some others. He made no farther reflections on the matter till the city was burnt. Then he began to suspect there had been a design, and that they had intended to draw him into it, and to lay the odium of it upon the Dutch: but he could hear no news of those who had sent that proposition to him. In the April before, some commonwealths-men were found in a plot and hanged; who, at their execution, confessed they had been spoken to to assist in a design of burning London on the 2d of September. This was printed in the gazette of that week, which I myself read. Now the fire breaking out on the 2d, made all people conclude, that there was a design some time before on foot for doing it.

The papists were generally charged with it. One Hubert, a French papist, was seized in Essex, as he was getting out of the way in great confusion: he confessed he had

It was charged on the papists.

1666. begun the fire, and persisted in his confession to his death; for he was hanged upon no other evidence but that of his own confession. It is true he gave so broken an account of the whole matter, that he was thought mad. Yet he was blindfolded, and carried to several places of the city, and then, his eyes being opened, he was asked if that was the place; and he being carried to wrong places, after he looked round about for some time, he said that was not the place; but when he was brought to the place where it first broke out, he affirmed that was the true place. And Tillotson told me, that Howell, then the recorder of London, was with him, and had much discourse with him; and that he concluded, it was impossible that it could be a melancholy dream: the horror of the fact, and the terror of death, and perhaps some engagements in confession, might put him in such disorder, that it was not possible to draw a clear account of any thing from him but of what related to himself. Tillotson, who believed that the city was burnt on design, told me a circumstance that made the papists employing such a crazed man, in such a service, the more credible. Langhorn, the popish counsellor at law, who for many years passed for a protestant, was dispatching a half-witted man to manage elections in Kent before the restoration. Tillotson being present, and observing what a sort of man he was, asked Langhorn how he could employ him in such services. Langhorn answered, it was a maxim with him, in dangerous services, to employ none but half-witted men, if they could be but secret and obey orders; for if they should change their minds, and turn informers instead of agents, it would be easy to discredit them, and to carry off the weight of any discoveries they could make, by shewing they were madmen, and so not like to be trusted in critical things.

A strong presumption of it.

The most extraordinary passage, though it is but a presumption, was told me by Dr. Lloyd and the Countess of Clarendon. The latter had a great estate in the New River, that is brought from Ware to London, which is brought together at Islington, where there is a great room full of pipes that convey it through all the streets of London. The constant order of the matter was, to set all the pipes a running on Saturday night, that so the cisterns might be all full by Sunday morning, there being a more than ordinary con-

sumption of water on that day. There was one Grant, a papist, under whose name Sir William Petty published his observations on the bills of mortality: he had some time before applied himself to Lloyd, who had great credit with the Countess of Clarendon, and said he could raise that estate considerably, if she would make him a trustee for her. His schemes were probable, and he was made one of the board that governed that matter; and by that he had a right to come as often as he pleased, to view their works at Islington. He went thither the Saturday night before the fire broke out, and called for the key of the place where the heads of the pipes were, and turned all the cocks that were then open, and stopped the water, and went away, and carried the keys with him: so when the fire broke out next morning, they opened the pipes in the streets to find water, but there was none. And some hours were lost in sending to Islington, where the door was to be broken open, and the cocks turned; and it was long before the water got to London. Grant indeed denied that he had turned the cocks; but the officer of the works affirmed, that he had, according to order, set them all a running, and that no person had got the keys from him besides Grant; who confessed he had carried away the keys, but pretended he did it without design. There were many other stories set about, as that the papists in several places had asked, if there was no news of the burning of London, and that it was talked of in many parts beyond sea, long before the news could get thither from London. In this matter I was much determined by what Sir Thomas Littleton, the father, told me: he was a man of a strong head, and sound judgment; he had just as much knowledge in trade, history, the disposition of Europe, and the constitution of England, as served to feed and direct his thoughts, and no more. He lived all the summer long in London, where I was his next neighbour, and had for seven years a constant and daily conversation with him. He was treasurer of the navy in conjunction with Osborn, who was afterwards lord treasurer, who supplanted him in that post, and got it all into his own hands. He had a very bad opinion of the King, and thought that he had worse intentions than his brother, but that he had a more dexterous way of covering and managing them; only his laziness made him less earnest in

1666.

1666. prosecuting them. He had generally the character of the ablest parliament man in his time: his chief estate lay in the city, not far from the place where the fire broke out, though it did not turn that way. He was one of the committee of the House of Commons, that examined all the presumptions of the city's being burnt on design: and he often assured me, that there was no clear presumption made out about it, and that many stories which were published with good assurance, came to nothing upon a strict examination. He was at that time, that the inquiry was made, in employment at court; so whether that biassed him or not, I cannot tell. There was so great a diversity of opinions in the matter, that I must leave it under the same uncertainty in which I found it. If the French and Dutch had been at that time designing an impression elsewhere, it might have been more reasonable to suppose it was done on design to distract our affairs: but it fell out at a dead time, when no advantage could be made of it. And it did not seem probable that the papists had engaged in the design, merely to impoverish and ruin the nation; for they had nothing ready then to graft upon the confusion that this put all the people in. Above twelve thousand houses were burnt down, with the greatest part of the furniture and merchandize that was in them. All means used to stop it proved ineffectual, though the blowing up of the houses was the most effectual of any; but the wind was so high, that fleaks of fire and burning matter were carried in the air across several streets, so that the fire spread not only in the next neighbourhood, but at a great distance. The King and the Duke were almost all the day long on horseback with the guards, seeing to all that could be done, either for quenching the fire, or for carrying off persons and goods to the fields all about London. The most astonishing circumstance of that dreadful conflagration was, that, notwithstanding the great destruction that was made, and the great confusion in the streets, I could never hear of any one person that was either burnt or trodden to death. The King was never observed to be so much struck with any thing in his whole life, as with this: but the citizens were not so well satisfied with the Duke's behaviour; they thought he looked too gay, and too little concerned. A jealousy of his being concerned in it was spread about with

great industry, but with very little appearance of truth: yet it grew to be very generally believed, chiefly after he had owned he was a papist. 1666.

In Scotland the fermentation went very high: Turner was sent again into the west in October, this year; and he began to treat the country at the old rate. The people were alarmed, and saw they were to be undone: they met together, and talked with some fiery ministers: Semple, Maxwell, Welsh, and Guthry, were the chief incendiaries. Two gentlemen that had served in the wars, one a lieutenant-colonel, Wallace, and the other that had been a major, Learmoth, were the best officers they had to rely on. The chief gentlemen of those counties were all clapped up in prison, as was formerly told: so that preserved them; otherwise they must have engaged with the people, or have lost their interest among them. The people were told, that the fire of London had put things in that confusion at court, that any vigorous attempt would disorder all the King's affairs. If the new-levied troops had not stood in their way, they would have been able to have carried all things against them: for the two troops of guards, with the regiment of foot-guards, would not have been able to have kept their ground before them. The people, as some of them told me afterwards, were made to believe that the whole nation was in the same disposition: so on the 13th of November they ran together; and two hundred of them went to Dumfries, where Turner then lay with a few soldiers about him; the greatest part of his men being then out in parties, for the levying of fines. So they surprised him before he could get to his arms; otherwise, he told me, he would have been killed rather than taken, since he expected no mercy from them. With himself they seized his papers and instructions, by which it appeared he had been gentler than his orders were: so they resolved to keep him, and exchange him as occasion should be offered. But they did not tell him what they intended to do with him; so he thought they were keeping him, till they might hang him up with the more solemnity. There was a considerable cash in his hands, partly for the pay of his men, partly of the fines that he had raised in the country, that was seized; but he to whom they trusted the keeping of it ran away with it. They spread a report, which they have since print- Disorders in Scotland.

1666. ed, and it passed for some time current, that this rising was the effect of a sudden heat, that the country was put into, by seeing one of their neighbours tied on a horse hand and foot, and carried away, only because he could not pay a high fine that was set upon him; and that upon this provocation, the neighbours, who did not know how soon such usage would fall to their own turn, ran together, and rescued him; and that, fearing some severe usage for that, they kept together, and that others coming into them, they went on, and seized Turner. But this was a story made only to beget compassion: for, after the insurrection was quashed, the privy council sent some round the country to examine the violences that had been committed, particularly in the parish where it was given out that this was done. I read the report they made to the council, and all the depositions that the people of the country made before them; but this was not mentioned in any one of them.

A rebellion in the west. The news of this rising was brought to Edinburgh, fame increasing their numbers to some thousands; and this happening to be near Carlisle, the governor of that place sent an express to court, in which the strength of the party was magnified much beyond the truth. The Earl of Rothes was then at court, who had assured the King that all things were so well managed in Scotland, that they were in perfect quiet. There were, he said, some stubborn fanatics still left, that would be soon subdued; but there was no danger from any thing that they or their party could do; he gave no credit to the express from Carlisle; but, two days after, the news was confirmed by an express from Scotland. Sharp was then at the head of the government; so he managed this little war, and gave all the orders and directions in it. Dalziel was commanded to draw all the forces they had together, which lay then dispersed in quarters: when that was done, he marched westward: a great many ran to the rebels, who came to be called whigs. At Lanerk, in Cliddisdale, they had a solemn fast-day; in which, after much praying, they renewed the covenant, and set out their manifesto, in which they denied that they rose against the King; they complained of the oppression under which they had groaned; they desired that episcopacy might be put down, and that presbytery and the covenant might be set up, and their ministers restored again to them;

and then they promised that they would be, in all other things, the King's most obedient subjects. The Earl of Argyle raised fifteen hundred men, and wrote to the council, that he was ready to march upon order. Sharp thought that if he came into the country, either he or his men would certainly join the rebels; so he sent him no order at all: but he was at the charge of keeping his men together to no purpose. Sharp was all the while in a dreadful consternation, and wrote dismal letters to court, praying that the forces which lay in the north of England might be ordered down; for he wrote, they were surrounded with the rebels, and did not know what was become of the King's forces. He also moved, that the council would go and shut themselves up in the castle of Edinburgh; but that was opposed by the rest of the board, as an abandoning of the town, and the betraying an unbecoming fear, which might very much encourage the rebels, and such as intended to go over to them. Orders were given out for raising the country; but there was no militia yet formed. In the mean while Dalziel followed the rebels as close as he could. He published a proclamation of pardon, as he was ordered, to all that should in twenty-four hours time return to their houses, and declared all that continued any longer in arms rebels. He found the country was so well affected towards them, that he could get no sort of intelligence but what his own parties brought in to him. The whigs marched towards Edinburgh, and came within two miles of the town; but finding neither town nor country declare for them, and that all the hopes their leaders had given them proved false, they lost heart. From being once above two thousand they were now come to be not above eight or nine hundred; so they resolved to return back to the west, where they knew the people were of their side; and where they could more easily disperse themselves, and get either into England or Ireland. The ministers were very busy in all those counties, plying people of rank not to forsake their brethren in this extremity; and they had got a company of about three or fourscore gentlemen together, who were marching towards them, when they heard of their defeat; and upon that they dispersed themselves. The rebels thought to have marched back by the way of Pentland-hill: they were not much concerned for the few horses

1666.

The defeat given the rebels at Pentland-hill.

1666. they had: and they knew that Dalziel, whose horse was fatigued with a fortnight's constant march, could not follow them; and if they had gained but one night more in their march, they had got out of his reach; but on the 28th of November, about an hour before sun-set, he came up to them. They were posted on the top of a hill, so he engaged with a great disadvantage: they, finding they could not get off, stopped their march. Their ministers did all they could, by preaching and praying, to infuse courage into them; and they sung the seventy-fourth and the seventy-eighth Psalms; and so they turned on the King's forces: they received the first charge that was given by the troop of guards very resolutely, and put them in disorder; but that was all the action; for immediately they lost all order, and ran for their lives. It was now dark; about forty were killed on the spot, and a hundred and thirty were taken. The rest were favoured by the darkness of the night, and the weariness of the King's troops, that were not in case to pursue them, and had no great heart to it; for they were a poor harmless company of men, become mad by oppression; and they had taken nothing during all the time they had been together, but what had been freely given them by the country people. The rebellion was broken with the loss of only five on the King's side. The general came next day into Edinburgh with his prisoners.

Severe proceedings against the prisoners.

The two archbishops were now delivered out of all their fears; and the common observation, that cruelty and cowardice go together, was too visibly verified on this occasion. Lord Rothes came down full of rage; and that being inflamed by the two archbishops, he resolved to proceed with the utmost severity against the prisoners. Burnet advised the hanging of all those who would not renounce the covenant, and promise to conform to the laws for the future; but that was thought too severe; yet he was sent up to London to procure of the King an instruction, that they should tender the declaration renouncing the covenant to all who were thought disaffected; and proceed against those who refused that, as against seditious persons. The best of the episcopal clergy set upon the bishops, to lay hold on this opportunity for regaining the affections of the country, by becoming intercessors for the prisoners, and for the country, that was like to be quartered on and eat up,

for the favour they had expressed to them: many of the bishops went into this, and particularly Wishart of Edinburgh, though a rough man, and sharpened by ill usage: yet upon this occasion he expressed a very Christian temper, such as became one who had felt what the rigours of a prison had been: for he sent every day very liberal supplies to the prisoners; which was indeed done by the whole town in so bountiful a manner, that many of them, who being shut up had neither air nor exercise, were in greater danger by their plenty, than they had been by all their unhappy campaign: but Sharp could not be mollified; on the contrary he encouraged the ministers in the disaffected counties to bring in all the informations they could gather, both against the prisoners, and against all those who had been among them, that they might be sought for, and proceeded against. Most of those got over to Ireland: but the ministers in those parts acted so ill a part, so unbecoming their characters, that the aversion of the country to them was increased to all possible degrees; they looked on them now as wolves, and not as shepherds. It was a moving sight to see ten of the prisoners hanged upon one gibbet at Edinburgh; thirty-five more were sent to their countries, and hanged up before their own doors; their ministers all the while using them hardly, and declaring them damned for their rebellion. They might all have saved their lives, if they would have renounced the covenant; so they were really a sort of martyrs for it. They did all at their death give their testimony, according to their phrase, to the covenant, and to all that had been done pursuant to it; and they expressed great joy in their sufferings. Most of them were but mean and inconsiderable men in all respects; yet even these were firm and inflexible in their persuasions. Many of them escaped, notwithstanding the great search that was made for them. Guthry, the chief of their preachers, was hid in my mother's house, who was bred to her brother Waristoun's principles, and could never be moved from them; he died next spring. One Maccail, that was only a probationer preacher, and who had been chaplain in Sir James Steward's house, had gone from Edinburgh to them: it was believed he was sent by the party in town, and that he knew their correspondents; so he was put to the torture, which in Scotland they call the boots; 1666.

1666. for they put a pair of iron boots close on the leg, and drive wedges between these and the leg. The common torture was only to drive these in the calf of the leg; but I have been told they were sometimes driven upon the shin-bone. He bore the torture with great constancy; and either he could say nothing, or he had the firmness not to discover those who trusted him. Every man of them could have saved his own life, if he would accuse any other; but they were all true to their friends. Maccail, for all the pains of the torture, died in a rapture of joy: his last words were, farewell sun, moon, and stars—farewell kindred and friends—farewell world and time—farewell weak and frail body—welcome eternity—welcome angels and saints—welcome Saviour of the world, and welcome God, the judge of all; which he spoke with a voice and manner that struck all that heard it.

1667. The King is more gentle than the bishops.

His death was the more cried out on, because it came to be known afterwards, that Burnet, who had come down before his execution, had brought with him a letter from the King, in which he approved of all that they had done; but added, that he thought there was blood enough shed, and therefore he ordered that such of the prisoners as should promise to obey the laws for the future, should be set at liberty, and that the incorrigible should be sent to the plantations. Burnet let the execution go on, before he produced his letter, pretending there was no council-day between: but he, who knew the contents of it, ought to have moved the Lord Rothes to call an extraordinary council to prevent the execution: so that blood was laid on him. He was, contrary to his natural temper, very violent at that time, much inflamed by his family, and by all about him. Thus this rebellion, that might have been so turned in the conclusion of it that the clergy might have gained reputation and honour by a wise and merciful conduct, did now exasperate the country more than ever against the church, The forces were ordered to lie in the west, where Dalziel acted the Muscovite too grossly: he threatened to spit men and to roast them; and he killed some in cold blood, or rather in hot blood, for he was then drunk, when he ordered one to be hanged, because he would not tell where his father was, for whom he was in search. When he heard of any that did not go to

church, he did not trouble himself to set a fine upon him, but he set as many soldiers upon him as should eat him up in a night: by this means all people were struck with such a terror that they came regularly to church. And the clergy were so delighted with it, that they used to speak of that time as the poets do of the golden age. They never interceded for any compassion to their people, nor did they take care to live more regularly, or to labour more carefully. They looked on the soldiery as their patrons; they were ever in their company, complying with them in their excesses; and, if they were not much wronged, they rather led them into them, than checked them for them. Dalziel himself and his officers were so disgusted with them, that they increased the complaints, that had now more credit for them, than from those of the country, who were looked on as their enemies. Things of so strange a pitch in vice were told of them, that they seemed scarce credible. The person whom I believed the best as to all such things, was one Sir John Cunningham, an eminent lawyer, who had an estate in the country, and was the most extraordinary man of his profession in that kingdom: he was episcopal beyond most men in Scotland, who for the far greatest part thought that forms of government were in their own nature indifferent, and might be either good or bad according to the hands in which they fell; whereas he thought episcopacy was of a divine right, settled by Christ. He was not only very learned in the civil and canon law, and in the philosophical learning, but was very universal in all other learning: he was a great divine, and well read in the fathers, and in ecclesiastical history: he was, above all, a man of eminent probity, and of a sweet temper, and indeed one of the most pious men of the nation. The state of the church in those parts went to his heart; for it was not easy to know how to keep an even hand between the perverseness of the people on the one side, and the vices of the clergy on the other. They looked on all those that were sensible of their miscarriages, as enemies of the church. It was after all hard to believe all that was set about against them. 1667.

A change of counsel and more moderation in the government.

The King's affairs in England forced him to soften his government every where. So at this time the Earls of Tweedale and Kincardin went to court, and laid before the

1667. King the ill state the country was in. Sir Robert Murray talked often with him about it. Lord Lauderdale was more cautious by reason of the jealousy of his being a presbyterian. Upon all which the King resolved to put Scotland into other hands. A convention of estates had been called the year before to raise money for maintaining the troops. This was a very ancient practice in the Scotish constitution: a convention was summoned to meet within twenty days: they could only levy money, and petition for the redress of grievances; but could make no new laws, and meddle only with that for which they were brought together. In the former convention Sharp had presided, being named by the Earl of Rothes as the King's commissioner. In the winter 1666, or rather in the spring 1667, there was another convention called, in which the King, by a special letter, appointed Duke Hamilton to preside: and the King in a letter to Lord Rothes, ordered him to write to Sharp to stay within his diocese, and to come no more to Edinburgh. He upon this was struck with so deep a melancholy, that he shewed as great an abjectness under this slight disgrace, as he had shewed insolence before when he had more favour. The convention continued the assessment for another year at 6000*l.* a month. Sharp, finding he was now under a cloud, studied to make himself popular, by looking after the education of the Marquis of Huntly, now the Duke of Gordon. He had an order long before from the King to look to his education, that he might be bred a protestant; for the strength of popery within that kingdom lay in his family. But, though this was ordered during the Earl of Midletoun's ministry, Sharp had not all this while looked after it. The Earl of Rothes's mistress was a papist, and nearly related to the Marquis of Huntly. So Sharp, either to make his court the better, or at the Lord Rothes's desire, had neglected it these four years; but now he called for him. He was then above fifteen, well hardened in his prejudices by the loss of so much time. What pains was taken on him I know not: but, after a trial of some months, Sharp said he saw he was not to be wrought on, and sent him back to his mother: so the interest that popery had in Scotland, was believed to be chiefly owing to Sharp's compliance with the Earl of Rothes's amours. The neglect of his duty in so important

a matter was much blamed; but the doing it upon such a motive was reckoned yet more infamous. After the convention was over, Lord Rothes sent up Drumond to represent to the King the ill affections of the western parts; and, to touch the King in a sensible point, he said the covenant stuck so deep in their hearts, that no good could be done till that was rooted out. So he proposed, as an expedient, that the King would give the council a power to require all whom they suspected to renounce the covenant, and to proceed against such as refused it as traitors. Drumond had yet too much of the air of Russia about him, though not with Dalziel's fierceness: he had a great measure of knowledge and learning, and some true impressions of religion; but he thought, that upon such powers granted, there would be great dealings in bribes and confiscations. A slight accident happened, which raised a jest that spoiled his errand. The King flung the cover of the letter from Scotland into the fire, which was carried up all in a flame, and set the chimney on fire; upon which it was said that the Scotch letter had fired Whitehall: and it was answered, the cover had almost set Whitehall on fire, but the contents of it would certainly set Scotland all in a flame. It was said that the law for renouncing the covenant, inferring only a forfeiture of employments to those who refused it, the stretching it so far as was now proposed would be liable to great exception. Yet, in compliance with a public message, the instruction was sent down as it was desired; but, by a private letter, Lord Rothes was ordered to make no use of it, except upon a special command, since the King had only given way to what was desired to strike a terror into the ill affected. The secret of it broke out; so it had no effect but to make the Lord Rothes and his party more odious. Burnet, upon Sharp's disgrace, grew to be more considered: so he was sent up with a proposition of a very extraordinary nature, that the western counties should be cantoned under a special government, and peculiar taxes, together with the quartering of soldiers upon them. It was said that those counties put the nation to the charge of keeping up such a force; and therefore it seemed reasonable that the charge should lie wholly on them. He also proposed, that a special council should be appointed to sit at Glas- 1667.

1667. gow; and, among other reasons to enforce that motion, he said to the King, and afterwards to Lord Lauderdale, that some at the council board were ill affected to the church, and favoured her enemies, and that traitors had been pleaded for at that board. Lord Lauderdale writ down presently to know what ground there was for this, since, if it was not true, he had Burnet at mercy for leasing-making, which was more criminal when the whole council was concerned in the lie that was made. The only ground for this was, that one of the rebels, excepted in the indemnity that was proclaimed some time before, being taken, and it being evident that his brain was turned, it was debated in council whether he should be proceeded against or not: some argued against that, and said it would be a reproach to the government to hang a madman. This could in no sort justify such a charge: so Lord Lauderdale resolved to make use of it in due time. The proposition itself was rejected as that which the King could not do by law.. Burnet upon this went to the Lord Clarendon, and laid before him the sad estate of their affairs in Scotland. He spoke to the King of it; and he took care to set the English bishops on the King, with whom Burnet had more credit, as more entirely theirs, than ever Sharp had. The Earl of Clarendon's credit was then declining; and it was a clear sign of it when the King told Lord Lauderdale all that he had said to him on Scotch affairs, which provoked him extremely. Burnet was sent down with good words; but the King was resolved to put the affairs of Scotland under another management. Lord Kincardin came down in April, and told me that Lord Rothes was to be stripped of all his places, and to be only lord chancellor. The Earl of Tweedale and Sir Robert Murray were to have the secret in their hands. He told me the peace was as good as made; and when that was done, the army would be disbanded, and things would be managed with more temper both in church and state. This was then so great a secret, that neither the Lord Rothes, nor the two archbishops, had the least hint of it. Some time after this Lord Rothes went to the north: upon which an accident happened that hastened his fall.

The Dutch fleet came into the Frith.

The Scots had during the war set out many privateers; and these had brought in many rich prizes. The Dutch, being provoked with this, sent Van Gheudt with a good

fleet into the Frith, to burn the coast, and to recover such ships as were in that part. He came into the Frith on the first of May. If he had at first hung out English colours, and attacked Leith harbour immediately, which was then full of ships, he might have done what mischief he pleased; for all were secure, and were looking for Sir Jeremy Smith with some frigates, for the defence of the coast, since the King had set out no fleet this year. There had been such a dissipation of treasure, that, for all the money that was given, there was not enough left to set out a fleet. But the court covered this, by saying, the peace was as good as concluded at Breda, where the Lord Hollis and Sir William Coventry were treating about it as plenipotentiaries: and though no cessation was agreed on, yet they reckoned on it as sure. Upon this, a saying of the Earl of Northumberland's was much repeated; when it was said, that the King's mistress was like to ruin the nation, he said, it was she that saved the nation: while we had a House of Commons that gave all the money that was asked, it was better to have the money squandered away in luxury and prodigality, than to have it saved for worse purposes. Van Gheudt did nothing in the Firth for some hours: he shot against Bruntisland without doing any mischief. The country people ran down to the coast, and made a great show. But this was only a feint, to divert the King from that which was chiefly intended; for he sailed out, and joined de Ruyter; and so the shameful attack was made upon the river of Medway: the chain at the mouth of it, which was then all its security, was broke; and the Dutch fleet sailed up to Chatham: of which I shall say no more in this place, but go on with the affairs of Scotland. 1667. And went to Chatham, and burnt our fleet.

Lord Rothes being out of the way when the country was in such danger, was severely aggravated by the Lord Lauderdale, and did bring on the change somewhat the sooner. In June, Sir Robert Murray came down with a letter from the King, superceding Lord Rothes's commission, putting the Treasury in commission, and making Lord Rothes lord chancellor. He excused himself from being raised to that post all he could, and desired to continue lord treasurer; but he struggled in vain, and was forced to submit at last. Now all was turned to a more sober, and more moderate management. Even Sharp grew meek and humble: and

1667. said to myself, it was a great happiness to have to deal with sober and serious men; for Lord Rothes and his crew were perpetually drunk. When the peace of Breda was concluded, the King wrote to the Scotch council, and communicated that to them; and with that signified that it was his pleasure that the army should be disbanded. The Earl of Rothes, Burnet, and all the officers opposed this much. The rebellious disposition of the western counties was much aggravated: it seemed necessary to govern them by a military power. Several expedients were proposed on the other hand. Instead of renouncing the covenant, in which they pretended there were many points of religion concerned, a bond was proposed for keeping the peace, and against rising in arms. This seemed the better test; since it secured the public quiet, and the peace of the country, which was at present the most necessary: the religious part was to be left to time and good management. So an indemnity of a more comprehensive nature was proclaimed; and the bond was all the security that was demanded. Many came into the bond; though there were some among them that pretended scruples, for it was said peace was a word of a large extent; it might be pretended, that obeying all the laws was implied in it: yet the far greater number submitted to this. Those who were disturbed with scruples, were a few melancholy inconsiderable persons.

In order to the disbanding the army with more security, it was proposed, that a county militia should be raised, and trained for securing the public peace. The two archbishops did not like this: they said, the commons, of whom the militia must be composed, being generally ill affected to the church, this would be a prejudice rather than a security. But to content them, it was concluded, that in counties that were ill affected there should be no foot raised, and only some troops of horse. Burnet complained openly, that he saw episcopacy was to be pulled down, and that in such an extremity, he could not look on and be silent. He writ upon these matters a long and sorrowful letter to Sheldon; and upon that, Sheldon writ a very long one to Sir R. Murray, which I read, and found more temper and moderation in it, than I could have expected from him. Murray had got so far into his confidence, and he seemed to depend so entirely on his sincerity, that no informations against him

could work upon Sheldon. Upon Burnet's carrying things so high, Sharp was better used, and was brought again to the council board, where he began to talk of moderation; and in the debate concerning the disbanding the army, he said it was better to expose the bishops to whatsoever might happen, than to have the kingdom governed for their sakes by a military power: yet in private he studied to possess all people with prejudices against the persons then employed as the enemies of the church. At that time Lord Lauderdale got the King to write to the privy council, letting them know that he had been informed traitors had been pleaded for at that board. This was levelled at Burnet. The council, in their answer, as they denied the imputation, so they desired to know who it was that had so aspersed them. Burnet, when the letter was offered to him, to be signed by him, said, he could not say traitors had never been pleaded for at that board, since he himself had once pleaded for one, and put them in mind of the particular case. After this he saw how much he had exposed himself, and grew tamer. The army was disbanded: so Lord Rothes's authority, as general as well as his commission, was now at an end, after it had lasted three years. The pretence of his commission was the preparing matters for a national synod; yet in all that time there was not one step made towards one: for the bishops seemed concerned only for their authority, and their revenues, and took no care of regulating either the worship or the discipline. The Earls of Rothes and Tweedale went to court. The former tried what he could do by the Duke of Monmouth's means, who had married his niece; but he was then young, and was engaged in a mad ramble after pleasure, and minded no business: so Lord Rothes saw the necessity of applying himself to Lord Lauderdale; and he did dissemble his discontent so dexterously, that he seemed well pleased to be freed from the load of business that lay so heavy upon him. He moved to have his accounts of the Treasury passed, to which great exceptions might have been made; and to have an approbation passed under the great seal of all he had done while he was the King's commissioner. Lord Tweedale was against both, and moved that he should be for some time kept under the lash: he knew, that how humble soever he

1667.

1667. was at that time, he would be no sooner secured from being called to an account for what was past, than he would set up a cabal in opposition to every thing, whereas they were sure of his good behaviour as long as he continued to be so obnoxious. The king loved Lord Rothes; so the Earl of Lauderdale consented to all he asked. But they quickly saw good cause to repent of their forwardness.

A great change in Lauderdale's temper.

At this time a great change happened in the course of the Earl of Lauderdale's life, which made the latter part of it very different from what the former had been. Mr. Murray of the bed-chamber, had been page and whipping-boy to King Charles I.; and had great credit with him, not only in procuring private favours, but in all his counsels: he was well turned for a court—very insinuating, but very false; and of so revengeful a temper, that rather than any of the counsels given by his enemies should succeed, he would have revealed them and betrayed both the King and them. It was generally believed, that he had discovered the most important of all his secrets to his enemies. He had one particular quality, that when he was drunk, which was very often, he was upon a most exact reserve, though he was pretty open at all other times. He got a warrant to be an Earl, which was signed at Newcastle; yet he got the King to antedate it, as if it had been signed at Oxford, to get the precedence of some whom he hated: but he did not pass it under the great seal during that King's life, but did it after his death, so his warrant not being passed, died with the King. His eldest daughter, to whom his honour, such as it was, descended, married Sir Lionel Tallmarsh, of Suffolk, a man of a noble family. After her father's death, she took the title of Countess of Dysertt. She was a woman of great beauty, but of far greater parts; she had a wonderful quickness of apprehension, and an amazing vivacity in conversation; she had studied not only divinity and history, but mathematics and philosophy. She was vehement in every thing she set about; a violent friend, but a much more violent enemy. She had a restless ambition, lived at a vast expense, and was ravenously covetous; and would have stuck at nothing by which she might compass her ends. She had been early in a correspondence with Lord Lauderdale, that had given occasion to censure: when he was prisoner after

Worcester fight, she made him believe he was in great danger of his life, and that she saved it by her intrigues with Cromwell; which was not a little taken notice of. Cromwell was certainly fond of her, and she took care to entertain him in it; till he, finding what was said upon it, broke it off. Upon the King's restoration, she thought that Lord Lauderdale made not those returns that she expected: they lived for some years at a distance: but, upon her husband's death, she made up all quarrels; so that Lord Lauderdale and she lived so much together, that his lady was offended at it, and went to Paris, where she died about three years after. The Lady Dysert came to have so much power over the Lord Lauderdale, that it lessened him much in the esteem of all the world; for he delivered himself up to all her humours and passions. All applications were made to her; she took upon her to determine every thing; she sold all places, and was wanting in no methods that could bring her money, which she lavished out in a most profuse vanity. As the conceit took her, she made him fall out with all his friends, one after another: with the Earls of Argyle, Tweedale, and Kincardin; with Duke Hamilton, the Marquis of Athol, and Sir Robert Murray, who all had their turns in her displeasure, which very quickly drew Lord Lauderdale's after it. If after such names it is not a presumption to name myself, I had my share likewise. From that time to the end of his days, he became quite another sort of man than he had been in all the former parts of his life. Sir Robert Murray had been designed by her father to be her husband, and was long her true friend: she knew his integrity was proof against all attempts: he had been hitherto the Lord Lauderdale's chief friend and main support: he had great esteem paid him, both by the King and by the whole court; and he employed it all for the Earl of Lauderdale's service. He used great freedom with him at proper times, and was a faithful adviser and reprover as far as the other could bear it. Lady Dysert laid hold on his absence in Scotland to make a breach between them: she made Lord Lauderdale believe, that Murray assumed to himself the praise of all that was done, and was not ill pleased to pass as his governor: Lord Lauderdale's pride was soon fired with those ill impressions. 1667.

1667. Scotland was very well governed.

The government of Scotland had now another face: all payments were regularly made; there was an overplus of 10,000*l.* of the revenue saved every year; a magazine of arms was bought with it; and there were several projects set on foot for the encouragement of trade and manufactures. Lord Tweedale and Sir Robert Murray were so entirely united, that, as they never disagreed, so all plied before them. Lord Tweedale was made a privy counsellor in England; and, his son having married the Earl of Lauderdale's only child, they seemed to be inseparably united. When he came down from London, he brought a letter from the King to the council, recommending the concerns of the church to their care; in particular he charged them to suppress conventicles, which began to spread generally through the western counties; for upon the disbanding the army, the country being delivered from that terror, did now forsake their churches, and got their old ministers to come among them; and they were not wanting in holding conventicles from place to place. The King wrote also by him a letter to Sharp with his own pen, in which he assured him of his zeal for the church, and of his favour to himself. Lord Tweedale hoped this would have gained him to his side: but he was deceived in it: Sharp quickly returned to his former insolence. Upon the Earl of Tweedale's return there was a great application to public business: no vice was in reputation; justice was impartially administered; and a commission was sent to the western counties to examine into all the complaints of unjust and illegal oppressions by Turner, Dalziel, and others. Turner's warrants had been seized with himself; and, though upon the defeat given the whigs he was left by them, so that beyond all men's expectations he escaped out of their hands, yet he had nothing to justify himself by. The truth is, this inquiry was chiefly levelled at Lord Rothes and Burnet, to cast the odium of the late rebellion on their injustice and ill conduct; and it was intended that Turner should accuse them; but he had not vouchers to shew. These were believed to be withdrawn by an artifice of the Lord Rothes: but, before the matter was quite ended, those in whose hands his papers were left, sent them sealed up to his lodgings; but he was by that time broken: so since the government had used him so hardly, he, who was a man of

spirit, would not shew his vouchers, nor expose his friends: so that matter was carried no farther; and the people of the country cried out against those censures. It was said, that when by such violent proceedings men had been inflamed to a rebellion, upon which so much blood was shed, all the reparation given was, that an officer or two were broken; and a great man was taken down a little upon it, without making any public examples for the deterring others. 1667.

Great complaints made of the clergy.

Sir Robert Murray went through the west of Scotland: when he came back, he told me, the clergy were such a set of men, so ignorant, and so scandalous, that it was not possible to support them, unless the greatest part of them could be turned out, and better men found to be put in their places. But it was not easy to know how this could be done: Burnet had placed them all, and he thought himself in some sort bound to support them. The clergy were so linked together, that none of them could be got to concur in getting proofs of crimes brought against their brethren; and the people of the country pretended scruples. They said, to accuse a minister before a bishop was an acknowledging his jurisdiction over his clergy, or, to use a hard word much in use among them, it was homologating his power. So Murray proposed, that a court should be constituted by a special commission from the King, made up of some of the laity as well as the clergy, to try the truth of these scandalous reports that went upon the clergy; and he writ about it to Sheldon, who approved of it. Sharp also seemed well pleased with it, though he abhorred it in his heart; for he thought it struck at the root of their authority, and was Erastianism in the highest degree. Burnet said, it was turning him out of his bishopric, and the declaring him either incapable of judging his clergy, or unworthy of that trust. His clergy cried out upon it, and said, it was a delivering them up to the rage of their enemies, who hated them only for the sake of their functions, and for their obedience to the laws; and that if irregular methods were taken to encourage them, they would get any thing, true or false, to be sworn against them. The difficulties that arose from this put a stop to it; and the Earl of Lauderdale's aversion to Sir Robert Murray began a disjointing of all the counsels of Scotland. Lord Tweedale had the chief

1667. confidence; and next him Lord Kincardin was most trusted. The presbyterians, seeing a softening in the execution of the law, and observing that the archbishops were jealous of Lord Tweedale, fancied he was theirs in his heart. Upon that they grew very insolent: the clergy were in many places ill used by them: they despaired of any farther protection from the government; they saw designs were forming to turn them all out; and hearing that they might be better provided in Ireland, they were in many places bought out, and prevailed on to desert their cures. The people of the country hoped, that upon their leaving them, they might have their old ministers again; and, upon that, were willing enough to enter into those bargains with them; and so in a very little time there were many vacancies made all over those counties. The Lord Tweedale took great pains to engage Leightoun into the same counsels with him: he had magnified him highly to the King, as much the greatest man of the Scotch clergy. And the Lord Tweedale's chief aim, with relation to church matters, was to set him at the head of them: for he often said to me, that more than two parts in three of the whole business of the government related to the church. So he studied to bring in a set of episcopal men of another stamp, and to set Leightoun at their head. He studied to draw in Mr. Charteris; but he had such sad thoughts of mankind, and such humble ones of himself, that he thought little good could be done, and that as to that little he was not a proper instrument. Leightoun was prevailed on to go to London, where, as he told me, he had two audiences with the King. He laid before him the madness of the former administration of church affairs, and the necessity of turning to more moderate counsels: in particular he proposed a comprehension of the presbyterian party, by altering the terms of the laws a little, and by such abatements as might preserve the whole for the future, by granting somewhat for the present. But he entered into no expedient; only he studied to fix the King in the design that the course of his affairs led him to, though contrary to his own inclinations, both in England and Scotland. In order to the opening this I must change the scene.

Affairs in England.

The Dutch war had turned so fatally on the King, that it made it necessary for him to try how to recover the affections and esteem of his people; he found a slackening

the execution of the law went a great way in the city of London, and with the trading part of the nation. The House of Commons continued still in their fierceness and aversion to all moderate propositions: but in the intervals of parliament the execution was softened. The Earl of Clarendon found his credit was declining, that all the secrets of state were trusted to Bennet, and that he had no other share in them than his post required. The Lady Castlemain set herself most violently against him; and the Duke of Buckingham, as often as he was admitted to any familiarities with the King, studied with all his wit and humour to make Lord Clarendon and all his counsels appear ridiculous. Lively jests were at all times apt to take with the King. The Earl of Clarendon fell under two other misfortunes before the war broke out. The King had granted him a large piece of ground, near St. James's, to build a house on: he intended a good ordinary house; but, not understanding those matters himself, he put the managing of that into the hands of others, who run him into a vast charge, of about 50,000*l.*; three times as much as he had designed to lay out upon it. During the war, and in the plague year, he had about three hundred men at work, which he thought would have been an acceptable thing, when so many men were kept at work, and so much money, as was duly paid, circulated about; but it had a contrary effect, it raised a great outcry against him: some called it Dunkirk House; intimating, that it was built by his share of the price of Dunkirk; others called it Holland House, because he was believed to be no friend to the war: so it was given out that he had the money from the Dutch. It was visible, that in a time of public calamity he was building a very noble palace. Another accident was, that before the war there was some designs on foot for the repairing of St. Paul's, and many stones were brought thither: that project was laid aside during the war: he upon that bought the stones, and made use of them in building his own house: this, how slight soever it may seem to be, yet had a great effect by the management of his enemies.

1667.

Clarendon's disgrace.

Another misfortune was, that he lost his chief friend, to whom he trusted most, and who was his greatest support, the Earl of Southampton. The pain of the stone grew upon him to such a degree, that he had resolved to be cut: but

Southampton's death.

1667. a woman came to him, who pretended she had an infallible secret of dissolving the stone, and brought such vouchers to him, that he put himself into her hands: the medicine had a great operation, though it ended fatally; for he had passed great quantities of gravel, that looked like the coats of a stone sliced off: this encouraged him to go on, till his pains increased so, that no man was ever seen to die in such torments; which made him often tremble all over, so that the bed shook with it: yet he bore it with an astonishing patience. He not only kept himself from saying any indecent thing, but endured all that misery with the firmness of a great man, and the submission of a good Christian. The cause of all appeared when he was opened after his death: for the medicine had stripped the stone of its outward slimy coats, which made it lay soft and easy upon the muscles of the bladder; whereas when these were dissolved, the inner and harder parts of the stone, that were all ragged by the dissolution that was begun, lay upon the neck of the bladder, which raised those violent pains of which he died. The court was now delivered of a great man, whom they did not much love, and who they knew did not love them. The Treasury was put in commission; and the Earl of Clarendon had no interest there. He saw the war, though managed by other counsels, yet was like to end in his ruin: for all errors were cast on him. The business of Chatham was a terrible blow: and though the loss was great, the infamy was greater. The parliament had given above five millions towards the war; but through the luxury and waste of the court, this money was so squandered away, that the King could neither set out a fleet, nor defend his coasts. Upon the news of the Dutch fleet's being in the river, the King did not ride down himself, nor appear at the head of his people, who were then in such imminent danger. He only sent the Duke of Albemarle down, and was intending to retire to Windsor; but that looked so like a flying from danger, that he was prevailed on to stay; and it was given out, that he was very cheerful that night at supper with his mistresses, which drew many libels upon him, that were writ with as much wit as malice, and brought him under a general contempt. He was compared to Nero, who sung while Rome was burning. A day or two after that he rode through London, accompa-

nied with the most popular men of his court, and assured the citizens he would live and die with his people, upon which there were some acclamations; but the matter went heavily. The city was yet in ashes: and the jealousy of burning it on design had got so among them, that the King himself was not free from suspicion. If the Dutch had pursued their advantage in the first consternation, they might have done more mischief, and have come a great way up the Thames, and burnt many merchant ships: but they thought they had done enough, and so they sailed away. The court was at a stand what to do; for the French had assured them the treaty was as good as finished. Whether the French set this on, as that which would both weaken the fleet of England, and alienate the King so entirely from the Dutch, that he would be easily engaged into new alliances to revenge this affront, as many believed, I cannot pretend to determine. 1667.

The Earl of Essex was at this time in Paris, on his way home from the waters of Bourbon; and he told me, the Queen-mother of England sent for him, as being one of her son's privy council, and told him, the Irish had sent over some to the court of France, desiring money and arms with some officers, and undertook to put that island into the hands of the French. He told me he found the Queen was in her inclinations and advices true to her son's interest; but he was amazed to see that a woman, who in a drawing-room was the liveliest woman of the age, and had a vivacity of imagination that surprised all who came near her, yet after all her practice in affairs, had so little either of judgment or conduct; and he did not wonder at the miscarriage of the late King's counsels, since she had such a share in them: but the French had then greater things in view. The King of Spain was dead; and now after the French had managed the war so, that they had been at no part of the expense of it, nor brought a ship to the assistance of the Dutch in any engagement, and that both England and Holland had made a great loss both in ships and treasure, they resolved to manage the peace so, as to oblige the King by giving him a peace, when he was in no condition to carry on a war. I enter not into our negotiation with the Bishop of Munster, nor his treacherous

The Irish sought the protection of France.

1667. departing from his engagements, since I know nothing of that matter but what is in print.

As soon as the peace was made, the King saw with what disadvantage he was like to meet his parliament; so he thought the disgracing a public minister, who by his being long in so high a post, had drawn upon himself much envy, and many enemies, would cover himself and the rest of his court. Other things concurred to set this forward: the King was grown very weary of the Queen; and it was believed he had a great mind to be rid of her. The load of that marriage was cast on the Lord Clarendon, as made on design to raise his own grandchildren. Many members of the House of Commons, such as Clifford, Osborn, Ker, Littletoun, and Seymour, were brought to the King; who all assured him, that upon his restoration they intended both to have raised his authority, and to have increased his revenue; but that the Earl of Clarendon had discouraged it, and that all his creatures had possessed the House with such jealousies of the King, that they thought it was not fit to trust him too much nor too far: this made a deep impression on the King, who was weary of Lord Clarendon's imposing way, and had a mind to be freed from the authority to which he had been so long accustomed, that it was not easy to keep him within bounds.

The Duke of Richmond's marriage.

Yet the King was so afraid to engage himself too deep in his own affairs, that it was a doubt whether he would dismiss him or not, if a concern of one of his amours had not sharpened his resentment: so that what other considerations could not do, was brought about by an ill-grounded jealousy. Mistress Steward had gained so much on the King, and yet had kept her ground with so much firmness, that the King seemed to design if possible to legitimate his addresses to her, when he saw no hope of succeeding any other way. The Duke of Richmond, being a widower, courted her: the King seemed to give way to it, and pretended to take such care of her, that he would have good settlements made for her: he hoped by that means to have broke the matter decently, for he knew the Duke of Richmond's affairs were in disorder: so the King ordered Lord Clarendon to examine the estate he pretended to settle. But he was told, whether true or false I cannot tell, that

Lord Clarendon told her, that the Duke of Richmond's affairs, it was true, were not very clear, but that a family so nearly related to the King could never be left in distress, and that such a match would not come in her way every day; so she had best consider well before she rejected it. This was carried to the King, as a design he had that the crown might descend to his own grandchildren; and that he was afraid, lest strange methods should be taken to get rid of the Queen, and to make way for her. When the King saw that she had a mind to marry the Duke of Richmond, he offered to make her a dutchess, and to settle an estate on her: upon this she said, she saw she must either marry him, or suffer much in the opinion of the world; and she was prevailed on by the Duke of Richmond, who was passionately in love with her, to go privately from Whitehall, and marry him without giving the King notice. The Earl of Clarendon's son, the Lord Cornbury, was going to her lodgings, upon some assignation that she had given him about her affairs, knowing nothing of her intentions: he met the King in the door coming out full of fury; and he, suspecting that Lord Cornbury was in the design, spoke to him as one in a rage that forgot all decency, and for some time would not hear Lord Cornbury speak in his own defence. In the afternoon he heard him with more temper, as he himself told me. Yet this made so deep an impression, that he resolved to take the seals from his father. The King said to the Lord Lauderdale, that he had talked of the matter with Sheldon, and that he convinced him that it was necessary to remove Lord Clarendon from his post; and, as soon as it was done, the King sent for Sheldon, and told him what he had done; but he answered nothing: when the King insisted to oblige him to declare himself, he said,—Sir, I wish you would put away this woman that you keep. The King upon that replied sharply, why he had never talked to him of that sooner, but took this occasion now to speak of it. Lauderdale told me, he had all this from the King; and that the King and Sheldon had gone into such expostulations upon it, that from that day forward Sheldon could never recover the King's confidence. 1667.

The seals were given to Sir Orlando Bridgman, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, then in great esteem, which he did not maintain long after his advancement. His Bridgman made lord keeper.

1667. study and practice lay so entirely in the common law, that he never seemed to apprehend what equity was; nor had he a head made for business, or for such a court. He was a man of great integrity, and had very serious impressions of religion on his mind. He had been always on the side of the church, yet he had great tenderness for the nonconformists; and the bishops having all declared for Lord Clarendon, except one or two, he and the new scene of the ministry were inclined to favour them. The Duke of Buckingham, who had been in high disgrace before Lord Clarendon's fall, came upon that into high favour, and set up for a patron of liberty of conscience, and of all the sects. The see of Chester happened to fall vacant soon after, and Dr. Wilkins was by him promoted to that see. It was no small prejudice to him, that he was recommended by so bad a man. Wilkins had a courage in him that could stand against a current, and against all the reproaches with which ill-natured clergymen studied to load him. He said he was called for by the King, without any motion of his own, to a public station, in which he would endeavour to do all the good he could, without considering the ill effects that it might have on himself. The King had such a command of himself, that when his interest led him to serve any end, or to court any sort of men, he did it so dexterously, and with such an air of sincerity, that till men were well practised in him, he was apt to impose on them. He seemed now to go into moderation and comprehension with so much heartiness, that both Bridgman and Wilkins believed he was in earnest in it; though there was nothing that the popish counsels were more fixed in, than to oppose all motions of that kind. But the King saw it was necessary to recover the affections of his people: and, since the church of England was now gone off from him, upon Lord Clarendon's disgrace, he resolved to shew some favour to the sects, both to soften them and to force the others to come back to their dependence upon him.

The French King's pretensions to Flanders.

He began also to express his concern in the affairs of Europe; and he brought about the peace between Spain and Portugal. The French King pretended, that by the law of Brabant, his Queen, as the heir of the late King of Spain's first marriage, though a daughter, was to be preferred to the young King of Spain, the heir of the second

venter, without any regard to the renunciation of any succession to his Queen, stipulated by the peace of the Pyrenees; and was upon that pretension like to have overrun the Netherlands. Temple was sent over to enter into an alliance with the Dutch, by which some parts of Flanders were yielded up to France, but a barrier was preserved for the security of Holland: into this the King of Sweden, then a child, was engaged; so it was called the triple alliance. I will say no more of that, since so particular an account is given of it by him who could do it best, Temple himself. It was certainly the master-piece of King Charles's life; and, if he had stuck to it, it would have been both the strength and glory of his reign. This disposed his people to forgive all that was past, and to renew their confidence in him, which was shaken by the whole conduct of the Dutch war. 1667.

Clarendon's integrity.

The parliament were upon their first opening set on to destroy Lord Clarendon. Some of his friends went to him, a few days before the parliament met, and told him, many were at work to find out matter of accusation against him. He best knew what could be brought against him with any truth; for falsehood was infinite, and could not be guessed at. They desired he would trust some of them with what might break out, since probably nothing could lie concealed against so strict a search: and the method in which his friends must manage for him, if there was any mixture or allay in him, was to be very different from that they could use, if he was sure that nothing could be brought out against him. The Lord Burlington and Bishop Morley, both told me, they talked to this purpose to him. Lord Clarendon upon that told them, that, if either in matters of justice, or in any negotiations abroad, he had ever received a farthing, he gave them leave to disown all friendship to him. The French King hearing he had sent for all the books of the Louvre impression, had sent these to him, which he took, as thinking it a trifle, as indeed it was; and this was the only present he ever had from any foreign prince: he had never taken any thing by virtue of his office, but that which his predecessors had claimed as a right. But now a hue and cry was sent out against him; and all persons, who had heard him say any thing that could bear an ill construction, were examined. Some thought they had matters of great

1667. weight against him: and, when they were told these would not amount to high treason, they desired to know what would amount to it.

He was impeached in the House of Commons.

When twenty-three articles were brought into the House against him, the next day he desired his second son, the now Earl of Rochester, to acquaint the House, that he, hearing what articles were brought against him, did, in order to the dispatch of the business, desire that those, who knew best what their evidence was, would single out any one of the articles that they thought could be best proved; and, if they could prove that, he would submit to the censure due upon them all. But those who had the secret of this in their hands, and knew they could make nothing of it, resolved to put the matter upon a preliminary, in which they hoped to find cause to hang up the whole affair, and fix upon the Lords the denial of justice. So, according to some few and late precedents, they sent up a general impeachment to the Lords' bar, of high treason, without any special matter; and demanded, that upon that he might be committed to prison. They had reason to believe the Lords would not grant this; and therefore they resolved to insist on it, and reckoned, that when so much money was to be given, the King would prevail with the Lords. Upon this occasion it appeared, that the private animosities of a court could carry them to establish the most destructive precedent, that could have been thought on; for, if this had passed, then every minister upon a general impeachment was to be ruined, though no special matter was laid against him: yet the King pressed this very vehemently. It was said, the very suspicions of a House of Commons, especially such a one as this was, was enough to blast a man, and to have him secured: for there was reason to think, that every person so charged would run away, if at liberty. Lord Clarendon's enemies had now gone far; they thought they were not safe till his head was off: and they apprehended, that if he were once in prison, it would be easy either to find, or at least to bring witnesses against him. This matter is all in print: so I will go no farther in the particulars. The Duke was at this time taken with the small-pox; so he was out of the whole debate. The Peers thought, that a general accusation was only a clamour, and that their dignities signified little, if a clamour was enough to send them to prison. All the Earl

of Clarendon's friends pressed the King much on his behalf, that he might be suffered to go off gently, and without censure, since he had served both his father and himself so long, so faithfully, and with such success. But the King was now so sharpened against him, that though he named no particulars, he expressed a violent and irreconcilable aversion to him; which did the King much hurt, in the opinion of all that were not engaged in the party. The affair of the King's marriage was the most talked of, as that which indeed was the only thing, that could in any sort justify such a severity. Lord Clarendon did protest, as some that had it from himself told me, that he had no other hand in that matter than as a counsellor; and in that he appealed to the King himself. After many debates, and conferences, and protestations, in which the whole court went in visibly to that, which was plainly destructive both to the King and to the ministry, the majority of the House stood firm, and adhered to their first resolution against commitment. The Commons were upon that like to carry the matter far against the Peers, as denying justice. The King seeing this spoke to the Duke, to persuade Lord Clarendon to go beyond sea, as the only expedient that was left, to make up the breach between the two houses; and he let fall some words of kindness, in case he should comply with this. The Earl of Clarendon was all obedience and submission; and was charmed with those tender words that the King had said of him. So, partly to serve the King, and save himself and his family, but chiefly that he might not be the occasion of any difference between the King and the Duke, who had heartily espoused his interest, he went privately beyond sea; and writ a letter from Calais to the House of Lords, protesting his innocence in all the points objected to him, and that he had not gone out of the kingdom for fear, or out of any consciousness of guilt, but only that he might not be the unhappy occasion of any difference between the two houses, or of obstructing public business. This put an end to the dispute. But his enemies called it a confession of guilt, and a flying from justice: such colours will people give to the most eminent actions.

1667.

The King desired he would go beyond sea.

A bill was brought in, banishing him the King's dominions under pain of treason if he should return; and it was made treason to correspond with him without leave

He was banished by act of Parliament.

1667. from the King. This act did not pass without much opposition: it was said, there was a known course of law when any man fled from justice; and it seemed against the common course of justice, to make all correspondence with him treason, when he himself was not attainted of treason: nor could it be just to banish him unless a day were given him to come in; and then, if he did not come in, he might incur the punishment upon contempt. The Duke, whom the King had employed to prevail with him to withdraw himself, thought he was bound in honour to press the matter home on the King, which he did so warmly, that for some time a coldness between them was very visible. The part the King had acted in this matter came to be known; and was much censured, as there was just cause for it. The vehemence that he shewed in this whole matter was imputed by many to very different causes: those who knew him best, but esteemed him least, said to me on this occasion, that all the indignation that appeared in him on this head, was founded on no reason at all, but was an effect of that easiness, or rather laziness of nature, that made him comply with every person that had the greatest credit with him. The mistress, and the whole bed-chamber, were perpetually railing at him: this, by a sort of infection, possessed the King, who, without giving himself the trouble of much thinking, did commonly go into any thing that was at the present time the easiest, without considering what might at any other time follow on it. Thus the Lord Clarendon fell under the common fate of great ministers, whose employment exposes them to envy, and draws upon them the indignation of all who are disappointed in their pretensions. Their friends do generally shew that they are only the friends of their fortunes; and, upon the change of favour, they not only forsake them in their extremity, but, that they may secure to themselves the protection of a new favourite, they will labour to redeem all that is passed by, turning as violently on them; and princes are so little sensible of merit or great services, that they sacrifice their best servants, not only when their affairs seem to require it, but to gratify the humour of a mistress, or the passion of a rising favourite.

The character of his two sons.

I will end this relation of Lord Clarendon's fall with an account of his two sons: the eldest, now the Earl of Cla-

rendon, is a man naturally sincere; he is a friendly and good-natured man; he keeps an exact journal of all that passes, and is punctual to tediousness in all that he relates. He was very early engaged in great secrets; for his father, apprehending of what fatal consequence it would have been to the King's affairs, if his correspondence had been discovered by unfaithful secretaries, engaged him when very young to write all his letters to England in cipher, so that he was generally half the day writing in cipher, or deciphering; and was so discreet, as well as faithful, that nothing was ever discovered by him. He continued to be still the person whom his father trusted most; and was the most beloved of all the family; for he was humble and obliging, though sometimes peevish. His judgment was not to be much depended on; for he was much carried away by vulgar prejudices and false notions. He was much in the Queen's favour, and was her chamberlain long. His father's being so violently prosecuted on the account of her marriage, made that she thought herself bound to protect him in a particular manner. He was so provoked at the ill usage his father met with, that he struck in violently with the party that opposed the court; and the King spoke always of him with great sharpness and much scorn. His brother, now Earl of Rochester, is a man of far greater parts: he has a very good pen, but speaks not gracefully. He was thought the smoothest man in the court; and, during all the dispute concerning his father, he made his court so dexterously, that no resentment ever appeared on that head. When he came into business, and rose to high posts, he grew violent; but was thought an incorrupt man. He has high notions of government, and thinks it must be maintained with great severity. He delivers up his own notions to his party, that he may lead them. He passes for a sincere man, and seems to have too much heat to be false. Morley was long dean of the chapel; but he stuck so to the Lord Clarendon, that he was sent into his diocese; and Crofts, Bishop of Hereford, was made dean in his room. Crofts was a warm, devout man, but of no discretion in his conduct; so he lost ground quickly. He used much freedom with the King, but it was in the wrong place; not in private, but in the pulpit. 1667.

1667. The King was much offended with the bishops.

The King was highly offended at the behaviour of most of the bishops; and he took occasion to vent it at the council-board. Upon the complaints that were made of some disorders, and of some conventicles, he said, the clergy were chiefly to blame for these disorders; for if they had lived well, and had gone about their parishes, and taken pains to convince the nonconformists, the nation might have been by that time well settled; but they thought of nothing but to get good benefices, and to keep a good table. This I read in a letter that Sir Robert Murray writ down to Scotland; and it agrees with a conversation that the King was pleased to have with myself once, when I was alone with him in his closet. While we were talking of the ill state the church was in, I was struck to hear a prince of his course of life so much disgusted at the ambition, covetousness, and the scandals of the clergy. He said, if the clergy had done their part, it had been an easy thing to run down the nonconformists; but, he added, they will do nothing, and will have me to do every thing: and most of them do worse than if they did nothing. He told me, he had a chaplain, that was a very honest man, but a very great blockhead, to whom he had given a living in Suffolk, that was full of that sort of people: he had gone about among them from house to house, though he could not imagine what he could say to them; for he said he was a very silly fellow; but that he believed his nonsense suited their nonsense, for he had brought them all to church; and, in reward of his diligence, he had given him a bishopric in Ireland.

1668. A treaty for a comprehension of the presbyterians.

Bridgman and Wilkins set on foot a treaty for a comprehension of such of the dissenters as could be brought into the communion of the church, and a toleration of the rest. Hale, then chief justice, concurred with them in the design. Tillotson, Stillingfleet, and Burton joined also in it. Bates, Manton, and Baxter were called for on the side of the presbyterians; and a project was prepared, consisting chiefly of those things that the King had promised by his declaration in the year 1660. Only in the point of re-ordination this temper was proposed, that those who had presbyterian ordination should be received to serve in the church by an imposition of hands, accompanied with words which imported, that the person so ordained was received

to serve as a minister in the church of England. This treaty became a common subject of discourse: all Lord Clarendon's friends cried out that the church was undermined and betrayed: it was said the cause of the church was given up, if we yielded any of those points, about which there had been so much disputing: if the sectaries were humble and modest, and would tell what would satisfy them, there might be some colour for granting some concessions; but it was unworthy of the church to go and court, or treat with enemies, when there was no reason to think, that after we had departed from our grounds, which was to confess we had been in the wrong, that we should gain much by it, unless it was to bring scorn and contempt on ourselves. On the other hand, it was said, the nonconformists could not legally meet together, to offer any schemes in the name of their party: it was well enough known, what they had always excepted to, and what would probably bring over most of the presbyterians: such a yielding in some lesser matters would be no reproach, but an honour to the church; that, how much soever she might be superior, both in point of argument and of power, she would yet, of her own accord, and for peace sake, yield a great deal in matters indifferent. The apostles complying with many of the observances of the Jews, and the offers that the church of Afric made to the Donatists, were much insisted on. The fears of popery, and the progress that atheism was making, did alarm good and wise men; and they thought every thing that could be done without sin, ought to be done towards the healing our divisions. Many books were upon that account writ, to expose the presbyterians, as men of false notions in religion, which led to antinomianism, and which would soon carry them into a dissolution of morals, under a pretence of being justified by faith only, without works. The three volumes of the "Friendly Debate," though writ by a very good man, and with a good intent, had an ill effect in sharpening people's spirits too much against them; but the most virulent of all that writ against the sects was Parker, afterwards made Bishop of Oxford by King James; who was full of satirical vivacity, and was considerably learned; but was a man of no judgment, and of as little virtue, and as to religion rather impious: after he had for some years entertained the na-

1668.

1668.

tion with several virulent books, writ with much life, he was attacked by the liveliest droll of the age, who writ in a burlesque strain, but with so peculiar and so entertaining a conduct, that, from the King down to the tradesman, his books were read with great pleasure: that not only humbled Parker, but the whole party; for the author of "The Rehearsal Transprosed" had all the men of wit (or, as the French phrase it, all the laughers) on his side; but what advantages soever the men of comprehension might have in any other respect, the majority of the House of Commons was so possessed against them, that when it was known in a succeeding session, that a bill was ready to be offered to the House for that end, a very extraordinary vote passed, that no bill to that purpose should be received.

The city of London rebuilt.

An act passed in this session for rebuilding the city of London, which gave Lord Chief Justice Hale a great reputation; for it was drawn with so true a judgment, and so great foresight, that the whole city was raised out of its ashes without any suits of law; which, if that bill had not prevented them, would have brought a second charge on the city, not much less than the fire itself had been: and, upon that, to the amazement of all Europe, London was in four years time rebuilt, with so much beauty and magnificence, that we who saw it in both states, before and after the fire, cannot reflect on it without wondering where the wealth could be found to bear so vast a loss as was made by the fire, and so prodigious an expense as was laid out in the rebuilding it: this did demonstrate, that the intrinsic wealth of the nation was very high, when it could answer such a dead charge.

Designs for putting away the Queen.

I return to the intrigues of the court. Lord Clarendon's enemies thought they were not safe as long as the Duke had so much credit with the King, and the Dutchess had so much power over him: so they fell on propositions of a strange nature to ruin them. The Duke of Buckingham pressed the King to own a marriage with the Duke of Monmouth's mother: and he undertook to get witnesses to attest it. The Duke of York told me, in general, that there was much talk about it; but he did not descend to particulars. The Earl of Carlisle offered to begin the matter in the House of Lords. The King would not consent to this; yet he put it by in such a manner, as made them all con-

clude he wished it might be done, but did not know how to bring it about. These discourses were all carried to the Duke of Monmouth, and got fatally into his head. When the Duke talked of this matter to me in the year 1673, I asked him if he thought the King had still the same inclinations? He said he believed not: he thought the Duke of Monmouth had not spirit enough to think of it; and he commended the Dutchess of Monmouth so highly as to say to me, that the hopes of a crown could not work on her to do an unjust thing. I thought he gave that matter too much countenance, by calling the Duke of Monmouth nephew; but he said it pleased the King. When the party saw they could make nothing of the business of the Duke of Monmouth, they tried next by what methods they could get rid of the Queen, that so the King might marry another wife: for the King had children by so many different creatures, that they hoped for issue, if he had a wife capable of any. Some thought the Queen and he were not legally married; but the avowing a marriage, and the living many years in that state, did certainly supply any defect in point of form. Others pretended she was barren from a natural cause, and that seemed equivalent to impotence in men. But the King often said he was sure she once miscarried. This, though not overthrown by such an evidence, could never be proved, unless the having no children was to be concluded a barrenness; and the dissolving a marriage on such an account could neither be justified in law nor conscience. Other stories were given out of the Queen's person, which were false: for I saw in a letter under the King's own hand that the marriage was consummated. Others talked of polygamy; and officious persons were ready to thrust themselves into any thing that could contribute to their advancement. Lord Lauderdale and Sir Robert Murray asked my opinion of these things. I said, I knew speculative people could say a great deal in the way of argument for polygamy and divorce; yet these things were so decried, that they were rejected by all Christian societies; so that all such propositions would throw us into great convulsions, and entail war upon us, if any issue came from a marriage so grounded. 1668.

An accident happened at that time, that made the discoursing of those matters the common subject of conver- A divorce enacted for adultery.

1668. sation: the Lord Roos, afterwards Earl of Rutland, brought proofs of adultery against his wife; and obtained a sentence of divorce in the spiritual court: which amounting only to a separation from bed and board, he moved for a bill dissolving the bond, and enabling him to marry another wife. The Duke and all his party apprehended the consequences of a parliamentary divorce: so they opposed this with great heat; and almost all the bishops were of that side; only Cosins and Wilkins, the Bishops of Durham and Chester, were for it; and the King was as earnest in the setting it on, as the Duke was in opposing it. The zeal which the two brothers expressed on that occasion, made all people conclude that they had a particular concern in the matter. The bill passed; and upon that precedent some moved the King, that he would order a bill to be brought in to divorce him from the Queen: this went so far, that a day was agreed on for making the motion in the House of Commons, as Mr. May, of the privy purse, told me, who had the greatest and longest share in the King's secret confidence of any man in that time; for it was never broke off, though often shaken, he being in his notions against every thing that the King was for, both France, popery, and arbitrary government; but a particular sympathy of temper, and his serving the King in his vices, created a confidence much envied, and often attempted to be broke, but never with any success beyond a short coldness. But he added, when he told me of this design, that three days before the motion was to be made, the King called for him, and told him, that matter must be let alone, for it would not do. This disturbed him much; for he had engaged himself far in laying the thing, and in managing those who were to undertake the debate.

A great dissolution of morals in court.

At this time the court fell into much extravagance in masquerading: both King and Queen, and all the court, went about masked, and came into houses unknown, and danced there with a great deal of wild frolic. In all this people were so disguised, that without being in the secret none could distinguish them. They were carried about in hackney chairs. Once the Queen's chairmen, not knowing who she was, went from her; so she was alone, and much disturbed, and came to Whitehall in a hackney-coach; some say it was in a cart. The Duke of Buckingham pro-

posed to the King, that he would give him leave to steal her away, and send her to a plantation, where she should be well and carefully looked to, but never heard of any more; so it should be given out that she had deserted; and upon that it would fall in with some principles to carry an act for a divorce, grounded upon the pretence of a wilful desertion. Sir Robert Murray told me, that the King himself rejected this with horror. He said, it was a wicked thing to make a poor lady miserable, only because she was his wife, and had no children by him, which was no fault of her's. The hints of this broke out; for the Duke of Buckingham could conceal nothing; and upon that the Earl of Manchester, then lord chamberlain, told the Queen, it was neither decent nor safe for her to go about in such a manner as she had done of late; so she gave it over. But at last all these schemes settled in a proposition, into which the King went; which was to deal with the Queen's confessor, that he might persuade her to leave the world, and to turn religious; upon which the parliament would have been easily prevailed on to pass a divorce. This came to be known: but what steps were made in it were never known. It was believed, that upon this the Dutchess of York sent an express to Rome with the notice of her conversion: and that orders were sent from Rome to all about the Queen to persuade her against such a proposition, if any should suggest it to her. She herself had no mind to be a nun; and the Dutchess was afraid of seeing another queen; and the mistress, created at that time Dutchess of Cleveland, knew that she must be the first sacrifice to a beloved queen; and she reconciled herself upon this to the Dutchess of York. The Duke of Buckingham upon that broke with her, and studied to take the King from her by new amours; and, because he thought a gaiety of humour would take much with the King, he engaged him to entertain two players, one after another, Davies and Gwyn. The first did not keep her hold long; but Gwyn, the indiscreetest and wildest creature that ever was in a court, continued to the end of the King's life in great favour, and was maintained at a vast expense. The Duke of Buckingham told me, that when she was first brought to the King, she asked only 500*l.* a year; and the King refused it. But when he told me this, about four

1668.

1668. years after, he said, she had got of the King above 60,000*l.* She acted all persons in so lively a manner, and was such a constant diversion to the King, that even a new mistress could not drive her away. But, after all, he never treated her with the decencies of a mistress. The King had another mistress, that was managed by Lord Shaftsbury, who was the daughter of a clergyman (Roberts); in whom her first education had so deep a root, that, though she fell into many scandalous disorders, with very dismal adventures in them all, yet a principle of religion was so deep-laid in her, that, though it did not restrain her, yet it kept alive in her such a constant horror at sin, that she was never easy in an ill course, and died with a great sense of her former ill life. I was often with her the last three months of her life. The Dutchess of Cleveland, finding that she had lost the King, abandoned herself to great disorders; one of which, by the artifice of the Duke of Buckingham, was discovered by the King in person, the party concerned leaping out of the window. She also spoke of the King, to all people, in such a manner as brought him under much contempt. But he seemed insensible; and though libels of all sorts had then a very free course, yet he was never disturbed at it.

Many libels writ by the best wits of that time.

The three most eminent wits of that time, on whom all the lively libels were fastened, were the Earls of Dorset, and Rochester, and Sir Charles Sidley. Lord Dorset was a generous, good-natured man. He was so oppressed with phlegm, that till he was a little heated with wine, he scarce ever spoke: but he was upon that exaltation a very lively man. Never was so much ill-nature in a pen as in his, joined with so much good-nature as was in himself, even to excess; for he was against all punishing, even of malefactors. He was bountiful, even to run himself into difficulties; and charitable to a fault: for he commonly gave all he had about him, when he met an object that moved him. But he was so lazy, that, though the King seemed to court him to be a favourite, he would not give himself the trouble that belonged to that post. He hated the court, and despised the King, when he saw he was neither generous nor tender-hearted. Wilmot, Earl of Rochester, was naturally modest, till the court corrupted him. His wit had in it a peculiar brightness, to which none could ever arive: he gave him-

self up to all sorts of extravagance, and to the wildest frolics that a wanton wit could devise: he would have gone about the streets as a beggar, and made love as a porter: he set up a stage as an Italian mountebank: he was for some years always drunk, and was ever doing some mischief. The King loved his company, for the diversion it afforded, better than his person; and there was no love lost between them. He took his revenues in many libels: he found out a footman that knew all the court, and he furnished him with a red coat and a musket as a centinel, and kept him all the winter long, every night, at the doors of such ladies as he believed might be in intrigues. In the court, a centinel is minded, and is believed to be posted by a captain of the guards to hinder a combat: so this man saw who walked about and visited at forbidden hours. By this means Lord Rochester made many discoveries; and when he was furnished with materials, he used to retire into the country for a month or two, to write libels. Once being drunk, he intended to give the King a libel that he had writ on some ladies; but by a mistake he gave him one written on himself. He fell into an ill habit of body: and in several fits of sickness he had deep remorses; for he was guilty both of much impiety and of great immoralities. But as he recovered, he threw these off, and turned again to his former ill course. In the last year of his life I was much with him, and have wrote a book of what passed between him and me. I do verily believe, he was then so entirely changed, that, if he had recovered, he would have made good all his resolutions. Sidley had a more sudden and copious wit, which furnished a perpetual run of discourse: but he was not so correct as Lord Dorset, nor so sparkling as Lord Rochester. The Duke of Buckingham loved to have these much about him; and he gave himself up to a monstrous course of studied immoralities of the worst kinds: he was so full of mercury, that he could not fix long in any friendship, or to any design. Bennet, now made Lord Arlington, and he, fell out: Bennet was all cunning and artifice, and so could not hold long with him, who was so open that he disclosed every thing. Lord Arlington was engaged in a great intimacy with Clifford, Littletoun, and Duncomb. I have already given some account of the two first. Duncomb was a judicious man, but very haughty, and apt to raise en- 1668.

1668. emies against himself: he was an able parliament man, but could not go into all the designs of the court; for he had a sense of religion, and a zeal for the liberty of his country. The Duke of Buckingham's chief friends were the Earls of Shaftsbury and Lauderdale, but above all Sir Thomas Osborn, raised afterwards to be lord treasurer, and Earl of Danby, and since made Duke of Leeds by the late King.

Sir William Coventry's character.

The King took Sir William Coventry from the Duke, and put him in the Treasury. He was in a fair way to be the chief minister, and deserved it more than all the rest did. But he was too honest to engage in the designs, into which the court was resolved to go, as soon as it had recovered a little reputation; which was sunk very low by the ill management of the Dutch war, and the squandering away of the money given for it. He was a man of the finest and the best temper that belonged to the court. The Duke of Buckingham and he fell out; I know not for what reason: and a challenge passed between them, upon which Coventry was forbid the court. And he upon that seemed to retire very willingly: and he was become a very religious man when I knew him. He was offered after that the best posts in the court, oftener than once; but he would never engage again. He saw what was at bottom, and was resolved not to go through with it; and so continued to his death in a retired course of life.

The government of Ireland changed.

The Duke of Ormond continued still in the government of Ireland, though several interests joined together against him; the Earls of Orrery and Ranelagh on the one hand, and Talbot on the other. Lord Orrery loved to appear in business, but dealt so much under hand, that he had not much credit with any side. Lord Ranelagh was a young man of great parts, and as great vices; he had a pleasantness of conversation that took much with the King, and had a great dexterity in business. Many complaints were secretly brought against the Duke of Ormond. The King loved him, and he accommodated him much to the King's humour; yet the King was, with much difficulty, prevailed on to put an end to his government of Ireland, and to put Lord Roberts, afterwards made Earl of Radnor, in his place; who was a morose man, believed to be severely just, and as wise as a cynical humour could allow him to be. The manner of removing the Duke of Ormond will give a

particular character of the King's temper. He sent Lord Arlington to him for his commission: the Duke of Ormond said, he had received it from the King's own hands, and he would go and deliver it to him. When he carried it to the King, the King denied he had sent him any such message. Two days after that Lord Arlington was sent again with the same message, and he had the same answer, and the King disowned it again to the Duke. So the King declared in the privy council the change of the government of Ireland, and made Roberts lord lieutenant; and it flew abroad as a piece of news. The Duke of Ormond hearing that, came to the King in great warmth, to expostulate upon it; but the King denied the whole thing, and sent him away: but he sent for Fitzpatrick, who had married his sister, and who told me the whole story, and sent him to the Duke of Ormond, to tell him, the King had denied the matter, though it was true, for he observed he was in such a heat, that he was afraid he might have said indecent things; and he was resolved not to fall out with him: for though his affairs made it necessary to change the government of Ireland, yet he would still be kind to him, and continue him lord steward. Lord Radnor did not continue long in Ireland; he was cynical in his whole administration, and uneasy to the King in every thing: and in one of his peevish humours he writ to the King, that he had but one thing to ask of him, which, if it might be granted, he would never ask another, and that was, to be discharged of his employment. The Lord Berkley succeeded him, who was brother to the Lord Fitzharding, and who from small beginnings had risen up to the greatest post a subject was capable of. In the war he was Governor of Exeter for the King, and one of his generals: he was named by him Governor to the Duke of York. He was now made lord lieutenant of Ireland, and afterwards sent ambassador to France, and plenipotentiary to Nimeguen. He was a man in whom it appeared with how little true judgment courts distribute favours and honours: he had a positive way of undertaking and determining in every thing, but was a very weak man, and not incorrupt. 1668.

The court delivered itself up to vice, and the House of Commons lost all respect in the nation; for they gave still all the money that was asked. Yet those who opposed the The committee of Brook House.

1668. court carried one great point, that a committee should be named to examine the accounts of the money that was given during the Dutch war: it was carried, that they should be all men out of the House. Lord Brereton was the chief of them, and had the chair. He was a philosophical man, and was all his life long in search of the philosopher's stone, by which he neglected his own affairs; but was a man of great integrity, and was not to be gained by the flatteries, hopes, or threatenings of the court. Sir William Turner was another of the committee, who had been lord mayor of London the former year, under whose wise and just administration the rebuilding of the city advanced so fast, that he would have been chosen lord mayor for the ensuing year, if he had not declined it. Pierpoint was likewise of this committee; so was Sir James Langham, a very weak man, famed only for his readiness of speaking florid Latin, which he had attained to a degree beyond any man of the age; but his style was too poetical, and full of epithets and figures.

Hallifax's character. I name Sir George Saville last, because he deserves a more copious character. He rose afterwards to be Viscount, Earl, and Marquis of Hallifax: he was a man of a great and ready wit, full of life, and very pleasant; much turned to satire. He let his wit run much on matters of religion; so that he passed for a bold and determined atheist, though he often protested to me he was not one, and said, he believed there was not one in the world. He confessed, he could not swallow down every thing that divines imposed on the world: he was a Christian in submission; he believed as much as he could, and he hoped that God would not lay it to his charge, if he could not digest iron as an ostrich did, nor take into his belief things that must burst him: if he had any scruples, they were not sought for, nor cherished by him, for he never read any atheistical book. In a fit of sickness, I knew him very much touched with a sense of religion: I was then often with him; he seemed full of good purposes, but they went off with his sickness. He was always talking of morality and friendship: he was punctual in all his payments, and just in all his private dealings. But, with relation to the public, he went backwards and forwards, and changed sides so often, that in conclusion no side trusted him. He seemed full of

commonwealth notions, yet he went into the worst part of King Charles's reign. The liveliness of his imagination was always too hard for his judgment: a severe jest was preferred by him to all arguments whatsoever; and he was endless in consultations. For when after much discourse a point was settled, if he could find a new jest, to make even that which was suggested by himself seem ridiculous, he could not hold, but would study to raise the credit of his wit, though it made others call his judgment in question. When he talked to me as a philosopher of his contempt of the world, I asked him what he meant by getting so many new titles, which I called the hanging himself about with bells and tinsel. He had no other excuse for it but this, that since the world were such fools as to value those matters, a man must be a fool for company; he considered them but as rattles, yet rattles please children; so these might be of use to his family. His heart was much set on raising his family; but though he made a vast estate for them, he buried two of his sons himself, and almost all his grandchildren. The son that survived was an honest man, but far inferior to him. I do not remember who besides these were of that committee, which, because it sate in Brook House, was called by the name of that house. 1668.

The court was much troubled to see an inquiry of this kind set on foot. It was said, the King was basely treated, when all his expense was to be looked into. On the other hand it was answered, that the parliament did not look into his revenue, but only to the distribution of that treasure that was trusted to him for carrying on the war. I was told that, after all the most shameful items that could be put into an account, there was none offered for about 800,000*l.*; but I was not then in England: so I was very imperfectly informed as to this matter. The chief men that promoted this were taken off (as the word was then for corrupting members), in which the court made so great a progress, that it was thought the King could never have been prevailed on to part with a parliament so much practised on, and where every man's price was known; for as a man rose in his credit in the House, he raised his price, and expected to be treated accordingly. In all this inquiry, the carelessness and luxury of the court came to be so much exposed, that the King's spirit was much sharpened upon 1669. Many parliament men gained by the court.

1669. it: all the flatterers about him magnified foreign governments, where the princes were absolute—that in France more particularly. Many to please him said, it was a very easy thing to shake off the restraints of law, if the King would but set about it. The crown of Denmark was elective, and subject to a senate; and yet was in one day, without any visible force, changed to be both hereditary and absolute, no rebellion nor convulsion of state following on it. The King loved the project in general; but would not give himself the trouble of laying or managing it; and therefore, till his affairs were made easier, and the project grew clearer, he resolved to keep all things close within himself; and went on in the common maxim to balance party against party, and by doing popular things, to get money of his parliament, under the pretence of supporting the triple alliance: so money-bills passed easily in the House of Commons; which by a strange reverse came to be opposed in the House of Lords, who began to complain that the money-bills came up so thick, that it was said there was no end of their giving. End, signifying purpose, as well as a measure, this passed as a severe jest at that time. Sir John Coventry made a gross reflection on the King's amours. He was one of those who struggled much against the giving money. The common method is, after those who oppose such bills fail in the main vote, the next thing they endeavour is, to lay the money on funds that will be unacceptable, and will prove deficient: so these men proposed the laying a tax on the play-houses, which in so dissolute a time were become nests of prostitution; and the stage was defiled beyond all example: Dryden, the great master of dramatic poesy, being a monster of immodesty, and of impurity of all sorts.* This was opposed by the court: it was said the players were the King's servants, and a part of his pleasure. Coventry asked, whether did the King's pleasure lie among the men or the women that acted: this was carried with great indignation to the court. It was said, this was the first time that the

* This must be understood of his performances for the stage; for as to his personal character, there was nothing remarkably vicious in it, but his plays are some of them the fullest of obscenity of any now extant.

King was personally reflected on; if it was passed over, more of the same kind would follow, and it would grow a fashion to talk so: it was therefore fit to take such severe notice of this, that nobody should dare to talk at that rate for the future. The Duke of York told me, he said all he could to the King to divert him from the resolution he took, which was to send some of the guards, and watch in the streets where Sir John lodged, and leave a mark upon him. Sands and Obrian, and some others, went thither; and as Coventry was going home, they drew about him. He stood up to the wall, and snatched the flambeau out of his servant's hands; and with that in one hand, and his sword in the other, he defended himself so well, that he got more credit by it than by all the actions of his life. He wounded some of them, but was soon disarmed; and then they cut his nose to the bone, to teach him to remember what respect he owed to the King; and so they left him, and went back to the Duke of Monmouth's, where Obrian's arm was dressed: that matter was executed by orders from the Duke of Monmouth; for which he was severely censured, because he lived then in professions of friendship with Coventry: so that his subjection to the King was not thought an excuse, for directing so vile an attempt on his friend, without sending him secret notice of what was designed. Coventry had his nose so well sewed up, that the scar was scarce to be discerned. This put the House of Commons in a furious uproar: they passed a bill of banishment against the actors of it; and put a clause in it, that it should not be in the King's power to pardon them: this gave great advantages to all those that opposed the court; and was often remembered, and much improved, by all the angry men of this time. The names of the court and country party, which till now had seemed to be forgotten, were again revived.

1669.

Coventry's nose was cut.

When the city was pretty well rebuilt, they began to take care of the churches, which had lain in ashes some years: and in that time conventicles abounded in all parts of the city. It was thought hard to hinder men from worshipping God any way as they could, when there were no churches nor ministers to look after them. But they began to raise churches of boards, till the public allowance should be raised towards the building the churches.

A new prosecution of conventicles.

1669. These they called tabernacles: and they fitted them up with pews and galleries as churches. So now an act was proposed, reviving the former act against conventicles, with some new clauses in it. One was very extraordinary, that if any doubt should arise concerning the meaning of any part of this act, it was to be determined in the sense that was the most contrary to conventicles; it being the intention of the House to repress them in the most effectual manner possible. The other was, the laying a heavy fine on such justices of the peace as should not execute the law when informations were brought them. Upon this many, who would not be the instruments of such severities, left the bench, and would sit there no longer. This act was executed in the city very severely in Starling's mayoralty; and put things in such disorder, that many of the trading men of the city began to talk of removing with their stocks over to Holland: but the King ordered a stop to be put to farther severities. Many of the sects either discontinued their meetings, or held them very secretly with small numbers, and not in hours of public worship: yet informers were encouraged, and were every where at work. The behaviour of the quakers was more particular, and had something in it that looked bold. They met at the same place, and at the same hour as before. And when they were seized, none of them would go out of the way: they went all together to prison: they staid there till they were dismissed; for they would not petition to be set at liberty, nor would they pay their fines set on them, nor so much as their jail fees, calling these the wages of unrighteousness. And as soon as they were let out, they went to their meeting-houses again; and, when they found these were shut up by order, they held their meetings in the streets, before the doors of those houses. They said, they would not disown or be ashamed of their meeting together to worship God; but, in imitation of Daniel, they would do it the more publicly, because they were forbidden the doing it. Some called this obstinacy, while others called it firmness. But by it they carried their point; for the government grew weary of dealing with so much perverseness, and so began to let them alone.

The King went com-

The King had by this time got all the money that he expected from the House of Commons, and that after great

practice on both Lords and Commons. Many bones of contention were thrown in to create differences between the two houses, to try if by both houses insisting on them the money bills might fall: but, to prevent all trouble from the Lords, the King was advised to go and be present at all their debates. Lord Lauderdale valued himself to me on this advice, which he said he gave. At first the King sat decently on the throne, though even that was a great restraint on the freedom of debate, which had some effect for a while; though afterwards many of the lords seemed to speak with the more boldness; because, they said, one heard it to whom they had no other access but in that place; and they took the more liberty, because what they had said could not be reported wrong. The King, who was often weary of time, and did not know how to get round the day, liked the going to the House as a pleasant diversion: so he went constantly. And he quickly left the throne, and stood by the fire, which drew a crowd about him, that broke all the decency of that House; for before that time every lord sat regularly in his place: but the King's coming broke the order of their sitting as became senators. The King's going thither had a much worse effect: for he became a common solicitor, not only in public affairs, but even in private matters of justice. He would in a very little time have gone round the House, and spoke to every man that he thought worth speaking to. And he was apt to do that upon the solicitation of any of the ladies in favour, or of any that had credit with them. He knew well on whom he could prevail: so being once in a matter of justice desired to speak to the Earl of Essex and the Lord Hollis: he said they were stiff and sullen men: but when he was next desired to solicit two others he undertook to do it; and said, They are men of no conscience, so I will take the government of their conscience into my own hands. Yet when any of the lords told him plainly that they could not vote as he desired, he seemed to take it well from them. When the act against conventicles was debated in that House, Wilkins argued long against it. The King was much for having it pass, not that he intended to execute it, but he was glad to have that body of men at mercy, and to force them to concur in the design for a general toleration. He spoke to Wilkins not to oppose it: he answer-

1669.

monly to the House of Lords.

1669. ed, he thought it an ill thing both in conscience and policy; therefore, both as he was an Englishman and a bishop, he was bound to oppose it. The King then desired him not to come to the House while it depended. He said, by the law and constitution of England, and by his Majesty's favour, he had a right to debate and vote; and he was neither afraid nor ashamed to own his opinion in that matter, and to act pursuant to it: so he went on, and the King was not offended with his freedom. But though he bore with such a frank refusing to comply with his desire, yet if any had made him such general answers, as led him to believe they intended to be compliant, and had not in all things done as he expected, he called that a juggling with him; and he was apt to speak hardly of them on that account. No sooner was the King at ease, and had his fleet put in good case, and his stores and magazines well furnished, than he immediately fell to negociating with France, both to ruin Holland and to subvert the government of England. The Brook House business, as well as the burning his fleet, stuck as deep as any thing could do in his heart. He resolved to revenge the one, and to free himself from the apprehensions of the other's returning upon him: though the House of Commons were so far practised on that the report of Brook House was let fall, and that matter was no more insisted on: yet he abhorred the precedent, and the discoveries that had been made upon it.

The Prince of Orange came to the King.

The Prince of Orange came over to him in the winter 1669. He was then in the twentieth year of his age: so he came over, both to see how the King intended to pay the great debt that he owed him, which had been contracted by his father on his account, and likewise to try what offices the King would do in order to his advancement to the stadtholdership. The King treated him civilly. He assured him he would pay the debt; but did not lay down any method of doing it: so these were only good words. He tried the Prince, as the Prince himself told me, in point of religion: he spoke of all the protestants as a factious body, broken among themselves, ever since they had broken off from the main body; and wished that he would take more pains and look into these things better, and not be led by his Dutch blockheads. The Prince told all this to Zuylesteyn, his natural uncle. They were both amazed at

it, and wondered how the King could trust so great a secret, as his being a papist, to so young a person. The Prince told me, that he never spoke of this to any other person till after his death; but he carried it always in his own mind, and could not hinder himself from judging of all the King's intentions after that, from the discovery he had then made of his own sentiments. Nor did he, upon his not complying with that proposition, expect any real assistance of the King, but general intercessions, which signified nothing; and that was all he obtained. 1669.

The affairs of Scotland.

So far have I carried on the thread of the affairs of England, down from the peace of Breda to the year 1670, in which the negotiation with the court of France was set on foot. I am not sure, that every thing is told in just order, because I was all the while very much retired from the world and from company: but I am confident, I have given a true representation of things, since I had most of these matters from persons who knew them well, and who were not like to deceive me: but now I return to my own country, where the same spirit appeared in the administration.

A treaty for an accommodation with the presbyterians in Scotland.

The King was now upon measures of moderation and comprehension; so these were also pursued in Scotland. Leightoun was the only person among the bishops who declared for these methods, and he made no step without talking it over to me: a great many churches were already vacant. The people fell off entirely from all the episcopal clergy in the western countries, and a set of hot, fiery young teachers went about among them, inflaming them more and more, so it was necessary to find a remedy for this. Leightoun proposed that a treaty should be set on foot in order to the accommodating our differences, and for changing the laws, that had carried the episcopal authority much higher than any of the bishops themselves put in practice. He saw both church and state were rent; religion was like to be lost; popery, or rather barbarity, was like to come in upon us; and therefore he proposed such a scheme, as he thought might have taken with the soberest man of presbyterian principles, reckoning that, if the schism could be once healed, and order be once restored, it might be easy to bring things into such management, that the concessions then to be offered should do no great hurt in present, and should die with that generation. He observed the extraordinary

1669. concessions made by the African church to the Donatists, who were every whit as wild and extravagant as our people were; therefore he went indeed very far in the extenuating the episcopal authority; but he thought it would be easy afterwards, to recover what seemed necessary to be yielded at present.

He proposed, that the church should be governed by the bishops and their clergy, mixing together in the church judicatories, in which the bishop should act only as a president, and be determined by the majority of his presbyters, both in matters of jurisdiction and ordination; and that the presbyterians should be allowed, when they sat down first in these judicatories, to declare, that their sitting under a bishop was submitted to by them only for peace sake, with a reservation of their opinion with relation to any such presidency, and that no negative vote should be claimed by the bishop; that bishops should go to the churches, in which such as were to be ordained were to serve, and hear, and discuss any exceptions that were made to them, and ordain them with the concurrence of the presbytery; that such as were to be ordained should have leave to declare their opinion, if they thought the bishop was only the head of the presbyters; and he also proposed, that there should be provincial synods, to sit in course every third year, or oftener, if the King should summon them, in which complaints of the bishops should be received, and they should be censured accordingly. The laws that settled episcopacy, and the authority of a national synod, were to be altered according to this scheme. To justify, or rather to excuse these concessions, which left little more than the name of a bishop, he said, as for their protestation, it would be little minded, and soon forgotten: the world would see the union that would be again settled among us, and the protestation would lie dead in the books and die with those that made it: as for the negative vote, bishops generally managed matters so that they had no occasion for it; but, if it should be found necessary, it might be lodged in the King's name with some secular person, who should interpose as often as the bishop saw it was expedient to use it: and if the present race could be but laid in their graves in peace, all those heats would abate, if not quite fall off. He also thought it was a much decenter thing for bishops to go

upon the place where the minister was to serve, and to ordain after solemn fasting and prayer, than to huddle it up at their cathedrals with no solemnity, and scarce with common decency. It seemed also reasonable that bishops should be liable to censure as well as other people; and that in a fixed court, which was to consist of bishops and deans, and two chosen from every presbytery. The liberty offered to such as were to be ordained to declare their opinion, was the hardest part of the whole: it looked like the perpetuating a factious and irregular humour: but few would make use of it. All the churches in the gift of the King, or of the bishops, would go to men of other principles. But though some things of an ill digestion were at such a time admitted, yet if by these means the schism could be once healed, and the nation again settled in a peaceable state, the advantage of that would balance all that was lost by those abatements that were to be made in the episcopal authority, which had been raised too high; and, to correct that, was now to be let fall too low, if it were not for the good that was to be hoped for from this accommodation; for this came to be the word as comprehension was in England. He proposed farther, that a treaty might be set on foot for bringing the presbyterians to accept of these concessions. The Earl of Kincardin was against all treating with them: they were a trifling sort of disputatious people: they would fall into much wrangling, and would subdivide among themselves: and the young and ignorant men among them, that were accustomed to popular declamations, would say, here was a bargain made to sell Christ's kingdom and his prerogative. He therefore proposed, that since we knew both their principles and their tempers, we ought to carry the concessions as far as it was either reasonable or expedient, and pass these into laws; and then they would submit to a settlement, that was made, and that could not be helped, more easily than give a consent beforehand, to any thing that seemed to entrench on that which they called the liberty of the church. Leightoun did fully agree with him in this; but Lord Lauderdale would never consent to that: he said, a law that did so entirely change the constitution of the church, when it came to be passed and printed, would be construed in England as a pulling down of episcopacy, 1669.

1669. unless he could have this to say in excuse for it, that the presbyterians were willing to come under that model: so he said, since the load of what was to be done in Scotland would fall heaviest on him, he would not expose himself so much, as the passing any such act must certainly do, till he knew what effects would follow on it. So we were forced now to try how to deal with them in a treaty.

I was sent to propose this scheme to Hutchinson, who was esteemed the learnedest man among them. But I was only to try him, and to talk of it as a notion of my own. He had married my cousin-german; and I had been long acquainted with him. He looked on it as a project that would never take effect: so he would not give his opinion about it. He said, when these concessions were passed into laws, he would know what he should think of them: but he was one of many, so he avoided to declare himself. The next thing under consideration was, how to dispose of the many vacancies, and how to put a stop to conventicles. Leightoun proposed, that they should be kept still vacant, while the treaty was on foot; and that the presbyterians should see how much the government was in earnest, in the design of bringing them to serve in the church, when so many places were kept open for them.

An indulgence proposed.

The Earl of Tweedale thought the treaty would run into a great length, and to many niceties, and would perhaps come to nothing in conclusion; so he proposed the granting some of the outed ministers leave to go and serve in those parishes by an act of the King's indulgence, from whence it came to be called "the indulgence." Leightoun was against this: he thought nothing would bring on the presbyterians to a treaty, so much as the hopes of being again suffered to return to their benefices: whereas, if they were once admitted to them, they would reckon they had gained their point, and would grow more backward. I was desired to go into the western parts, and to give a true account of matters as I found them there; so I went, as in a visit to the Duke of Hamilton, whose dutchess was a woman of great piety and great parts. She had much credit among them; for she passed for a zealous presbyterian, though she protested to me she never entered into the points of controversy, and had no settled opinion about forms of government; only she thought their ministers

were good men, who kept the country in great quiet and order: they were, she said, blameless in their lives, devout in their way, and diligent in their labours. The people were all in a phrenzy, and were in no disposition to any treaty. The furiousest men among them were busy in conventicles, inflaming them against all agreements: so she thought that, if the more moderate presbyterians were put in vacant churches, the people would grow tamer, and be taken out of the hands of the mad preachers that were then most in vogue: this would likewise create a confidence in them: for they were now so possessed with prejudices, as to believe that all that was proposed, was only an artifice to make them fall out among themselves, and deceive them at last: this seemed reasonable, and she got many of the more moderate of them to come to me; and they all talked in the same strain. 1669.

An attempt to murder Sharp.

A strange accident happened to Sharp in July, 1668, as he was going into his coach in full day-light, the Bishop of Orkney being with him, a man came up to the coach, and discharged a pistol at him with a brace of bullets in it, as the Bishop of Orkney was going up into the coach: he intended to shoot through his cloak at Sharp, as he was mounting up; but the bullet stuck in the Bishop of Orkney's arm, and shattered it so, that, though he lived some years after that, they were forced to open it every year for an exfoliation. Sharp was so universally hated, that though this was done in full day-light, and on the high street, yet nobody offered to seize the assassin: so he walked off, and went home, and shifted himself of an odd wig, which he was not accustomed to wear, and came out, and walked on the streets immediately; but Sharp had viewed him so narrowly, that he discovered him afterwards as shall be mentioned in its proper place: I lived then much out of the world; yet I thought it decent to go and congratulate him on this occasion. He was much touched with it, and put on a shew of devotion upon it. He said with a very serious look, My times are wholly in thy hand, O thou God of my life; this was the single expression favouring of piety, that ever fell from him, in all the conversation that passed between him and me. Proclamations were issued out with great rewards for discovering the actor; but nothing followed on them: on this occasion it

1669. was thought proper that he should be called to court, and have some marks of the King's favour put on him: he promised to make many good motions; and he talked for awhile like a changed man; and went out of his way, as he was going to court, to visit me at my parsonage-house, and seemed resolved to turn to other methods. The King, as he had a particular talent that way, when he had a mind to it, treated him with special characters of favour and respect; but he made no proposition to the King; only in general terms he approved of the methods of gentleness and moderation then in vogue.

Sharp proposed the indulging some ministers that did not conform.

When he came back to Scotland, he moved in council that an indulgence might be granted to some of the public resolutioners, with some rules and restraints; such as that they should not speak or preach against episcopacy, and that they should not admit to either of the sacraments any of the neighbouring parishes, without a desire from their own ministers; and that they should engage themselves to observe these rules. He knew that his proposition, for all the shew of moderation that was in it, could have no effect, for the resolutioners and the protestors had laid down their old disputes, and were resolved to come under no discrimination on that account; nor would they engage to observe any limitations that should be laid on them. They said, the government might lay restraints on them, and punish them if they broke through them, and they would obey them, or not, at their peril; but they laid down this for a maxim—that they had received a complete ministry from Christ, and that the judicatories of the church had only power to govern them in the exercise of their function. If the King should lay any limitations on them, they might obey these, as prudence should direct; but they would not bind themselves up by any engagement of their own. Burnet and his clergy (for the diocese of Glasgow is above the fourth part of all Scotland) came to Edinburgh full of high complaints, that the churches were universally forsaken, and that conventicles abounded in every corner of the country. A proclamation was upon that issued out, in imitation of the English act, setting a fine of 50*l.* upon every landlord on whose grounds any conventicle was held, which he might recover, as he could, of those who were at any such conventicle. This was plainly against

law; for the council had no power by their authority to set arbitrary fines. It was pretended, on the other hand, that the act of parliament that had restored episcopacy, had a clause in it, recommending the execution of that act to the privy council, by all the best ways they could think of. But the lawyers of the council-board said, that in matters of property their power was certainly tied up to the direction of the law; and the clause mentioned related only to particular methods, but could not be construed so far as this proclamation carried the matter. The proclamation went out, but was never executed. It was sent up to London, and had a shew of zeal; and so was made use of by the Earl of Lauderdale to bear down the clamour that was raised against him and his party in Scotland, as if they designed to pull down episcopacy. The model of the county militia was now executed; and above two thousand horse, and sixteen thousand foot, were armed and trained, and cast into independent regiments and troops, who were all to be under such orders as the council issued out. All this was against law; for the King had only a power, upon an extraordinary occasion, to raise and march such a body of men as he should summon together, and that at his own charge; but the converting this into a standing militia, which carried with it a standing charge, was thought a great stretch of prerogative. Yet it was resolved on, though great exceptions were made to it by the lawyers, chiefly by Sir John Nisbit, the King's advocate, a man of great learning, both in law and in many other things, chiefly in the Greek learning. He was a person of great integrity, and always stood firm to the law. The true secret of this design was, that Lord Lauderdale was now pressing to get into the management of the affairs of England; and he saw what the court was aiming at. And he had a mind to make himself considerable by this—that he had in his hand a great army, with a magazine of arms, and a stock of money laid up in Scotland, for any accident that might happen. So all his creatures, and Lady Dysert more than all the rest, had this up in all companies, that none before him ever dreamt how to make Scotland considerable to the King; but now it began to make a great figure. An army, a magazine, and a treasure, were words of a high sound; chiefly now that the House of Commons was like to grow

1669.

1669. so intractable, that the Duke of Buckingham despaired of being able to manage them. He moved the dissolving the parliament, and calling a new one; and thought the nation would choose men less zealous for the church; for these were all against him: but the King would not venture on it: he knew the House of Commons was either firm to him by their own principles, or by his management they could be made so; and therefore he would not run the risk of any new election. He had the dissenters much in his power, by the severe laws under which they lay at his mercy; but he did not know what influence they might have in elections, and in a new parliament: these he knew were in their hearts enemies to prerogative; which he believed they would shew, as soon as they got themselves to be delivered from the laws that then put them in the King's power.

Propositions for the union of the two kingdoms.

Lord Tweedale was then at London, and he set on foot a proposition, that came to nothing, but made so much noise, and was of such importance, that it deserves to be enlarged on. It was for the union of both kingdoms. The King liked it, because he reckoned, that at least for his time, he should be sure of all the members that should be sent up from Sotland. The Duke of Buckingham went in easily to a new thing; and Lord Keeper Bridgman was much for it. The Lord Lauderdale pressed it vehemently: it made it necessary to hold a parliament in Scotland, where he intended to be the King's commissioner. The Earl of Tweedale was for it on other accounts, both to settle the establishment of the militia, and to get some alterations made in the laws that related to the church; and he really drove at the union, as a thing which he thought might be brought about. Scotland, he said, was even then under great uneasiness, though the King knew the state of that kingdom; but when another King should reign that knew not Joseph, (so he expressed it) the nation would be delivered up to favourites, and be devoured by them: rich provinces like those that belonged to Spain, could hold out long under oppression, but a poor country would be soon dispeopled, if much oppressed: and if a King of deep designs against public liberty should caress the Scots, he might easily engage them, since a poor country may be supposed willing to change their seats, and to break in on a richer

one: there was indeed no fear of that at present, for the dotage of the nation on presbytery, and the firmness with which the government supported episcopacy, set them so far from one another, that no engagement of that sort could be attempted; but if a King should take a dexterous method for putting that out of the way, he might carry Scotland to any design he thought fit to engage in. Lord Tweedale blamed Sir Francis Bacon much for laying it down as a maxim, that Scotland was to be reckoned as the third part of the island, and to be treated accordingly: whereas he assured me, Scotland for numbers of people was not above a tenth part, and for wealth not above a fortieth part of the island. 1669.

The discourse of the union was kept up, till it was resolved to summon a new parliament in Scotland: then Lord Lauderdale made the King reflect on the old schemes he had laid before him at the restoration; and he undertook to manage the parliament so, as to make it answer that end more effectually, than any before him had ever done. This was resolved on in the summer, 1669. I being then at Hamilton, and having got the best information of the state of the country that I could, wrote a long account of all I had heard to the Lord Tweedale, and concluded it with an advice to put some of the more moderate of the presbyterians into the vacant churches. Sir Robert Murray told me, the letter was so well liked, that it was read to the King. Such a letter would have signified nothing, if Lord Tweedale had not been fixed in the same notion. He had now a plausible thing to support it. So my principles and zeal for the church, and I know not what besides, were raised, to make my advice signify somewhat; and it was said, I was the man that went most entirely into Leightoun's maxims. So this indiscreet letter of mine, sent without communicating it to Leightoun, gave the deciding stroke; and, as may be easily believed, it drew much hatred on me, from all that either knew it, or did suspect it.

The King gave orders for the indulgence.

The King wrote a letter to the privy council, ordering them to indulge such of the presbyterians as were peaceable and loyal, so far as to suffer them to serve in vacant churches, though they did not submit to the present establishment; and he required them to set them such rules as might preserve order and peace, and to look well to the execution of them: and as for such as could not be pro-

1669. vided in churches at that time, he ordered a pension of 20*l.* sterling a year to be paid every one of them, as long as they lived orderly. Nothing followed on the second article of this letter: the presbyterians looked on this as the King's hire to be silent, and not to do their duty; and none of them would accept of it: but as to the first part of the letter, on the first council day after it was read, twelve of the ministers were indulged: they had parishes assigned them; and about thirty more were afterwards indulged in the same manner; and then a stop was put to it for some time. With the warrants that they had for their churches, there was a paper of rules likewise put in their hands. Hutcheson, in all their names, made a speech to the council: he began with decent expressions of thanks to the King, and their lordships: he said, they should at all times give such obedience to laws and orders, as could stand with a good conscience; and so they were dismissed: as for those of them that were allowed to go to the churches where they had served before, no difficulty could be made: but those of them that were named to other churches, would not enter on the serving them, till the church sessions, and the inhabitants of the parish met, and made choice of them for their pastors, and gave them a call (as they worded it) to serve among them: but, upon this, scruples arose among some, who said the people's choice ought to be free; whereas now they were limited to the person named by the council, which looked like an election upon a *congé d'elire*, with a letter naming the person, with which they had often diverted themselves; but scruples are mighty things, when they concur with inclination or interest; and when they are not supported by these, men learn distinctions to get free from them: so it happened in this case; for though some few were startled at these things, yet they lay in no man's way; for every man went, and was possessed of the church marked out for him: and at first the people of the country ran to them with a sort of transport of joy; yet this was soon cooled. It was hoped that they would have begun their ministry with a public testimony against all that had been done in opposition to what they were accustomed to call the work of God: but they were silent at that time, and preached only the doctrines of Christianity: this disgusted all those who loved to hear their ministers preach to the

times as they called it. The stop put to the indulgence made many conclude, that those who had obtained the favour, had entered into some secret engagements: so they came to call them the King's curates, as they had called the clergy in derision the Bishop's curates: their caution brought them under a worse character of dumb dogs, that could not bark. Those, who by their fierce behaviour, had shut themselves out from a share in the indulgence, began to call this Erastianism, and the civil magistrates, assuming the power of sacred matters: they said this was visibly an artifice to lay things asleep with the present generation; and was one of the depths of Satan, to give a present quiet, in order to the certain destruction of presbytery: and it was also said, that there was a visible departing of the Divine assistance from those preachers: they preached no more with the power and authority that had accompanied them at conventicles: so many began to fall off from them, and to go again to conventicles. Many of the preachers confessed to me, that they found an ignorance and a deadness among those who had been the hottest upon their meetings, beyond what could have been imagined. They that could have argued about the intrinsic power of the church, and episcopacy, and presbytery, upon which all their sermons had chiefly run for several years, knew very little of the essentials of religion; but the indulged preachers, instead of setting themselves with the zeal and courage that became them, against the follies of the people, of which they confessed to myself they were very sensible, took a different method; and studied by mean compliances to gain upon their affections, and to take them out of the hands of some fiery men, that were going up and down among them. The tempers of some brought them under this servile popularity, into which others went out of a desire to live easy. 1669.

The indulgence was settled in a hurry; but when it came to be descanted on, it appeared to be plainly against law; for by the act restoring episcopacy none were capable of benefices, but such as should own the authority of bishops, and be instituted by them. So now the episcopal party, that were wont to put all authority in the King, as long as he was for them, began to talk of law. They said, the King's power was bounded by the law, and that these pro- This complained of as against law.

1669. ceedings were the trampling of law under foot: for all parties, as they need the shelter of law, or the stretches of the prerogative, are apt by turns to magnify the one or the other. Burnet and his clergy were out of measure enraged at the indulgence: they were not only abandoned, but ill used by the people, who were beginning to threaten, or to buy them out of their churches, that they also might have the benefit of the indulgence. The synod of the clergy was held at Glasgow, in October; and they moved that an address might be drawn up, representing to the King the miseries they were under, occasioned by the indulgence; they complained of it as illegal, and likely to be fatal to the church. This was, according to the words in some of their acts of parliament, a misrepresenting the King's proceedings, in order to the alienating the hearts of his subjects from him, which was made capital, as may appear by the account given in the former book of the proceedings against the Lord Balmerinoch. He that drew this address was one Ross, afterwards archbishop, first of Glasgow, and then of St. Andrews, who was an ignorant man, and violent out of measure; so it was drawn full of acrimony. Yet they resolved to keep it secret, till advice should be taken upon it; and accordingly to present it to the privy council, or not. A copy of this was procured by indirect methods, and it was sent up to court, after the Earl of Lauderdale was come off, and was in his way to hold a parliament in Scotland. Lord Lauderdale had left all his concerns at court with Sir Robert Murray; for though at his mistress's instigation, he had used him very unworthily, yet he had so great an opinion of his virtue and candour, that he left all his affairs to his care. As soon as the King saw the clergy's address, he said, it was a new western remonstrance: and he ordered, that Burnet should not be suffered to come to the parliament, and that he should be proceeded against, as far as the law could carry the matter. It was not easy to stretch this so far as to make it criminal; but Burnet, being obnoxious on other accounts, they intended to frighten him to submit, and to resign his bishopric.

A parliament in Scotland.

The parliament was opened in November; Lord Lauderdale's speech ran upon two heads. The one was, the recommending to their care the preservation of the church as established by law; upon which he took occasion to ex-

press great zeal for episcopacy: the other head related to the union of both kingdoms: all that was done relating to that was, that an act passed for a treaty about it; and in the following summer, in a subsequent session, commissioners were named, who went up to treat about it: but they made no progress, and the thing fell so soon, that it was very visible it was never intended in good earnest. 1669.

The two first acts that passed in parliament were of more importance, and had a deeper design. The first explained and asserted the King's supremacy; but carried it in such general words, that it might have been stretched to every thing. It was declared, that the settling all things relating to the external government of the church was a right of the crown: and that all things relating to ecclesiastical meetings, matters and persons, were to be ordered according to such directions as the King should send to his privy council: and that these should be published by them, and should have the force of laws. Lord Lauderdale very probably knew the secret of the Duke's religion, and had got into his favour: so it was very likely, that he intended to establish himself in it, by putting the church of Scotland wholly in his power: but that was yet a secret to us all in Scotland. The method he took to get it passed was this; he told all those who loved presbytery, or that did not much favour the bishops, that it was necessary to keep them under, by making them depend absolutely on the King: this was indeed a transferring the whole legislature, as to the matters of the church, from the parliament, and vesting it singly in the King: yet he told them, if this were done, as the circumstances might happen to be favourable, the King might be prevailed on, if a dash of a pen would do it, to change all on the sudden: whereas that could never be hoped for, if it could not be brought about, but by the pomp and ceremony of a parliament. He made the nobility see, they needed fear no more the insolence of bishops, if they were at mercy, as this would make them. Sharp did not like it, but durst not oppose it: he made a long dark speech, copied out of Dr. Taylor, distinguishing between the civil and ecclesiastical authority, and then voted for it; so did all the bishops that were present; some absented themselves. Leightoun was against any such act, and got some words to be altered in it: he thought

The supremacy carried very high.

1669.

it might be stretched to ill ends: and so he was very averse to it. Yet he gave his vote for it, not having sufficiently considered the extent of the words, and the consequences that might follow on such an act, for which he was very sorry as long as he lived. But at that time there were no apprehensions in Scotland of the danger of popery. Many of the best of the episcopal clergy, Nairn and Charteris in particular, were highly offended at the act: they thought it plainly made the King our pope. The presbyterians said, it put him in Christ's stead: they said, the King had already too much power in the matters of the church, and nothing ruined the clergy more, than their being brought into servile compliances, and a base dependance upon courts. I had no share in the counsels about this act; I only thought it was designed by Lord Tweedale to justify the indulgence, which he protested to me was his chief end in it; and nobody could ever tell me how the words "ecclesiastical matters," was put in the act. Leightoun thought, he was sure it was put in after the draught and form of the act was agreed on: it was generally charged on Lord Lauderdale. And when the Duke's religion came to be known, then all people saw, how much the legal settlement of our religion was put in his power by this means. Yet the preamble of the act being only concerning the external government of the church, it was thought that the words "ecclesiastical matters," were to be confined to the sense that was limited by the preamble.

An act for the county militia.

The next act that passed was concerning the militia; all that had been done in raising it was approved, and it was enacted, that it should still be kept up, and be ready to march into any of the King's dominions, for any cause in which his Majesty's authority, power, or greatness should be concerned, and that the orders should be transmitted to them from the council board, without any mention of orders from the King: upon this, great reflections were made. Some said, that by this the army was taken out of the King's power and command, and put under the power of the council; so that if the greater part of the council should again rebel, as they did in the year 1638, the army was by the words of this act bound to follow their orders: but when jealousies broke out in England, of the ill designs that lay hid under this matter, it was thought that the intent of this clause was, that, if the King should call in the Scotch army,

it should not be necessary that he himself should send any orders for it; but that, upon a secret intimation, the council might do it without order, and then, if the design should miscarry, it should not lie on the King, but only on the council, whom in that case the King might disown, and so none about him should be blameable for it. The Earl of Lauderdale valued himself upon these acts, as if he had conquered kingdoms by them: he wrote a letter to the King upon it, in which he said, all Scotland was now in his power: the church of Scotland was now more subject to him than the church of England was; this militia was now an army ready upon call, and that every man in Scotland was ready to march, whensoever he should order it, with several very ill insinuations in it. But a dangerous thing it is to write letters to princes: this letter fell into Duke Hamilton's hands some years after, and I had it in my hands for some days. It was intended to found an impeachment on it; but this happened at a time when the business of the exclusion of the Duke from the succession of the crown was so hotly pursued, that this, which, at another time, would have made great noise, was not so much considered as the importance of it might seem to deserve. The way how it came into such hands was this: the King, after he had read the letter, gave it to Sir Robert Murray, and when he died it was found among his papers: he had been much trusted in the King's laboratory, and had several of his chemical processes in his hands. So the King, after his death, did order one to look over all his papers, for chemical matters, but all the papers of state were let alone. So this, with many other papers, fell into the hands of his executors: and thus this letter came into Duke Hamilton's hands, who would have made use of it, if greater matters had not been then in agitation. This is not the single instance that I have known of papers of great consequence falling into the hands of the executors of great ministers, that might have been turned to very bad uses, if they had fallen into ill hands. It seems of great concern, that when a minister, or an ambassador dies, or is recalled, or is disgraced, all papers relating to the secrets of his employment should be of right in the power of the government: but I, of all men, should complain the least of this, since, by this remissness, many papers of a high nature have fallen in my way. 1669.

1669.

Burnet turned out, and Leightoun made Archbishop of Glasgow.

By the act of supremacy the King was now master, and could turn out bishops at pleasure. This had its first effect on Burnet, who was offered a pension if he would submit and resign, and was threatened to be treated more severely if he stood out. He complied, and retired to a private state of life, and bore his disgrace better than he had done his honours: he lived four years in the shade, and was generally much pitied; he was of himself good-natured and sincere, but was much in the power of others: he meddled too much in that which did not belong to him, and he did not understand, for he was not cut out for a court or for the ministry, and he was too remiss in that which was properly his business, and which he understood to a good degree; for he took no manner of care of the spiritual part of his function.

The state I found things in at Glasgow.

At this time the university of Glasgow, to whom the choice of the professor of divinity does belong, chose me, though unknown to them all, to be professor there. There was no sort of artifice or management to bring this about; it came of themselves, and they did it without any recommendation of any person whatsoever: so I was advised by all my friends to change my post, and go thither. This engaged me both into much study, and in a great deal of business. The clergy came all to me, thinking I had some credit with those that governed, and laid their grievances and complaints before me: they were very ill used, and were so entirely forsaken by their people, that in most places they shut up their churches; they were also threatened and affronted on all occasions. On the other hand, the gentlemen of the country came much to me, and told me such strange things of the vices of some, the follies of others, and the indiscretions of them all, that though it was not reasonable to believe all that they said, yet it was impossible not to believe a great deal of it: and so I soon saw what a hard province I was like to have of it. Accounts of the state of those parts were expected from me, and were like to be believed: and it was not easy to know, what ought to be believed, nor how matters were to be represented; for I found calumny was so equally practised on both sides, that I came to mistrust every thing that I heard. One thing was visible, that conventicles abounded, and strange doctrine was vented in them. The King's supremacy was now the

chief subject of declamation; it was said, bishops were indeed enemies to the liberties of the church, but the King's little finger would be heavier than their loins had been: after I had been for some months among them, and had heard so much, that I believed very little, I wrote to Lord Tweedale, that disorders did certainly increase, but, as for any particulars, I did not know what to believe, much less could I suggest what remedies seemed proper: I therefore proposed, that a committee of council might be sent round the country to examine matters, and to give such orders as were at present necessary for the public quiet, and that they might prepare a report against the next session of parliament, that then proper remedies might be found out. 1669.

A committee of council sent round the west.

Duke Hamilton, Lord Kincardin, Primrose, and Drummond, were sent to these parts. They met first at Hamilton, next at Glasgow; then they went to other parts, and came back, and ended their circuit at Glasgow. They punished some disorders, and threatened both the indulged ministers, and the countries, with greater severities, if they should still grow more and more insolent upon the favour that had been shewed them. I was blamed by the presbyterians for all they did, and by the episcopal party for all they did not; since these thought they did too little, as the others thought they did too much. They consulted much with me; and suffered me to intercede so effectually for those whom they had put in prison, that they were all set at liberty. The episcopal party thought I intended to make myself popular at their cost: so they began that strain of fury and calumny, that has pursued me ever since from that sort of people, as a secret enemy to their interest, and an underminer of it. But I was and still am an enemy to all force and violence in matters of conscience; and there is no principle that is more hated by bad ill-natured clergymen than that.

The Earls of Lauderdale and Tweedale pressed Leightoun much to accept of the see of Glasgow. He declined it with so much aversion, that we were all uneasy at it. Nothing moved him to hearken to it, but the hopes of bringing about the accommodation that was proposed; in which he had all assistance promised him from the government. The King ordered him to be sent for to court. He sent for me on his way, where he stopped a day, to know from me

1669. what prospect there was of doing any good. I could not much encourage him; yet I gave him all the hopes that I could raise myself to: and I was then inclined to think, that the accommodation was not impracticable. Upon his coming to London, he found Lord Lauderdale's temper was much inflamed; he was become fierce and intractable: but Lord Tweedale made every thing as easy to him as was possible. They had turned out an archbishop; so it concerned them to put an eminent man in his room, who should order matters with such moderation, that the government should not be under perpetual disturbance, by reason of complaints from those parts.

1670. But now the court was entering into new designs, into which Lord Lauderdale was thrusting himself, with an obsequious or rather an officious zeal. I will dwell no longer at present on that, than just to mention the Dutchess of Orleans' coming to Dover, of which a more particular account shall be given, after that I have laid together all that relates to Scotland in the year 1670, and the whole business of the accommodation. Leightoun proposed to the King his scheme of the accommodation, and the great advantages that his Majesty's affairs would have, if that country could be brought into temper. The King was at this time gone off from the design of a comprehension in England. Toleration was now thought the best way. Yet the Earl of Lauderdale possessed him with the necessity of doing somewhat to soften the Scots, in order to the great design he was then engaging in. Upon that the King, who seldom gave himself the trouble to think twice on any one thing, gave way to it. Leightoun's paper was, in some places, corrected by Sir Robert Murray, and was turned into instructions, by which Lord Lauderdale was authorized to pass the concessions that were to be offered into laws. This he would never own to me, though Leightoun shewed me the copy of them. But it appeared probable, by his conduct afterwards, that he had secret directions to spoil the matter, and that he intended to deceive us all. Lord Tweedale was more to be depended on; but he began to lose ground with Lady Dysert; and so his interest did not continue strong enough to carry on such a matter.

Instructions for accommodation.

Leightoun undertook the administration of the see of

Glasgow: and it was a year after this before he was prevailed on to be translated thither. He came upon this to Glasgow, and held a synod of his clergy, in which nothing was to be heard but complaints of desertion and ill usage from them all. Leightoun, in a sermon that he preached to them, and in several discourses, both in public and private, exhorted them to look up more to God; to consider themselves as the ministers of the cross of Christ; to bear the contempt and ill usage they met with as a cross laid on them for the exercise of their faith and patience; to lay aside all the appetites of revenge; to humble themselves before God; to have many days for secret fasting and prayers, and to meet often together, that they might quicken and assist one another in those holy exercises; and then they might expect blessings from heaven upon their labours. This was a new strain to the clergy: they had nothing to say against it; but it was a comfortless doctrine to them; and they had not been accustomed to it. No speedy ways were proposed for forcing the people to come to church, nor for sending soldiers among them, or raising the fines to which they were liable: so they went home as little edified with their new bishop as he was with them. When this was over, he went round some parts of the country, to the most eminent of the indulged ministers, and carried me with him: his business was to persuade them to hearken to propositions of peace: he told them, some of them would be quickly sent for to Edinburgh, where terms would be offered them in order to the making up our differences: all was sincerely meant: they would meet with no artifices nor hardships; and if they received those offers heartily, they would be turned into laws, and all the vacancies then in the church would be filled by their brethren. They received this with so much indifference, or rather neglect, that it would have cooled any zeal that was less warm, and less active, than that good man's was. They were scarce civil; and did not so much as thank him for his tenderness and care. The more artful among them, such as Hutcheson, said, it was a thing of general concern, and they were but single men. Others were more metaphysical, and entertained us with some poor arguings and distinctions. Leightoun began to lose

1670.

Leightoun's advices to his clergy.

1670.

heart: yet he resolved to set the negotiation on foot, and carry it as far as he could.

A conference between Leightoun and some presbyterians.

When Lord Lauderdale came down to hold a session of parliament, letters were writ to six of the presbyterian preachers, ordering them to come to town. There was a long conference between Leightoun and them, before the Earls of Lauderdale, Rothes, Tweedale, and Kincardin. Sharp would not be present at it: but he ordered Paterson, afterwards Archbishop of Glasgow, to hear all, and bring him an account of what passed. Leightoun laid before them the mischief of our divisions, and of the schism that they had occasioned: many souls were lost, and many more were in danger by these means; so that every one ought to do all he could to heal this wide breach, that had already let in so many evils among us, which were like to make way to many more: for his own part, he was persuaded, that episcopacy, as an order distinct from presbyters, had continued in the church ever since the days of the apostles; that the world had every where received the Christian religion from bishops, and that a parity among clergymen was never thought of in the church before the middle of the last century, and was then set up rather by accident than on design: yet, how much soever he was persuaded of this, since they were of another mind, he was now to offer a temper to them, by which both sides might still preserve their opinions, and yet unite in carrying on the ends of the gospel and their ministry: they had moderators among them, which was no Divine institution, but only a matter of order: the King, therefore, might name these; and the making them constant could be no such encroachment on their function, as that the peace of the church must be broken on such an account; nor could they say, that the blessing of the men named to this function, by an imposition of hands, did degrade them from their former office, to say no more of it: so they were still at least ministers. It is true, others thought they had a new and special authority, more than a bare presidency; that did not concern them who were not required to concur with them in any thing but in submitting to this presidency; and, as to that, they should be allowed to declare their own opinion against it, in as full and as public a manner as they pleased. He laid it to their consciences, to consider

of the whole matter, as in the presence of God, without any regard to party or popularity. He spoke, in all, near half an hour, with a gravity and force that made a very great impression on those who heard it. Hutcheson answered, and said, their opinion for a parity among the clergy was well known: the presidency now spoke of, had made way to a lordly dominion in the church; and, therefore, how inconsiderable soever the thing might seem to be, yet the effects of it both had been, and would be, very considerable. He therefore desired, some time might be given them to consider well of the propositions now made, and to consult with their brethren about them; and, since this might seem an assembling together against law, he desired they might have the King's commissioner's leave for it: this was immediately granted. We had a second conference, in which matters were more fully opened, and pressed home, on the grounds formerly mentioned. Lord Lauderdale made us all dine together, and came to us after dinner; but could scarce refrain himself from flying out; for their behaviour seemed both rude and crafty. But Leightoun had prepared him for it, and pressed him not to give them a handle to excuse their flying off, by any roughness in his deportment towards them. The propositions offered them were now generally known: Sharp cried out, that episcopacy was to be undermined, since the negative vote was to be let go. The inferior clergy thought, that if it took effect, and the presbyterians were to be generally brought into churches, they would be neglected, and that their people would forsake them: so they hated the whole thing. The bigotted presbyterians thought it was a snare, and the doing that which had a fair appearance at present, and was meant only to lay that generation in their graves in peace; by which means episcopacy, that was then shaking over all the nation, would come to have another root, and grow again out of that. But the far greater part of the nation approved of this design; and they reckoned either we should gain our point, and then all would be at quiet; or if such offers were rejected by the presbyterians, it would discover their temper, and alienate all indifferent men from them; and the nation would be convinced how unreasonable and stubborn they were, and how unworthy they were of any farther favour. All that was done in

1670.

1670. this session of parliament was, the raising a tax, and the naming commissioners for the union with England; besides two severe acts passed against conventicles.

New severities against conventicles. There had been a great one held in Fife, near Dunfermline, where none had ever been held before. Some gentlemen of estates were among them; and the novelty of the thing drew a great crowd together; for intimation had been given of it some days before. Many of these came in their ordinary arms: that gave a handle to call them "the rendezvous of rebellion." Some of them were taken and brought to Edinburgh, and pressed to name as many as they knew of their fellow conventiclers; but they refused to do it: this was sent up to court, and represented as the forerunner of rebellion: upon which Lord Lauderdale, hearing what use his enemies made of it, was transported almost to fits of rage. Severe acts passed upon it, by which their fines were raised higher; and they were made liable to arbitrary severities. The Earl of Lauderdale, with his own hand, put in a word in the act, that covered the papists, the fines being laid on such of the reformed religion as went not to church. He pretended by this to merit with the popish party, the Duke in particular; whose religion was yet a secret to us in Scotland, though it was none at court. He said to myself, he had put in these words on design to let the party know they were to be worse used than the papists themselves. All field conventicles were declared treasonable; and in the preacher they were made capital. The landlords, on whose grounds they were held were to be severely fined: and all who were at them were to be punished arbitrarily, if they did not discover all that were present whom they knew. House conventicles, crowded without the doors, or at the windows, were to be reckoned and punished as field conventicles. Sir Robert Murray told me, that the King was not well pleased with this act, as being extravagantly severe; chiefly in that of the preachers being to be punished by death. He said, bloody laws did no good; and that he would never have passed it, if he had known it beforehand. The half of the parliament abhorred this act: yet so abject were they in their submissions to Lord Lauderdale, that the young Earl of Cassilis was the single person that voted in the negative: this passed in parliament so

The reformed religion.

suddenly, that Leightoun knew nothing of it till it was too late. He expostulated with Lord Tweedale severely about it: he said the whole complexion of it was so contrary to the common rules of humanity, not to say Christianity, that he was ashamed to mix in counsels with those who could frame and pass such acts: and he thought it somewhat strange, that neither he nor I had been advised with in it. The Earl of Tweedale said, the late field conventicle being a new thing, it had forced them to severities, that at another time could not be well excused; and he assured us, there was no design to put it in execution. 1670.

Leightoun sent to the western counties six episcopal divines; all, except myself, brought from other parts: Nairn and Charteris were two of them: the three others, Aird, Cook, and Paterson, were the best we could persuade to go round the country to preach in vacant churches, and to argue upon the grounds of the accommodation with such as should come to them. The episcopal clergy, who were yet in the country, could not argue much for any thing; and would not at all argue in favour of a proposition that they hated. The people of the country came generally to hear us, though not in great crowds. We were indeed amazed to see a poor commonalty, so capable of arguing upon points of government, and on the bounds to be set to the power of princes in matters of religion: upon all these topics they had texts of Scripture at hand, and were ready with their answers to any thing that was said to them. This measure of knowledge was spread even among the meanest of them, their cottagers and their servants. They were indeed vain of their knowledge, much conceited of themselves, and were full of a most entangled scrupulosity; so that they found, or made difficulties, in every thing that could be laid before them. We staid about three months in the country; and in that time there was a stand in the frequency of conventicles: but, as soon as we were gone, a set of those hot preachers went round all the places in which we had been, to defeat all the good we could hope to do: they told them the devil was never so formidable as when he was transformed into an angel of light.

The presbyterians resolved to reject the offers made them.

The outed ministers had many meetings in several parts of the kingdom: they found themselves under great difficulties. The people had got it among them, that all that

1670. was now driven at, was only to extinguish presbytery, by some seeming concessions with the present generation; and that if the ministers went into it, they gave up their cause, that so they themselves might be provided for during their lives, and die at more ease: so they, who were strangely subdued by their desire of popularity, resolved to reject the propositions, though they could not well tell on what grounds they should justify it. A report was also spread among them, which they believed, and had its full effect upon them. It was said, that the King was alienated from the church of England, and weary of supporting episcopacy in Scotland; and so was resolved not to clog his government any longer with it; and that the concessions now made, did not arise from any tenderness we had for them; but from an artifice to preserve episcopacy: so they were made believe, that their agreeing to them was really a strengthening of that government, which was otherwise ready to fall with its own weight; and because a passage of Scripture, according to its general sound, was apt to work much on them, that of "touch not, taste not, handle not," was often repeated among them. It was generally agreed on to reject the offers made them. The next debate among them was, about the reasons they were to give for rejecting them; or whether they would comply with another proposition which Leightoun had made them: that if they did not like the propositions he had made, they would see, if they could be more happy than he was, and offer at other propositions. In their meetings they named two to maintain the debate, *pro* and *con*. They disputed about the protestation that they were allowed to make: and *protestatio contraria facto*, was a maxim that was in great vogue among them. They argued upon the obligation by the covenant to maintain their church, as then established, in doctrine, worship, discipline, and government; and so every thing that was contrary to that, was represented as a breach of their covenant; and none durst object to that: but that they might make a proposition which they were sure would not be hearkened to, they proposed, that among the concessions to be insisted on, one might be, a liberty to ordain without the bishops. When we heard what their reasonings were, papers were writ, and sent among them, in answer to them: but it is a vain thing to argue, when a

resolution is taken up, not founded on argument, and arguments are only sought for to justify that which is already resolved on: we pressed them with this, that, notwithstanding their covenant, they themselves had afterwards made many alterations, much more important than this, of submitting to a constant moderator, named by the King. Cromwell took from them the power of meeting in general assemblies; yet they went on, doing the other duties of their function; though this, which they esteemed the greatest of all their rights, was denied them. When an order came out to sequester the half of the benefices, of such as should still pray for the King, they upon that submitted, though before they had asserted it as a duty, to which they were bound by their covenant: they had discontinued their ministry, in obedience to laws and proclamations now for nine years; and those who had accepted the indulgence, had come in by the King's authority, and had only a parochial government, but did not meet in presbyteries: from all which we inferred, that when they had a mind to lay down any thing that they thought a duty, or to submit to any thing that they thought an invasion of their rights, they could find a distinction for it: and it was not easy to shew why they were not as compliant in this particular: but all was lost labour. Hot men among them were positive; and all of them were full of contention. 1670.

Dutchess Hamilton sent for some of them, Hutcheson in particular. She said she did not pretend to understand nice distinctions, and the terms of dispute: here was plain sense: the country might be again at quiet, and the rest of those that were outed admitted to churches on terms that seemed to all reasonable men very easy: their rejecting this would give a very ill character of them, and would have very bad effects, of which they might see cause to repent when it would be too late. She told me, all that she could draw from him that she understood was, that he saw the generality of their party was resolved against all treaties or any agreement; and that if a small number should break off from them, it would not heal the old breaches, but would create new ones. In conclusion, nothing was like to follow on this whole negotiation; we who were engaged in it, had lost all our own side by offering at it, and the presbyterians would not make one step towards us.

1670.

Some conferences upon that subject.

Leightoun desired another meeting with them at Paisley to which he carried me and one or two more. They were about thirty. We had two long conferences with them. Leightoun laid out before them the obligations that lay on them to seek for peace at all times, but more especially when we already saw the dismal effects of our contentions: there could be no agreement, unless on both sides there was a disposition to make some abatements and some steps towards one another: it appeared that we were willing to make even unreasonable ones on our side—and would they abate nothing in theirs? Was their opinion so mathematically certain, that they could not dispense with any part of it, for the peace of the church and for the saving of souls? Many poor things were said on their side, which would have made a less mild man than he was lose all patience: but he bore with all, and urged this question on them, Would they have held communion with the church of God at the time of the council of Nice, or not? If they should say not, he would be less desirous of entering into communion with them, since he must say of the church at that time, "Let my soul be with theirs:" if they said they would, then he was sure they would not reject the offers now made them, which brought episcopacy much lower than it was at that time. One of the most learned among them had prepared a speech full of quotations, to prove the difference between the primitive episcopacy and ours at present. I was then full of those matters; so I answered all his speech, and every one of his quotations, and turned the whole upon him, with advantages that were too evident to be so much as denied by their own party; and it seemed the person himself thought so, for he did not offer at one word of reply. In conclusion, the presbyterians desired that the propositions might be given them in writing; for hitherto all had passed only verbally, and words they said might be misunderstood, misrepeated, and denied. Leightoun had no mind to do it; yet since it was plausible, to say they had nothing but words to shew to their brethren, he wrote them down, and gave me the original, which I still have in my hands, but suffered them to take as many copies of it as they pleased. At parting he desired them to come to a final resolution as soon as they could, for he believed they would be called for by the next January to

give their answers: and by the end of that month they were ordered to come to Edinburgh. I went thither at the same time upon Leightoun's desire. 1670.

We met at the Earl of Rothes' house, where all this treaty came to a short conclusion. Hutcheson in all their names said, they had considered the propositions made to them, but were not satisfied in their consciences to accept of them. Leightoun desired to know upon what grounds they stood out. Hutcheson said it was not safe to argue against law. Leightoun said, that since the government had set on a treaty with them in order to the altering the laws, they were certainly left to a full freedom of arguing against them: these offers were no laws; so the arguing about them could not be called an arguing against law: he offered them a public conference upon them, in the hearing of all that had a mind to be rightly informed: he said the people were drawn into those matters so far as to make a schism upon them: he thought it was therefore very reasonable that they should likewise hear the grounds examined upon which both sides went. Hutcheson refused this: he said he was but one man, and that what he said was in the name of his brethren, who had given him no farther authority. Leightoun then asked if they had nothing on their side to propose towards the healing of our breaches. Hutcheson answered, their principles were well enough known, but he had nothing to propose. Upon this Leightoun, in a long discourse, told what was the design he had been driving at in all this negotiation: it was to procure peace and to promote religion: he had offered several things, which he was persuaded were great diminutions of the just rights of episcopacy: yet since all church power was for edification, and not for destruction, he had thought that in our present circumstances it might have conduced as much to the interest of religion, that episcopacy should divest itself of a great part of the authority that belonged to it, as the bishops' using it in former ages had been an advantage to religion: his offers did not flow from any mistrust of the cause: he was persuaded episcopacy was handed down through all the ages of the church from the apostles' days: perhaps he had wronged the order by the concessions he had made: yet he was confident God would forgive it, as he hoped his brethren would excuse it: now they thought

At last they refused to accept of the concessions.

1670.

fit to reject these concessions, without either offering any reason for doing it, or any expedient on their side: therefore the continuance of our divisions must lie at their door, both before God and man: if ill effects followed upon this, he was free from all blame and had done his part. Thus was this treaty broke off, to the amazement of all sober and dispassionate people, and to the great joy of Sharp and the rest of the bishops, who now for a while seemed even pleased with us, because we had all along asserted episcopacy, and had pleaded for it in a high and positive strain.

Censures passed upon this whole matter.

I hope this will be thought an useful part of the history of that time: none knew the steps made in it better than myself. The fierce episcopal men will see how much they were to blame for accusing that apostolical man Leightoun as they did on this occasion, as if he had designed in this whole matter to betray his own order, and to set up presbytery. The presbyterians may also see how much their behaviour disgusted all wise, moderate, and good men, when they rejected propositions that came so home even to the maxims they had set up, that nothing but the fear of offending, that is of losing the credit they had with their party, could be so much as pretended for their refusing to agree to them. Our part in the whole negotiation was sincere and open. We were actuated by no other principle, and had no other design, but to allay a violent agitation of men's spirits that was throwing us into great distractions, and to heal a breach that was like to let in an inundation of miseries upon us, as has appeared but too evidently ever since. The high party, keeping still their old bias to persecution, and recovering afterwards their credit with the government, carried violent proceedings so far, that after they had thrown the nation into great convulsions, they drew upon themselves such a degree of fury from enraged multitudes, whom they had oppressed long and heavily, that in conclusion the episcopal order was put down, as shall be told in its proper place. The roughness of our own side, and the perverseness of the presbyterians, did so much alienate me from both, that I resolved to withdraw myself from any farther meddling, and to give myself wholly to study. I was then, and for three years after that, offered to be made a bishop; but I refused it. I saw the

counsels were altering above; so I resolved to look on, and see whither things would turn. 1671.

My acquaintance at Hamilton, and the favour and friendship I met with from both the Duke and Dutchess, made me offer my service to them, in order to the search of many papers, that were very carefully preserved by them, for the Dutchess's uncle had charged her to keep them with the same care, as she kept the writings of her estate; since in these a full justification of her father's public actings, and of his own, would be found, when she should put them in the hands of one, that could set them in order, and in a due light: she put them all in my hands, which I acknowledge was a very great trust, and I made no ill use of it. I found there materials for a very large history: I writ it with great sincerity, and concealed none of their errors: I did indeed conceal several things that related to the King; I left out some passages that were in his letters, in some of which was too much weakness, and in others too much craft and anger: I got through that work in a few months. When the Earl of Lauderdale heard that I had finished it, he desired me to come up to him; for he was sure, he could both rectify many things, and enlarge on a great many more. His true design was, to engage me to put in a great deal, relating to himself in that work. I found another degree of kindness and confidence from him upon my coming up, than ever before: I had nothing to ask for myself, but to be excused from the offer of two bishoprics: but whatsoever I asked for any other person was granted, and I was considered as his favourite: he trusted me with all his secrets, and seemed to have no reserves with me: he indeed pressed me to give up with Sir Robert Murray, and I saw, that upon my doing that, I should have as much credit with him as I could desire. Sir Robert, himself, apprehended this would be put to me, and pressed me to comply with him in it: but I hated servitude, as much as I loved him, so I refused it flatly. I told Lord Lauderdale, that Sir Robert had been as a second father, or governor to me, and therefore I could not break friendship with him: but I promised to speak to him of nothing that he trusted to me; and this was all that ever he could bring me to, though he put it often to me: I was treated by him with an entire confidence. Applications were made to me, and every thing that I proposed was

The Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton was writ by me at that time.

1671. done. I laid before him the ill state the affairs of Scotland were falling into, by his throwing off so many of his friends. Duke Hamilton and he had been for some years in ill terms: I laid down a method for bringing them to a better understanding: I got kind letters to pass on both sides, and put their reconciliation in so fair a way, that upon my return to Scotland it was for that time fully made up. I had authority from him totry, how both the Earls of Argyle, and Tweedale, might return to their old friendship with him. The Earl of Argyle was ready to do every thing; but the Earl of Athol had proposed a match between his son and Lady Dysert's daughter, and he had an hereditary hatred to the Lord Argile and his family, so that could not be easily brought about. Lord Tweedale was resolved to withdraw from business. The Earl of Lauderdale had for many years treated his brother, the Lord Halton, with as much contempt as he deserved, for he was both weak and violent, insolent and corrupt. He had promised to settle his estate on his daughter, when the Lord Tweedale's son married her: but his brother offered now every thing that Lady Dysert desired, provided she would get his brother to settle his estate on him. So Lord Halton was now taken into affairs, and had so much credit with his brother, that all the dependance was upon him: and thus the breach between the Earls of Lauderdale and Tweedale was irreconcileable, though I did all I could to make it up.

A farther indulgence proposed.

As to church affairs, Lord Lauderdale asked my opinion concerning them. I gave it frankly to this purpose: there were many vacancies in the disaffected counties, to which no conformable men of any worth could be prevailed on to go: so I proposed, that the indulgence should be extended to them all, and that the ministers should be put into those parishes by couples, and have the benefice divided between them; and, in the churches, where the indulgence had already taken place, that a second minister should be added, and have the half of the benefice: by this means I reckoned, that all the outed ministers would be again employed, and kept from going round the uninfected parts of the kingdom: I also proposed that they should be confined to their parishes, not to stir out of them without leave from the bishop of the diocese, or a privy counsellor, and that, upon transgressing the rules that should be sent them, a

proportion of their benefice should be forfeited, and applied to some pious use. Lord Lauderdale heard me to an end; and then, without arguing one word upon any one branch of this scheme, he desired me to put it in writing, which I did: and the next year, when he came down again to Scotland, he made one write out my paper, and turned it into the style of instructions. So easily did he let himself be governed by those whom he trusted, even in matters of great consequence. Four bishops happened to die that year, of which Edinburgh was one. I was desired to make my own choice, but I refused them all: yet I obtained a letter to be writ, by the King's order, to Lord Rothes, that he should call the two archbishops, and four of the officers of state, and send up their opinion to the King of the persons fit to be promoted, and a private letter was writ to the Lords, to join with Leightoun in recommending the persons that he should name. Leightoun was uneasy, when he found that Charteris, and Nairn, as well as myself, could not be prevailed on to accept bishoprics. They had an ill opinion of the court, and could not be brought to leave their retirement. Leightoun was troubled at this: he said, if his friends left the whole load on him, he must leave all to Providence: yet he named the best men he could think on: and, that Sharp might not have too public an affront put on him, Leightoun agreed to one of his nomination; but now I go to open a scene of another nature. 1671.

Foreign affairs.

The court was now going into other measures: the parliament had given the King all the money he had asked for repairing his fleet, and for supplying his stores and magazines. Additional revenues were also given for some years: but at their last sitting, in the beginning of the year 1670, it appeared that the House of Commons were out of countenance for having given so much money, and seemed resolved to give no more: all was obtained under the pretence of maintaining the triple alliance. When the court saw how little reason they had to expect farther supplies, the Duke of Buckingham told the King, that now the time was come, in which he might both revenge the attempt on Chatham, and shake off the uneasy restraint of a House of Commons: and he got leave from the King to send over Sir Ellis Leightoun to the court of France, to offer the project of a new alliance and a new war. Sir Ellis told me this himself, and was

An alliance with France set on foot.

1671. proud to think, that he was the first man employed in those black and fatal designs: but, in the first proposition made by us, the subduing of England, and the toleration of popery, here was offered, as that with which the design must be begun. France, seeing England so inclined, resolved to push the matter farther.

The Dutchess of Orleans came to Dover.

The King's sister, the Dutchess of Orleans, was thought the wittiest woman in France: the King of France had made love to her, with which she was highly incensed, when she saw it was only a pretence, to cover his addresses to Mademoiselle La Valiere, one of her maids of honour, whom he afterwards declared openly to be his mistress; yet she had reconciled herself to the King, and was now so entirely trusted by him, that he ordered her to propose an interview with her brother at Dover. The King went thither, and was so charmed with his sister, that every thing she proposed, and every favour she asked, was granted: the King could deny her nothing. She proposed an alliance, in order to the conquest of Holland; the King had a mind to have begun at home, but she diverted him from that. It could not be foreseen what difficulties the King might meet with, upon the first opening of the design; as it would alarm all his people, so it would send a great deal of wealth and trade, and perhaps much people over to Holland; and by such an accession they would grow stronger, as he would grow weaker. So she proposed that they should begin with Holland, and attack it vigorously both by sea and land; and upon their success in that, all the rest would be an easy work. This account of that negotiation was printed twelve years after, at Paris, by one Abbot Primi. I had that part of the book in my hands, in which this was contained. Lord Preston was then the King's envoy at Paris; so he, knowing how great a prejudice the publishing this would be to his master's affairs, complained of it. The book was upon that suppressed, and the writer was put in the Bastile; but he had drawn it out of the papers of Mr. Le Tellier's office, so there is little reason to doubt of the truth of the thing. Madame, as this book says, prevailed to have her scheme settled, and so went back to France. The journey proved fatal to her, for the Duke of Orleans had heard such things of her behaviour, that it was said he ordered a great dose of sublimate to be

given her, in a glass of succory-water, of which she died a few hours after in great torments; and, when she was opened, her stomach was all ulcerated. 1671. Soon after poisoned.

Since I mention her death, I will set down one story of her, that was told me by a person of distinction, who had it from some who were well informed of the matter. The King of France had courted Madame Soissons, and made a shew of courting Madame. But his affections fixing on Mademoiselle La Valiere, she whom he had forsaken, as well as she whom he had deceived, resolved to be revenged, and they entered into a friendship in order to that. They had each of them a gallant; Madame had the Count De Guiche, and the other had the Marquis Des Vardes, then in great favour with the King, and a very graceful person. When the treaty of the King of France's marriage was set on foot, there was an opinion generally received, that the Infanta of Spain was a woman of great genius, and would have a considerable stroke in all affairs. So many young men of quality set themselves to learn the Spanish language, to give them the more credit with the young queen. All that fell to the ground, when it appeared how weak a woman she was. These two were of that number: Count De Guiche watched an occasion, when a letter from the King of Spain was given to his daughter by the Spanish ambassador, and she tore the envelope, and let it fall. He gathered up all the parcels of it, together with the seal. From these they learned to imitate the King of Spain's writing; and they sent to Holland to get a seal engraven from the impression of the wax. When all was prepared, a letter was writ, as in the name of the King of Spain, reproaching his daughter for her tameness in suffering such an affront, as the King put on her by his amours, with reflections full both of contempt and anger against the King. There was one Spanish lady left about the Queen; so they forged another letter, as from the Spanish ambassador to her, with that to the Queen enclosed in it, desiring her to deliver it secretly into the Queen's own hand: and they made a livery, such as the Spanish ambassador's pages wore, and a boy was sent in it with the letter. The lady suspected no forgery, but fancied the letter might be about some matter of state: she thought it safest to carry it to the King, who reading it, ordered an inquiry to be made

Some of her intrigues.

Some of the intrigues.

1671. about it. The Spanish ambassador saw he was abused in it. The King spoke to the Marquis Des Vardes, not suspecting that he was in it, and charged him to search after the author of this abuse, that was intended to be put on him. The two ladies now rejoiced, that the looking after the discovery was put in the hands of a man so much concerned in it. He amused the King with the inquiries that he was making, though he was ever in the wrong scent. But in all this time Madame was so pleased with his conduct, that she came to like his person, and had so little command of herself, that she told Madame Soissons she was her rival. The other readily complied with her; and, by an odd piece of extravagance, he was sent for: and Madame Soissons told him, since he was in Madame's favour, she released him from all obligations, and delivered him over to her. The Marquis Des Vardes thought this was only an artifice of gallantry, to try how faithful he was to his amours: so he declared himself incapable of changing, in terms full of respect for Madame, and of passion for the other. This raised in Madame so deep a resentment, that she resolved to sacrifice Des Vardes, but to save the Count De Guiche. So she gave him notice, that the King had discovered the whole intrigue, and charged him to hasten out of France: and, as soon as she believed that he was in Flanders, she told all to the King of France. Upon which Des Vardes was not only disgraced, but kept long a prisoner in Aigues Mortes; and afterwards he was suffered to come to Montpelier. And it was almost twenty years after, before he was suffered to come to court: I was at court when he first came to it. He was much broke in his health, but was become a philosopher, and was in great reputation among all Des Cartes' followers. Madame had an intrigue with another person, whom I knew well, the Count of Treville. When she was in her agony, she said, "Adieu Treville." He was so struck with this accident, that it had a good effect on him; for he went and lived many years among the fathers of the oratory, and became both a very learned and devout man. He came afterwards out into the world; I saw him often: he was a man of a very sweet temper, only a little too formal for a Frenchman; but he was very sincere. He was a Jansenist; he hated the Jesuits, and had a very mean opinion of the

King, which appeared in all the instances in which it was safe for him to shew it. 1671.

Upon Madame's death, as the Marshal Bellefonds came from France with the compliment to the court of England, so the Duke of Buckingham was sent thither to return the compliment, but really to finish the treaty. The King of France used him in so particular a manner, knowing his vanity, and caressed him to such a degree, that he went without reserve into the interests of France. Yet he protested to me, that he never consented to the French fleet's coming into our seas and harbours. He said, he was offered 40,000*l.* if he could persuade the King to yield to it, and he appealed to the Earl of Dorset for this, who was in the secret. He therefore concluded, since, after all the uneasiness shewed at first, the King had yielded to it, that Lord Arlington had the money. Lord Shaftesbury laid the blame of this chiefly on the Duke of Buckingham; for he told me, that he himself had writ a peremptory instruction to him from the King, to give up all treaty, if the French did insist on the sending a fleet to our assistance. And therefore he blamed him, as having yielded it up, since he ought to have broke off all farther treaty, upon their insisting on this. But the Duke of York told me, there was no money given to corrupt the King's ministers; that the King and he had long insisted on having all their supplies from France in money, without a fleet; and that the French shewed them it was not possible for them to find out funds for so great an expense, unless we took a squadron of their ships; since they could not both maintain their own fleet, and furnish us with money that would be necessary, if we took not their squadron. It was agreed that the King should have 350,000*l.* a year during the war, together with a fleet from France. England was to attack the Dutch by sea, while the King of France should invade them by land with a mighty army. It was not doubted, but that the states would find it impossible to resist so great a force, and would therefore submit to the two kings: so the division they agreed on was, that England should have Zealand, and that the King of France should have all the rest, except Holland, which was to be given to the Prince of Orange, if he would come into the alliance; and it should be still a trading country, but without any capital ships.

The treaty with France negotiated.

1671. Lord Lauderdale said upon that occasion to me, that whatsoever they intended to do, they were resolved to do it effectually all at once; but he would not go into farther particulars. That the year 1672 might be fatal to other commonwealths as well as to the states, the Duke of Savoy was encouraged to make a conquest of Genoa; though he afterwards failed in the attempt, and the King of Denmark was invited into the alliance, with the offer of the town of Hamburgh, on which he had long set his heart. The Duke of Richmond was sent to give a lustre to that negotiation, which was chiefly managed by Mr. Henshaw; who told me, that we offered that King some ships to assist him in seizing that rich town: but he was then in those engagements with the states of Holland, that even this offer did not prevail on him.

Lockhart sent to France.

Lockhart was at this time brought to court by Lord Lauderdale, hoping that he would continue in an entire dependance on them, and be his creature. He was under so great a jealousy from the government for his former actings, that he was too easy to enter into any employment that might bring him into favour, not so much out of any ambition to rise, as from a desire to be safe, and to be no longer looked on as an enemy to the court: for when a foreign minister asked the King's leave to treat with him in his master's name, the King consented; but with this severe reflection, that he believed he would be true to any body but himself. He was sent to the courts of Brandenburgh and Lunenburgh, either to draw them into the alliance, or, if that could not be done, at least to secure them from all apprehensions: but in this he had no success; and, indeed, when he saw into what a negotiation he was engaged, he became very uneasy; for though the blackest part of the secret was not trusted to him, as appeared to me by his instructions, which I read after his death: yet he saw whither things were going; and that affected him so deeply, that it was believed to have contributed not a little to the languishing he soon fell under, which ended in his death two years after.

Pretended reasons for the Dutch war.

The war being thus resolved on, some pretences were in the next place to be sought out to excuse it; for though the King of France went more roundly to work, and published that he was so ill satisfied with the conduct of the

states, that it did not consist with his glory to bear it any longer; yet we thought it decent for us to name some particulars. It was said, we had some pretensions on Surinam, not yet completely satisfied: and that the states harboured traitors, that fled from justice, and lived in Holland. Some medals were complained of, that seemed dishonourable to the King; as also some pictures; and, though these were not made by public order, yet a great noise was raised about them. But an accident happened, that the court laid great hold of. The Dutch fleet lay off the coast of England the former year; and one of the King's yachts sailed by, and expected they should strike sail: they said, they never refused it to any man of war; but they thought that honour did not belong to such an inconsiderable vessel. I was then at court, and I saw joy in the looks of those that were in the secret. Selden had, in his *Mare Clausum*, raised this matter so high, that he made it one of the chief rights and honours of the crown of England, as the acknowledgment of the King's empire in the four seas. The Dutch offered all satisfaction for the future in this matter; but they would not send their admiral over as a criminal. While France was treating with England, they continued to amuse the Dutch; and they so possessed De Groot, then the Dutch ambassador at Paris, or they corrupted him into a belief, that they had no design on them; and the Dutch were too secure, and depended too much on his advertisements. Yet the states entered into a negotiation, both with Spain and the Emperor, and with the King of Denmark, the Elector of Brandenburgh, and the Duke of Lunenburgh. The King of Sweden was yet under age; and the ministry there desired a neutrality. France and England sent two ambassadors to them, both men of great probity (Pomponne and Coventry), who were both recalled, at the same time, to be secretaries of state. Coventry was a man of wit and heat; of spirit and candour: he never gave bad advice; but when the King followed the ill advice that others gave, he thought himself bound to excuse, if not to justify them: for this the Duke of York commended him much to me. He said, in that he was a pattern to all good subjects, since he defended all the King's counsels in public, even when he had blamed them most in private, with the King himself.

1671.

1672.

The shutting up of the Exchequer.

Our court having resolved on a war, did now look out for money to carry it on. The King had been running into a great debt ever since his restoration. One branch of it was for the pay of that fleet that brought him over. The main of it had been contracted during the former Dutch war. The King, in order to the keeping his credit, had dealt with some bankers, and had assigned over the revenue to them. They drove a great trade, and had made great advantage by it. The King paid them at the rate of eight per cent: and they paid those who put money in their hands only six per cent, and had great credit: for payments were made very punctually. The King had in some proclamations given his faith, that he would continue to make good all his assignments, till the whole debt should be paid, which was now growing up to almost a million and a half. So one of the ways proposed for supplying the King with money was, that he should stop these payments for a year; it being thought certain, that by the end of the year the King would be out of all his necessities, by the hopes they had of success in the war. The Earl of Shaftsbury was the chief man in this advice. He excused it to me, telling me what advantage the bankers had made, and how just it was for the King to bring them to an account, for their usury and extortions; and added, that he never meant the stop should run beyond the year. He certainly knew of it beforehand; and took all his own money out of the bankers' hands, and warned some of his friends to do the like. Lord Lauderdale did about this time marry Lady Dysert, upon his own lady's death: and she writ me a long account of the shutting up of the Exchequer, as both just and necessary. The bankers were broke; and great multitudes, who had trusted their money in their hands, were ruined by this dishonourable and perfidious action. But this gave the King only his own revenue again; so other ways were to be found for an increase of treasure.

The attempt on the Dutch Smyrna fleet.

By the peace of Breda it was provided, that in order to the security of trade, no merchant's ships should be for the future fallen on, till six months after a declaration of war. The Dutch had a rich fleet coming from Smyrna, and other parts of the Mediterranean, under the convoy of a few men of war. Our court had advice of this; and Holmes was ordered to lie in wait for them, and to take them near the

Isle of Wight with eight men of war. As he was sailing thither he met Spragge, who was returning from the Straits with a squadron of our ships; and told him, that he had sailed along with the Dutch most of the way, and that they would pass within a day or two. Holmes thought he was much too strong for them, so did not acquaint Spragge with his design; for, if he had stopped him to assist in the execution, probably the whole fleet had been taken, which was reckoned worth a million and a half. When they came up, Holmes fell upon them; but their convoy did their part so well, that not only the whole fleet sailed away, while they kept him in play, but they themselves got off at last favoured by a mist: and there were only a few ships taken, of so small a value, that they were not worth the powder that was spent in the action. This was a breach of faith, such as even Mahometans and pirates would have been ashamed of. The unsuccessfulness of it, made it appear as ridiculous as it was base. Holmes was pressed to put it on the Dutch refusing to strike sail: yet that was so false, and there were so many witnesses to it, that he had not the impudence to affirm it. 1672.

A declaration for toleration.

To crown all, a declaration was ordered to be set out, suspending the execution of all penal laws, both against papists and nonconformists. Papists were no more to be prosecuted for their way of worship in their own houses, and the nonconformists were allowed to have open meeting houses; for which they were to take out licences, and none were to disturb those who should meet for worship, by virtue of those licences. Lord Keeper Bridgman had lost all credit at court: so they were seeking an occasion to be rid of him who had indeed lost all the reputation he had formerly acquired, by his being advanced to a post of which he was not capable. He refused to put the seal to the declaration, as judging it contrary to law; so he was dismissed, and the Earl of Shaftsbury was made lord chancellor. Lord Clifford was made lord treasurer; Lord Arlington and Lord Lauderdale had both of them the garter: and as Arlington was made an earl, Lauderdale was made a duke; and this junto, together with the Duke of Buckingham, being called the cabal, it was observed, that cabal proved a technical word, every letter in it being the first letter of those five,—Clifford, Ashly, Buckingham, Arlington, and

1672. Lauderdale. They had all of them great presents from France, besides what was openly given them; for the French ambassador gave them all a picture of the King of France, set in diamonds, to the value of 3,000*l.* Thus was the nation, and our religion, as well as the King's faith and honour, set to sale, and sold. Lord Shaftsbury resolved to recommend himself to the confidence of the court by a new strain, never before thought of. He said, the writs for choosing the members of the House of Commons might be issued out in the intervals of a session; and the elections made upon them were to be returned into chancery, and settled there. So the writs were issued out; but whether any elections were made upon them, and returned, I cannot tell. I know the House of Commons intended to have impeached him, for this among other things; but he had the foresight and skill to prevent it. When the declaration for toleration was published, great endeavours were used by the court, to persuade the nonconformists to make addresses and compliments upon it: but few were so blind as not to see what was aimed at by it.

The presbyterians gave the King thanks for the toleration.

The Duke was now known to be a papist; and the Dutchess was much suspected: yet the presbyterians came in a body; and Dr. Manton, in their name, thanked the King for it, which offended many of their best friends. There was also an order, to pay a yearly pension of 50*l.* to most of them, and of 100*l.* a year to the chief party. Baxter sent back his pension, and would not touch it; but most of them took it. All this I saw upon Dr. Stillingfleet's word, who assured me, he knew the truth of it: and, in particular, he told me, that Pool, who wrote the "Synopsis of the Critics," confessed to him, that he had 50*l.* for two years. Thus the court hired them to be silent, and the greatest part of them were so, and very compliant. But now the pulpits were full of a new strain: popery was every where preached against, and the authority of the laws was much magnified. The bishops, the Bishop of London in particular, charged the clergy to preach against popery, and to inform the people of the controversy between us and the church of Rome. This alarmed the court, as well as the city, and the whole nation. Clifford began to shew the heat of his temper, and seemed a sort of enthusiast for popery. The King complained to Sheldon of this preaching on controversy, as

done on purpose to inflame the people, and to alienate them from him and his government. Upon this, Sheldon called some of the clergy together, to consider what answer he should make the King, if he pressed him any farther on that head. Tillotson was one of these; and he suggested this answer, that since the King himself professed the protestant religion, it would be a thing without a precedent, that he should forbid his clergy to preach in defence of a religion which they believed, while he himself said he was of it. But the King never renewed the motion. 1672.

The Dutchess of York died.

While things were in this fermentation the Duchess of York died. It was observed, that for fifteen months before that time she had not received the sacrament; and that upon all occasions she was excusing the errors that the church of Rome was charged with, and was giving them the best colours they were capable of. An unmarried clergy was also a common topic with her. Morley had been her father confessor: for he told me she practised her secret confession to him from the time that she was twelve years old; and when he was sent away from the court he put her in the hands of Blandford, who died Bishop of Worcester. Morley also told me, that, upon the reports that were brought him of her slackness in receiving the sacrament, she having been, for many years, punctual to once a month, he had spoken plainly to her about it, and told her what inferences were made upon it, she pretended ill health and business: but protested to him she had no scruples with relation to her religion, and was still of the church of England; and assured him, that no popish priest had ever taken the confidence to speak to her of those matters. He took a solemn engagement of her, that if scruples should arise in her mind she would let him know them, and hear what he should offer to her upon all of them. And he protested to me, that to her death she never owned to him that she had any scruples, though she was for some days entertained by him at Farnham, after the date of the paper which was afterwards published in her name. All this passed between the bishop and me, upon the Duke's shewing me that paper, all writ in her own hand, which was afterwards published by Maimburg. He would not let me take a copy of it; but he gave me leave to read it twice; and I went immediately to Morley, and gave him an account of it: from whom I had

1672. all the particulars already mentioned; and upon that he concluded, that that unhappy princess had been prevailed on to give false words under her hand, and to pretend tha these were the grounds of her conversion. A long decay of health came at last to a quicker crisis than had been apprehended. All on a sudden she fell into the agony of death. Blandford was sent for to prepare her for it, and to offer her the sacrament; before he could come the Queen came in and sat by her. He was modest and humble even to a fault; so he had not presence of mind enough to begin prayers, which probably would have driven the Queen out of the room; but that not being done, she pretending kindness would not leave her. The bishop spoke but little and fearfully. He happened to say he hoped she continued still in the truth: upon which she asked, What is truth? and then, her agony increasing, she repeated the word truth truth often; and in a few minutes after she died, very little beloved or lamented. Her haughtiness had raised her many enemies. She was indeed a firm and a kind friend; but the change of her religion made her friends reckon her death rather a blessing than a loss at that time to them all. Her father, when he heard of her shaking in her religion, was more troubled at it than at all his own misfortunes. He writ her a very grave and long letter upon it, inclosed in one to the Duke; but she was dead before it came into England. I have set down all that I know concerning the fatal alliance with France, and our preparations for the second Dutch war.

But that I may open the scene more distinctly, I will give as particular an account as I was able to gather, of the affairs of the states of Holland at this time; and because this was the fifth great crisis under which the whole protestant religion was brought, I will lead my reader through a full account of them all; since I may probably lay things before him, that he may otherwise pass over without making due reflections on them.

The first crisis of the protestant religion.

The first crisis was, when Charles V. by the defeating the Duke of Saxony, and the getting him and the Landgrave of Hesse into his hands, had subdued the Smalcaldic league; in which the strength of the protestant religion did then consist, having been weakened by the succeeding deaths of Henry VIII. and Francis I. Upon that defeat all submit-

ted to the Emperor: only the town of Magdeburgh stood out. The Emperor should either not have trusted Maurice, or have used him better; and it seems that he reckoned Maurice had neither religion nor honour, since his ambition had made him betray his religion, and abandon his party. When Maurice had got the electorate, he made himself sure of the army; and entered into an alliance with France, and other princes of the empire; and made so quick a turn on the Emperor, that he had almost surprised him at Inchspruck, and of a sudden overturned all that design, upon which the Emperor had been labouring for many years. This ended in the edict of Passau, which settled the peace of Germany for that time. 1672.

The second crisis was, towards the end of Queen Mary's reign, when the protestant religion seemed extinguished in England; and the two Cardinals of Lorrain and Granvell, then the chief ministers of the two crowns, designed a peace for that very end, that their masters might be at leisure to extirpate heresy, which was then spreading in both their dominions; but after they had formed their scheme Queen Mary died, and was succeeded by Queen Elizabeth in England. Soon after that the King of France was accidentally killed; so that kingdom fell under a long continuance of a minority, and a civil war; and the Netherlands felt from thence, and from England, such encouragement, that they made the longest and bravest resistance that is to be found in all history; which was in a great measure owing to the obstinate and implacable cruelty of Philip II. and his great distance from the scene of war; and was past all possibility of being made up by reason of his perfidious breach of all agreements, and his using those that served him well in so base a manner, as he did both the Duke of Alva, and the Prince of Parma. The second crisis.

The third crisis lasted from 1585 to the year 1589: then began the league of France. The Prince of Parma was victorious in the Netherlands. The Prince of Orange was murdered. The states fell under great distractions: and Spain entered into a design of dethroning the Queen of England, and putting the Queen of Scots in her stead; in order to that they were for some years preparing the greatest fleet that the world had ever seen, which came to be called the Invincible Armada. All Europe was amazed at The third crisis.

1672. these great preparations; and many conjectures were made concerning the design of such a vast fleet. Some thought of Constantinople: others talked of Ægypt, in conjunction with the Emperor of the Abissynes: but that which was most probable was, that King Philip intended to make a great effort, and put an end to the war of the Netherlands in one campaign. At last the true intent of it was found out: Walsingham's chief spies were priests; and he used always to say, an active but vicious priest was the best spy in the world. By one of these he had advice, that the King of Spain had fixed on a resolution with relation to his fleet; but that it was not yet communicated to any of his ministers in foreign courts. The King himself had indeed writ a letter about it to the Pope; but it was not entered in any office: so this was all that the intelligence from Madrid could discover: upon this one was sent to Venice, from whence the correspondence with Rome was held; and at Rome it was found out, that one of the Pope's chief confidents had a mistress, to whom twenty thousand crowns were given, for a sight and copy of that letter. The copy of it was sent over soon after Christmas, in the winter 1586; by it the King of Spain had acquainted the Pope that the design of his fleet was to land in England, to destroy Queen Elizabeth and heresy, and to set the Queen of Scots on the throne: in this he had the concurrence of the house of Guise; and he also depended on the King of Scotland: this proved fatal to the Queen of Scots. It is true King James sent one Steward, the ancestor of the Lord Blantyre, who was then of his bed-chamber, with an earnest and threatening message to Queen Elizabeth for saving his mother; but in one of the intercepted letters of the French ambassador's, then in Scotland, found among Walsingham's papers, it appears, that the King, young as he was then, was either very double, or very inconstant in his resolutions. The French ambassador assured him, that Steward had advised the Queen to put a speedy end to that business which way she pleased; and that as for his master's anger, he would soon be pacified, if she would but send him dogs and deer. The King was so offended at this, that he said he would hang him up in his boots as soon as he came back: yet when he came back, it was so far from that, that he lay all that night in the bed-chamber.

As for the pompous embassy that was sent from France to protest against it, Maurier has told a very probable story of Henry III. writing a letter with them to the Queen, advising her to proceed with all haste to do that which the embassy was sent to prevent. He saw the house of Guise built a great part of their hopes on the prospect of their cousin's coming to the crown of England, which would cut off all the hopes the house of Bourbon had of assistance from thence. I have seen an original letter of the Earl of Leicester's to the Earl of Bedford, who had married his sister, and was then Governor of Berwick, telling him, that how high soever the French ambassadors had talked in their harangues upon that occasion, calling any proceeding against the Queen of Scots an open indignity as well as an act of hostility against France, since she was Queen Dowager of France; yet all this was only matter of form and decency that was extorted from the King of France; and, how high soever they might talk, they were well assured he would do nothing upon it: so that unfortunate Queen fell at that time by reason of the Spanish preparations to conquer England, under the pretence of setting her on the throne. She died much more decently than she had lived, in February, 1587. 1672.

The Spanish fleet came not as at first intended.

But the court of England saw, that if King Philip's fleet was in a condition to conquer England, he would not abandon the design for her being put out of the way; and that he certainly intended to conquer it for himself, and not for another: so orders were given to make all possible haste with a fleet: yet they were so little provided for such an invasion, that though they had then twenty good ships upon the stocks, it was not possible to get them in a condition to serve that summer; and the design of Spain was to sail over in 1587: so, unless by corruption, or any other method, the attempt could be put off for that year, there was no strength ready to resist so powerful a fleet; but when it seemed not possible to divert the present execution of so great a design, a merchant of London, to their surprise, undertook it: he was well acquainted with the state of the revenue of Spain, with all their charge, and all that they could raise. He knew all their funds were so swallowed up, that it was impossible for them to victual and set out their fleet, but by their credit in the bank of

1672. Genoa: so he undertook to write to all the places of trade, and to get such draughts made on that bank, that he should by that means have it so entirely in his hands, that there should be no money current there, equal to the great occasion of victualling the fleet of Spain. He reckoned the keeping such a treasure dead in his hands, till the season of victualling was over, would be a loss of 40,000*l.*; and at that rate he would save England. He managed the matter with such secrecy and success, that the fleet could not be set out that year. At so small a price, and with so skilful a management, was the nation saved at that time: this it seems was thought too great a mystery of state to be communicated to Camden, or to be published by him, when the instructions were put in his hands for writing the history of that glorious reign; but the famous Boyle, Earl of Cork, who had then a great share in the affairs of Ireland, came to know it; and told it to two of his children, from whom I had it. The story is so coherent, and agrees so well with the state of affairs at that time, that it seems highly credible; and, if it is true, it is certainly one of the curiousest passages in our whole English history. I return from this digression, which I hope will be no unacceptable entertainment to the reader: it is well known, how the design of the armada miscarried: and soon after that the Duke of Guise was stabbed: not long after Henry III. was also stabbed: and Henry IV. succeeded; who broke the league, with which the great designs of Spain fell to the ground: so happily did this third crisis pass over.

The fourth crisis.

The fourth crisis was from the battle of Prague to the year 1630; in which, as was told in the first book, not only the Elector Palatine fell, but almost all the empire came under the Austrian yoke. All attempts to shake it off proved unsuccessful and fatal to those who undertook it, till the young and great King of Sweden, Gustavus Adolphus, engaged in it. The wars of Rochelle, together with the loss of that important place, seemed to threaten the destruction of the protestants of France. England fell under those unhappy jealousies, which began a disjointing between the King and his people. And the states were much pressed by the Spaniards under Spinola. Breda was taken. But the worst of all was, a quarrel that was raised between Prince Maurice and Barnevelt, that will require a

fuller discussion than was offered in the former book. All agree that William Prince of Orange, was one of the greatest men in story, who, after many attempts for the recovery of the liberty of the Provinces, was in conclusion successful, and formed that republic. In the doing of it he was guilty of one great error, unless he was forced to it by the necessity of his affairs; which was, the settling a negative in every one of the towns of Holland, in the matters of religion, of taxes, and of peace and war. It had been much safer, if it had been determined, that the two thirds must concur; by which the government would have been much stronger. Some thought, that he brought in so many little towns to balance the greater, of whom he could not be sure; whereas he could more easily manage these smaller ones. Others have said, that he was forced to it, to draw them to a more hearty concurrence in the war, since they were to have such a share in the government for the future. But, as he settled it, the corruption of any one small town may put all the affairs of Holland in great disorder. He was also blamed, because he laboured to raise the power of the stadtholder so high, that, in many regards, it was greater than the power of the counts of Holland had been. But this was balanced by its being made elective, and by the small appointments he took to himself. It seems, he designed to have settled that honour in his family; for, after his death, there were reversal letters found among his papers from the Duke of Anjou, when the Provinces invited him to be their prince, by which the Duke engaged himself to leave Holland and Zealand in the Prince's hands. Before he died, he had in a great measure lost the affections of the clergy; because he was very earnest for the toleration of papists, judging that necessary for the engaging men of all persuasions in the common concerns of liberty, and for encouraging the other provinces to come into the union. This was much opposed by the preachers in Holland, who were for more violent methods. Those who, but a few years before, had complained of the cruelty of the church of Rome, were no sooner delivered from that, than they began to call for the same ways of prosecuting those who were of the other side: this made that great prince lose ground with the zealots of his own side before he died. With him all their affairs sunk so fast, that they saw the

1672.

1672. necessity of seeking protection elsewhere. Their ministers did of themselves, without the concurrence of the states, send to Queen Elizabeth, to desire her to take them under her protection, on such terms as she should prescribe. And, though the states were highly offended at this, yet they durst not at that time complain of it, much less punish it: but were forced, by the clamour of their people, to follow an example that was so irregularly set them. This I had from Halewyn, of Dort, of whom I shall have occasion to write afterwards. When the Queen sent over the Earl of Leicester, with a new title, and an authority greater than was either in the counts of Holland or in the stadtholder, by the name of supreme governor; he, as soon as he landed at Flushing, went first to church, where he ordered prayers to be offered up for a blessing on his counsels, and desired that he might receive the sacrament next day; and there he made solemn protestations of his integrity and zeal. This pleased the people so much, that Barnevelt, and the states at the Hague, thought it necessary to secure themselves from the effects of such a threatening popularity; so they sent for the Count, afterwards Prince Maurice, who was then at Leyden, not yet eighteen, and chose him Stadtholder of Holland and Zealand. There had been no provision made against that in their treaty with the Earl of Leicester; yet he was highly offended at it. I will go no farther into the errors of his government, and the end that the Queen put to it; which she did, as soon as it appeared that he was incapable of it, and was beginning to betray, and to sell their best places.

Differences between Prince Maurice of Orange and Barnevelt.

Prince Maurice and Barnevelt continued long in a perfect conjunction of counsels, till upon the negotiations for a peace, or at least for a truce, they differed so much, that their friendship ended in a most violent hatred, and a jealousy that could never be made up. Prince Maurice was for carrying on the war, which set him at the head of a great army: and he had so great an interest in the conquests they made, that for that very reason Barnevelt infused it into the states, that they were now safe, and needed not fear the Spaniards any more, so there was no reason for continuing the war. Prince Maurice on the other hand said, their persecuted brethren in the popish provinces wanted their help to set them at liberty. The work seemed very easy, and the

prospect of success was great. In opposition to this it was said, since the Seven Provinces were now safe, why should they extend their territories? Those who loved their religion and liberty in the other provinces might come and live among them,—this would increase both their numbers and their wealth; whereas the conquest of Antwerp might prove fatal to them: besides that, both France and England interposed; they would not allow them to conquer more, nor become more formidable. All the zealous preachers were for continuing the war, and those that were for peace were branded as men of religion, who had only carnal and political views. While this was in debate every where, the disputes began between Arminius and Gomarus, two famous professors at Leyden, concerning the decrees of God, and the efficacy of grace, in which those two great men, Maurice and Barnevelt, went upon interest, to lead the two parties, from which they both differed in opinion. Prince Maurice, in private, always talked on the side of the Arminians, and Barnevelt believed predestination firmly: but, as he left reprobation out in his scheme, so he was against the unreasonable severity with which the ministers drove those points. He found the Arminians were the better patriots, and he thought the other side out of their zeal were engaged for carrying on the war, so as that they called all the others indifferent as to all religions, and charged them as favourers of Spain and popery. I will go no farther into the differences that followed, concerning the authority of the states-general over the several provinces. It is certain, that every province is a separated state, and has an entire sovereignty within itself, and that the states-general are an assembly of the deputies of the several provinces, but without any authority over them: yet it was pretended, that extraordinary diseases required extraordinary remedies; and Prince Maurice, by the assistance of a party that the ministers made for him among the people, engaged the states to assume an authority over the province of Holland, and to put the government in new hands. A court was erected by the same authority, to judge those who had been formerly in the magistracy. Barnevelt was accused, together with Grotius, and some others, as fomenters of sedition, and for raising distractions in the country: he was condemned and beheaded; others were condemned to perpetual imprisonment; and 1672.

1672. every one of the judges had a great gold medal given them, in the reverse of which the synod of Dort was represented, which was called by the same authority: I saw one of those medals in the possession of the posterity of one of those judges. King James assisted Prince Maurice in all this; so powerfully do the interests of princes carry them to concur in things that are most contrary to their own inclinations. The prevailing passion of that King was his hatred of the puritans, that made him hate these opinions, into which they went with great heat; and, though he encouraged all that were of the Arminian party in his own dominions, yet he helped to crush them in Holland: he hated Barnevelt upon another score, for his getting the cautionary towns out of his hands; and, according to the nature of impotent passions, this carried him to procure his ruin. After this victory that Prince Maurice had got over the party that opposed him, he did not study to carry it much farther: he found quickly how much he had lost the hearts of the people, who had before that time made him their idol, and now looked on him with horror: he studied to make up matters the best he could, that he might engage the states in the Bohemian war: but all that was soon at an end. It was plain, that he had no design upon their liberty, though he could not bear the opposition, that he began to meet with from a free state.

Prince Henry Frederick's wise government.

His death put an end to all jealousies; and his brother, Prince Henry Frederick, quickly settled the disputes of Arminianism by the toleration that was granted them. He was known to be a secret favourer of their tenets: he conducted the armies of the states with so much success, and left them so much at liberty, as to all their state affairs, that all the jealousies which his brother's conduct had raised, were quite extinguished by him. The states made him great presents: he became very rich; and his son had the survivance of the stadtholdership. But his son had more of his uncle's fire in him than of his father's temper. He opposed the peace of Munster all he could. The states came then to see that they had continued too long in their alliance with France against Spain, since France had got the ascendant by too visible a superiority: so that their interest led them now to support Spain against France. Prince William fell to be on ill terms with his mother: and

His son's heat.

she, who had great credit with the states, set up such an open opposition to her son, that the peace of Munster was in a great measure the effect of their private quarrel. Prince William, being married into the royal family of England, did all he could to embroil the states with the new commonwealth. But he met with such opposition, that he, finding the states were resolved to dismiss a great part of their army, suffered himself to be carried to violent counsels. I need not enlarge on things that are so well known, as his sending some of the states prisoners to Lovestein, and his design to change the government of Amsterdam, which was discovered by the post-boy, who gave the alarm a few hours before the Prince could get thither. 1672.

These things and the effects that followed on them are well known; as is also his death, which followed a few weeks after, in the most unhappy time possible for the Princess Royal's pregnancy: for, as she bore her son a week after his death, in the eighth month of her time, so he came into the world under great disadvantages. The states were possessed with great jealousies of the family, as if aspiring to subdue the liberties of their country was inherent in it, and inseparable from it. His private affairs were also in a very bad condition: two great jointures went out of his estate to his mother and grandmother, besides a vast debt that his father had contracted to assist the King. Who could have thought that an infant, brought into the world with so much ill health, and under so many ill circumstances, was born for the preservation of Europe, and of the protestant religion? so unlike do the events of things prove to their first appearances. And since I am writing of his birth, I will set down a story much to the credit of astrology, how little regard soever I myself have to it. I had it from the late Queen's own mouth; and she directed me to some, who were of the Prince's court in that time, who confirmed it to me. An unknown person put a paper into the old Princess's hands, which she took from him, thinking it was a petition. When she looked into it, she found it was her son's nativity, together with the fortunes of his life, and a full deduction of many accidents, which followed very punctually as they were predicted. But that which was most particular was, that he was to have a son by a widow, and was to die of the small-pox in the twen-

1672. ty-fifth year of his age. So those who were apt to give credit to predictions of that sort fancied that the Princess Royal was to die, and that he was upon that to marry the widow of some other person. It was a common piece of raillery in the court, upon the death of any prince, to ask what a person his widow was. But when he was taken ill of the small-pox, then the deciphering the matter was obvious; and it struck his fancy so much, that probably it had an ill effect upon him. Thus was the young Prince born; who was some years after barred by the perpetual edict, from all hopes of arriving at the stadtholdership.

The errors of De Wit's government.

The chief error in De Wit's administration was, that he did not again raise the authority of the council of state; since it was very inconvenient to have both the legislature and the execution in the same hands. It seemed necessary to put the conduct of affairs in a body of men, that should indeed be accountable to the states, but should be bred to business. By this means their counsels might be both quick and secret; whereas, when all is to be determined by the states, they can have no secrets; and they must adjourn often to consult their principals: so their proceedings must be slow. During De Wit's ministry, the council of state was so sunk, that it was considered only as one of the forms of the government: but the whole execution was brought to the states themselves. Certainly a great assembly is a very improper subject of the executive part of power. It is indeed very proper, that such a body should be a check on those, who have the executive power trusted to them. It is true, De Wit found it so; which was occasioned by reason of the English ambassador's being once admitted to sit in that council. They pretended, indeed, that it was only on the account of the cautionary towns; which moved the states to give England a right to some share in their counsels. After these were restored, they did not think it decent to dispute the right of the ambassador's sitting any more there. But the easier way was, the making that council to signify nothing, and to bring all matters immediately to the states. It had been happy for De Wit himself, and his country, if he had made use of the credit he had, in the great turn upon Prince William's death, to have brought things back to the state in which they had been anciently; since the established errors of a constitution and govern-

ment can only be changed in a great revolution. He set up on a popular bottom, and so he was not only contented to suffer matters to go in the channel in which he found them; but in many things he gave way to the raising the separated jurisdiction of the towns, and to the lessening the authority of the courts at the Hague. This raised his credit, but weakened the union of the Provinces. The secret of all affairs, chiefly the foreign negotiations, lay in few hands. Others, who were not taken into the confidence, threw all miscarriages on him; which was fatal to him. The reputation he had got in the war with England, and the happy conclusion of it, broke a party that was then formed against him. After that he dictated to the states: and all submitted to him. The concluding the triple alliance in so short a time, and against the forms of their government, shewed, how sure he was of a general concurrence with every thing that he proposed. In the negotiations between the states, and France, and England, he fell into great errors. He still fancied, that the King of England must see his own interest so visibly in the exaltation of the Prince of Orange, that he reckoned that the worst that could happen was, to raise him to the trust of stadtholder; since England could not gain so much by a conjunction with France, as by the King's having such an interest in their government, as he must certainly come to have, when his nephew should be their stadtholder. So he thought, he had a sure reserve to gain England at any time over to them. But he had no apprehension of the King's being a papist, and his design to make himself absolute at home: and he was amazed to find, that though the court of England had talked much of that matter of the Prince of Orange, when the states were in no disposition to hearken to it, and so used it as a reproach or a ground of a quarrel, yet when it came more in view, they took no sort of notice of it, and seemed not only cold, but even displeased with it. The Prince, as his natural reservedness saved him from committing many errors, so his gravity, and other virtues recommended him much to the ministers, and to the body of the people. The family of De Wit, and the town of Amsterdam, carried still the remembrance of what was passed fresh in their thoughts. They set it up also for a maxim, that the making of a stadtholder was the giving up their liberty, and that the consequence of it would be, the put- 1672.

1672. ting the sovereign of their country in him, or at least in his family. The long continuance of a ministry in one person, and that to so high a degree, must naturally raise envy, and beget discontent, especially in a popular government. This made many become De Wit's enemies, and by consequence the Prince's friends: and the preachers employed all their zeal, to raise the respect of the people for a family, under which they had been so long easy and happy.

The Prince of Orange made general.

When the Prince was of full age, it was proposed in so many places that he should have the supreme command of their armies and fleets, that De Wit saw the tide was too strong to be resisted. So, after he had opposed it long, he proposed some limitations, that should be settled, previous to his advancement. The hardest of all was, that he should bind himself by oath never to pretend to be stadtholder, nor so much as to accept of it, though it should be offered him. These conditions were not of an easy digestion; yet, it was thought necessary that the Prince should be once at the head of their armies: that would create a great dependance on him; and if God blessed him with success, it would not be possible to keep him so low, as these limitations laid him; and the obligation, never to accept of the stadtholdership, could only be meant of his not accepting the offer from any tumultuary bodies of the populace, or the army; but could not be a restraint on him, if the states should make the offer, since his oath was made to them, and by consequence it was in their power to release the obligation that did arise from it to themselves. The court of England blamed him for submitting to such conditions: but he had no reason to rely much on the advices of those, who had taken so little care of him during all the credit they had with the states, while the triple alliance gave them a great interest in their affairs. As soon as he was brought into the command of the armies, he told me, he spoke to De Wit, and desired to live in an entire confidence with him. His answer was cold: so he saw that he could not depend upon him. When he told me this, he added, that he was certainly one of the greatest men of the age, and he believed he served his country faithfully. De Wit reckoned, that the French could not come to Holland but by the Maese: and he had taken great care of the garrison of Maestricht; but very little of those that lay on the Rhine

and the Isel, where the states had many places, but none of them good. They were ill fortified and ill supplied, but most of them were worse commanded, by men of no courage nor practice in military affairs, who considered their governments as places, of which they were to make all the advantage that they could. 1672.

Now I come to give an account of the fifth crisis brought on the whole Reformation, which has been of the longest continuance, since we are yet in the agitations of it. The design was first laid against the states; but the method of invading them was surprising, and not looked for. The Elector of Cologne was all his life long a very weak man; yet it was not thought that he could have been prevailed on to put the French in possession of his country, and to deliver himself with all his dominions over into their hands. When he did that, all upon the Rhine were struck with such a consternation, that there was no spirit nor courage left. It is true, they could not have made a great resistance; yet if they had but gained a little time, that had given the states some leisure to look round them, to see what was to be done. The fifth crisis.

The King of France came down to Utrecht like a land flood. This struck the Dutch with so just a terror, that nothing but great errors in his management could have kept them from delivering themselves entirely up to him. Never was more applause given with less reason than the King of France had upon this campaign. His success was owing rather to De Wit's errors than to his own conduct. There was so little heart or judgment shewn in the management of that run of success, that, when that year is set out, as it may well be, it will appear to be one of the least glorious of his life; though, when seen in a false light, it appears one of the most glorious in history. The conquest of the Netherlands at that time might have been so easily compassed, that if his understanding and his courage had not been equally defective he could not have miscarried in it. When his army passed the Rhine, upon which so much eloquence and poetry have been bestowed, as if all had been animated by his presence and direction, he was viewing it at a very safe distance. When he came to Utrecht he had neither the Prince of Conde nor M. Turenne to advise with; and he was wholly left to his ministers. The Prince of Conde was slightly wounded as he passed the Rhine; and Turenne was The French success.

1672. sent against the Elector of Brandenburgh, who was coming down with his army, partly to save his own country of Cleve, but chiefly to assist his allies the Dutch; so the King had none about him to advise with but Pomponne and Louvoy, when the Dutch sent to him to know what he demanded. Pomponne's advice was wise and moderate, and would in conclusion have brought about all that he intended. He proposed that the King should restore all that belonged to the Seven Provinces, and require of them only the places that they had without them; chiefly Maestricht, Bois le Duc, Breda, and Bergen-op-zoom: thus the King would maintain an appearance of preserving the Seven Provinces entire, which the crown of France had always protected. To this certainly the Dutch would have yielded without any difficulty. By this he had the Spanish Netherlands entirely in his power, separated from Holland and the empire; and might have taken them whensoever he pleased. This would have an appearance of moderation, and would stop the motion that all Germany was now in: which could have no effect, if the states did not pay and subsist the troops.

But followed by an ill management.

Louvoy on the other hand proposed, that the King should make use of the consternation the Dutch were then in, and put them out of a condition of opposing him for the future. He therefore advised that the King should demand of them, besides all that Pomponne moved, the paying a vast sum for the charge of that campaign; the giving the chief church in every town for the exercise of the popish religion; and that they should put themselves under the protection of France; and should send an ambassador every year with a medal acknowledging it; and should enter into no treaties or alliances but by the directions of France. The Dutch ambassadors were amazed when they saw that the demands rose to so extravagant a pitch. One of them swooned away when he heard them read; he could neither think of yielding to them, nor see how they could resist them. There was an article put in for form, that they should give the King of England full satisfaction; but all the other demands were made without any concert with England, though Lockhart was then following the court.

I say nothing of the sea-fight in Solbay, in which De Ruyter had the glory of surprising the English fleet, when they were thinking less of engaging the enemy, than of an extra-

vagant preparation for the usual disorders of the 29th of May; which he prevented, engaging them on the 28th, in one of the most obstinate sea-fights that has happened in our age; in which the French took more care of themselves than became gallant men, unless they had orders to look on, and leave the English and Dutch to fight it out, while they preserved the force of France entire. De Ruyter disabled the ship in which the Duke was, whom some blamed for leaving his ship too soon: then his personal courage began first to be called in question. The admiral of the blue squadron was burnt by a fire-ship, after a long engagement with a Dutch ship much inferior to him in strength: in it the Earl of Sandwich perished with a great many about him, who would not leave him, as he would not leave his ship, by a piece of obstinate courage, to which he was provoked by an indecent reflection the Duke made, on an advice he had offered of drawing nearer the shore, and avoiding an engagement, as if in that he took more care of himself than of the King's honour. The Duke of Buckingham came aboard the fleet; though it was observed that he made great haste away, when he heard the Dutch fleet was in view. The Duke told me, that he said to him, since they might engage the enemy quickly, he intended to make sure of another world: so he desired to know who was the Duke's priest, that he might reconcile himself to the church. The Duke told him, Talbot would help him to a priest; and he brought one to him: they were for some time shut up together; and the priest said, he had reconciled him according to their form. The Duke of Buckingham, who had no religion at heart, did this only to recommend himself to the Duke's confidence. 1672.

The Dutch in great extremities.

It may be easily imagined that all things were at this time in great disorder at the Hague. The French possessed themselves of Naerden: and a party had entered into Muyden, who had the keys of the gates brought to them; but they, seeing it was an inconsiderable place, not knowing the importance of it, by the command of the water that could drown all to Amsterdam, flung the keys into the ditch, and went back to Naerden. But when the consequence of the place was understood, another party was sent to secure it; but before their return two battalions were sent from the Prince of Orange, who secured the place; and by that means preserved Amsterdam, where all were trembling, and

1672. thought of nothing but of treating and submission. The states were very near the extremities of despair. They had not only lost many places, but all their garrisons in them. Guelder, Overyssel, and Utrecht, were quite lost: and the Bishop of Munster was making a formidable impression on Groninghen, and at last besieged it. All these misfortunes came so thick one after another, that no spirit was left; and, to complete their ruin, a jealousy was spread through all Holland, that they were betrayed by those who were in the government; and that De Wit intended all should perish, rather than the family of Orange should be set up. Mombas, one of their generals, who married De Groot's sister, had basely abandoned his post, which was to defend the Rhine where the French passed it: and when he was put in arrest for that he made his escape, and went to the French for sanctuary. Upon this the people complained loudly: and the states were so puzzled that their hearts quite failed them. When they were assembled they looked on one another like men amazed; sometimes all in tears. Once the Spanish ambassador came, and demanded audience; and when he was brought in he told them, that out of the affection that he bore them, and the union of his master's interest with theirs, he came to blame their conduct: they looked sad: they never appeared in the Vorhaut in their coaches; and upon all occasions they looked like men despairing of their country: this quite disheartened their people: therefore he advised them to put on another countenance, to publish that they had good news, that their allies were in march; and to feed their people with probable stories, and so to keep up their spirits. They thought the advice was seasonable, and followed it.

Ambassadors sent to England.

They sent two ambassadors, Dickvelt and Halewyn, to join with Borel, who was still in England, to try if it was possible to divide England from France. And the morning in which they were dispatched away, they had secret powers given them to treat concerning the Prince of Orange's being their stadtholder; for Lord Arlington had so often reproached Borel for their not doing it, that he in all his letters continued still to press that on them. When they came over, they were for form's sake put under a guard: yet Borel was suffered to come to them, and was transported with joy, when they told him what powers they

had in that affair of the Prince: and immediately he went to Lord Arlington; but came soon back, like one amazed, when he found that no regard was had to that, which he had hoped would have entirely gained the court: but he was a plain man, and had no great depth. The others were sent to Hampton Court, and were told that the King would not treat separately, but would send over ambassadors to treat at Utrecht. They met secretly with many in England, and informed themselves by them of the state of the nation. They gave money liberally, and gained some in the chief offices to give them intelligence. The court understanding that they were not idle, and that the nation was much inflamed, since all the offers that they made were rejected, commanded them to go back. The Duke of Buckingham and Lord Arlington were ordered to go to Utrecht; and, to give the nation some satisfaction, Lord Hallifax was sent over afterwards; but he was not in the secret. The Dutch, hearing that their ambassadors were coming over without making peace with England, ran together in great numbers to Maesland sluice, and resolved to cut them in pieces at their landing; for they heard they were at the Brill. But, as they were crossing the Maes, a little boat met them, and told them of their danger, and advised them to land at another place, where coaches were staying to carry them to the Hague. So they missed the storm, that broke out fatally at the Hague the next day, where men's minds were in great agitation. 1672.

The tragical end of De Wit.

De Wit was once at night going home from the states, when four persons set on him to murder him. He shewed on that occasion both an intrepid courage, and a great presence of mind; he was wounded in several places, yet he got out of their hands: one of them was taken and condemned for it. All De Wit's friends pressed him to save his life: but he thought that such an attempt, on a man in his post, was a crime not to be pardoned; though, as to his own part in the matter, he very freely forgave it. The young man confessed his crime, and repented of it, and protested he was led to it by no other consideration, but that of zeal for his country and religion, which he thought were betrayed; and he died as in a rapture of devotion, which made great impression on the spectators. At the same time a barber accused De Wit's elder brother of a practice

1672. on him, in order to his murdering the Prince. There were so many improbabilities in his story, which was supported by no circumstances, that it seemed no way credible. Yet Cornelius de Wit was put to the torture on it, but stood firm to his innocence. The sentence was accommodated rather to the state of affairs, than to the strict rules of justice. In the mean time, while his brother had resigned his charge of pensionary, and was made one of the judges of the high court, Cornelius De Wit was banished; which was intended rather as a sending him out of the way, than as a sentence against him. I love not to describe scenes of horror, as was that black and infamous one committed on the two brothers. I can add little to what has been so often printed. De Wit's going in his own coach to carry his brother out of town was a great error; and looked like a triumph over a sentence, which was unbecoming the character of a judge. Some furious agitators, who pretended zeal for the Prince, gathered the rabble together; and by that vile action that followed they did him more hurt, than they were ever able to repair. His enemies have taken advantages from thence to cast the infamy of this on him, and on his party, to make them all odious; though the Prince spoke of it always to me with the greatest horror possible. The ministers in Holland did upon this occasion shew a very particular violence. In their sermons, and in some printed treatises, they charged the judges with corruption, who had carried the sentence no farther than to banishment; and compared the fate of the De Wits to Haman's.

The Prince of Orange made stadtholder.

I need not relate the great change of the magistracy in all the Provinces, the repealing the perpetual edict, and the advancing the Prince of Orange to be stadtholder, after they had voided the obligation of the oath he had taken, about which he took some time to deliberate. Both lawyers and divines agreed, that those to whom he had made that oath releasing the obligation of it, he was no longer bound by it. The states gave him, for that time, the full power of peace and war. All this was carried farther by the town of Amsterdam; for they sent a deputation to him, offering him the sovereignty of their town. When he was pleased to tell me this passage, he said, he knew the reason for which they made it was, because they thought all was lost; and they chose to have the infamy of their loss fall

on him, rather than on themselves. He added, that he was sure the country could not bear a sovereign; and that they would contribute more to the war, when it was in order to the preserving their own liberty, than for any prince whatsoever. So he told them, that without taking any time to consult on the answer to be made to so great an offer, he did immediately refuse it. He was fully satisfied with the power already lodged with him, and would never endeavour to carry it any farther. 1672.

The Prince's advancement gave a new life to the whole country: he, though then very young, and little acquainted with the affairs of state or war, did apply himself so to both, that, notwithstanding the desperate state in which he found matters, he neither lost heart, nor committed errors. The Duke of Buckingham and the Lord Arlington tried to bring the King of France to offer them better terms; but in vain. That Prince was so lifted up, that he seemed to consider the King very little. While he was so high on the one hand, and the Prince of Orange so steady on the other, the English ambassadors soon saw, that all the offices they could do were ineffectual. One day the Prince (who told me this himself) was arguing with them upon the King's conduct, as the most unaccountable thing possible, who was contributing so much to the exaltation of France, which must prove in conclusion fatal to himself; and was urging this in several particulars. The Duke of Buckingham broke out in an oath, which was his usual style, and said, he was in the right; and so offered to sign a peace immediately with the Prince. Lord Arlington seemed amazed at his rashness: yet he persisted in it, and said positively he would do it. The Prince, upon that, not knowing what secret powers he might have, ordered the articles to be engrossed; and he believed, if he could possibly have got them ready while he was with him, that he would have signed them. They were ready by next morning; but by that time he had changed his mind. That Duke, at parting, pressed him much to put himself wholly in the King's hands; and assured him he would take care of his affairs as of his own. The Prince cut him short: he said, his country had trusted him, and he would never deceive nor betray them for any base ends of his own. The Duke answered, he was not to think any more of his coun-

The English ambassadors were wholly in the interest of France.

1672. try, for it was lost: if it should weather out the summer, by reason of the waters that had drowned a great part of it, the winter's frost would lay them open; and he repeated the words often, Do not you see it is lost? The Prince's answer deserves to be remembered: he said, he saw it was indeed in great danger; but there was a sure way never to see it lost, and that was to die in the last ditch.

The character of Fagel. The person that the Prince relied on chiefly, as to the affairs of Holland, was Fagel; a man very learned in the law, who had a quick apprehension, and a clear and ready judgment: he had a copious eloquence, more popular than correct; and was fit to carry matters with a torrent in a numerous assembly. De Wit had made great use of him; for he joined with him very zealously in carrying the perpetual edict, which he negotiated with the states of Frizeland, who opposed it most; and he was made greffier, or secretary to the States-General, which is the most beneficial place in Holland. He was a pious and virtuous man; only he was too eager and violent. He was too apt to flatter himself. He had much heart when matters went well; but had not the courage that became a great minister on uneasy and difficult occasions.

Prince Waldeck. Prince Waldeck was their chief general; a man of great compass, and a true judgment; equally able in the cabinet and in the camp. But he was always unsuccessful, because he was never furnished according to the schemes that he laid down. The opinion that armies had of him, as an unfortunate general, made him really so: for soldiers cannot have much heart, when they have not an entire confidence in him that has the chief command.

Dickvelt. Dickvelt, on his return from England, seeing the ruin of the De Wits, with whom he was formerly united, and the progress the French had made in Utrecht, where his estate and interest lay, despaired too soon; and went and lived under them. Yet he did great service to his province: upon every violation of articles, he went and demanded justice, and made protestations with a boldness to which the French were so little accustomed, that they were amazed at it. Upon the French leaving Utrecht, and on the re-establishing that province, he was left out of the government. Yet his great abilities, and the insinuating smoothness of his temper, procured him so many friends, that the Prince

was prevailed on to receive him into his confidence; and he had a great share of it to the last, which he well deserved. He had a very perfect knowledge of all the affairs of Europe, and great practice in many embassies. He spoke too long, and with too much vehemence. He was, in his private deportment, a virtuous and religious man, and a zealous protestant. In the administration of his province, which was chiefly trusted to him, there were great complaints of partiality, and of a defective justice. 1672.

Halewyn, a man of great interest in the town of Dort, and one of the judges in the court of Holland, was the person, of them all, whom I knew best and valued most; and was the next to Fagel in the Prince's confidence. He had a great compass of learning, besides his own profession, in which he was very eminent. He had studied divinity with great exactness; and was well read in all history, but most particularly in the Greek and Roman authors. He was a man of great vivacity; he apprehended things soon, and judged very correctly. He spoke short, but with life. He had a courage and vigour in his counsels that became one who had formed himself upon the best models in the ancient authors. He was a man of severe morals; and, as he had great credit in the court where he sat, so he took care that the partialities of friendship should not mix in the administration of justice. He had in him all the best notions of a great patriot and a true Christian philosopher. He was brought in very early to the secret of affairs, and went into the business of the perpetual edict very zealously. Yet he quickly saw the error of bringing matters of state immediately into numerous assemblies. He considered the states maintaining in themselves the sovereign power, as the basis upon which the liberty of their country was built; but he thought the administration of the government must be lodged in a council. He thought it a great misfortune that the Prince was so young at his first exaltation; and so possessed with military matters, to which the extremity of their affairs required that he should be entirely applied, that he did not then correct that error, which could only be done upon so extraordinary a conjuncture. He saw the great error of De Wit's ministry, of keeping the secret of affairs so much in his own hands: such a precedent was very

And Halewyn.

1672. dangerous to public liberty, when it was in the power of one man to give up his country. Their people could not bear the lodging so great a trust with one, who had no distinction of birth or rank: yet he saw it was necessary to have such an authority, as De Wit's merits and success had procured him, lodged somewhere. The factions and animosities that were in almost all their towns, made it as necessary for their good government at home, as it was for the command of their armies abroad, to have this power trusted to a person of that eminence of birth and rank, that he might be above the envy that is always among equals, when any one of them is raised to a disproportioned degree of greatness above the rest. He observed some errors that were in the Prince's conduct: but, after all, he said, It was visible that he was always in the true interest of his country; so that the keeping up a faction against him was like to prove fatal to all Europe, as well as to themselves.

The Prince studied to correct the errors he fell in at first.

The greatest misfortune in the Prince's affairs was, that the wisest, and the most considerable men in their towns, that had been acquainted with the conduct of affairs formerly, were now under a cloud, and were either turned out of the magistracy, or thought it convenient to retire from business: and many hot, but poor men, who had signalized their zeal in the turn newly made, came to be called the Prince's friends, and to be put every where into the magistracy: they quickly lost all credit, having little discretion, and no authority. They were very partial in the government, and oppressive, chiefly of those of the other side: the Prince saw this sooner than he could find a remedy for it; but by degrees the men of the other side came into his interest, and promised to serve him faithfully, in order to the driving out the French, and the saving their country. The chief of those were Halewyn of Dort, Pats of Rotterdam, and Van Beuning of Amsterdam.

Van Beuning's character.

The last of these was so well known, both in France and England, and had so great credit in his own town, that he deserves to be more particularly set out. He was a man of great notions: he had a wonderful vivacity, but too much levity in his thoughts: his temper was inconstant; firm and positive for a while, but apt to change, from a giddiness of mind, rather than from any falsehood in his nature. He broke twice with the Prince, after he came

into a confidence with him. He employed me to reconcile him to him for the third time; but the Prince said, he could not trust him any more. He had great knowledge in all sciences, and had such a copiousness of invention, with such a pleasantness, as well as a variety of conversation, that I have often compared him to the Duke of Buckingham; only he was virtuous and devout; much in the enthusiastical way. In the end of his days he set himself wholly to mind the East-India trade: but that was an employment not so well suited to his natural ginius; and it ended fatally: for, the actions sinking on the sudden on the breaking out of a new war, that sunk him into a melancholy, which quite distracted him. The town of Amsterdam was for many years conducted by him as by a dictator: and that had exposed them to as many errors, as the irregularity of his notions suggested. The breaking the West-India Company, and the loss of Munster in the year 1658, was owing to that. It was then demonstrated, that the loss of that town laid the states open on that side; and that Munster, being in their hands, would not only cover them, but be a fit place for making levies in Westphalia. Yet Amsterdam would not consent to that new charge, and fancied there was no danger on that side; but they found afterwards, to their cost, that their unreasonable managery in that particular, drew upon them an expense of many millions, by reason of the unquiet temper of that martial bishop, who had almost ruined them this year on the side of Friseland; but his miscarriage in the siege of Groninghen, and the taking Coevorden by surprise in the end of the year, as it was among the first things that raised the spirits of the Dutch, so both the bishop's strength and reputation sunk so entirely upon it, that he never gave them any great trouble after that.

1672.

Errors committed by the town of Amsterdam.

Another error into which the frugality of Amsterdam drew the states, was occasioned by the offer that D'Estrades, the French ambassador, made them in the year 1663, of a division of the Spanish Netherlands, by which Ostend, and a line from thence to Maestricht, within which Bruges, Ghent, and Antwerp, were to be comprehended, was offered to them; the French desiring only St. Omer, Valenciennes, Cambray, and Luxemburgh: and the dominions that lay between those lines were to be a free com-

1672. monwealth, as Halewyn assured me, who said, he was in the secret at that time: this was much debated all Holland over. It was visible, that this new commonwealth, taken out of the hands of the Spaniards, must naturally have fallen into a dependance on the states; and have become more considerable, when put under a better conduct: yet this would have put the states, at that time, to some considerable charge; and, to avoid that, the proposition was rejected, chiefly by the opposition that Amsterdam made to it; where the prevailing maxim was, to reduce their expense, to abate taxes, and to pay their public debts: by such an unreasonable parsimony matters were now brought to that state, that they were engaged into a war of so vast an expense, that the yearly produce of their whole estates, did not answer all the taxes, that they were forced to lay on their people.

The Prince animates the states to continue the war.

After the Prince saw that the French demands were at this time so high, and that it was not possible to draw England into a separate treaty, he got the states to call an extraordinary assembly, the most numerous that has been in this age. To them the Prince spoke near three hours, to the amazement of all that heard him, which was owned to me by one of the deputies of Amsterdam. He had got great materials put in his hands, of which he made very good use. He first went through the French propositions, and shewed the consequence and the effects that would follow on them; that the accepting them would be certain ruin, and the very treating about them would distract and dispirit their people: he therefore concluded, that the entertaining a thought of these was the giving up their country: if any could hearken to such a motion, the lovers of religion and liberty must go to the Indies, or to any other country where they might be free and safe. After he had gone through this near an hour, he in the next place shewed the possibility of making a stand, notwithstanding the desperate state to which their affairs seemed reduced: he shewed the force of all their allies; that England could not hold out long without a parliament; and they were well assured that a parliament would draw the King to other measures: he shewed the impossibility of the French holding out long, and that the Germans coming down to the Lower Rhine must make them go out of their country as

fast as they came into it. In all this he shewed that he had a great insight into the French affairs. He came last to shew how it was possible to raise the taxes that must be laid on the country, to answer such a vast and unavoidable expense, and set before them a great variety of projects for raising money. He concluded that if they laid down this for a foundation, that religion and liberty could not be purchased at too dear a rate, and that therefore every man among them, and every minister in the country, ought to infuse into all the people, that they must submit to the present extremity and to very extraordinary taxes; by this means, as their people would again take heart, so their enemies would lose theirs, who built their chief hopes on that universal dejection among them, that was but too visible to all the world. Every one that was present seemed amazed to hear so young a man speak to so many things, with so much knowledge and so true a judgment. It raised his character wonderfully, and contributed not a little to put new life into a country almost dead with fear, and dispirited with so many losses. They all resolved to maintain their liberty to the last, and if things should run to extremities, to carry what wealth they could with them to the East Indies. The state of the shipping capable of so long a voyage was examined; and it was reckoned that they could transport above two hundred thousand people thither. 1672.

The French King goes back to Paris.

Yet all their courage would probably have stood them in little stead, if the King of France could have been prevailed on to stay longer at Utrecht. But he made haste to go back to Paris. Some said it was the effect of his amours, and that it was hastened by some quarrels among his mistresses: others thought he was hastening to receive the flatteries that were preparing for him there. And indeed in the outward appearances of things there was great occasion for them; since he had a run of success beyond all expectation, though he himself had no share in it, unless it was to spoil it. He left a garrison in every place he took, against Turenne's advice, who was for dismantling them all, and keeping his army still about him. But his ministers saw so far into his temper, that they resolved to play a sure game, and to put nothing to hazard. Upon the Elector of Brandenburgh's coming down, Monsieur Turenne was sent against him; by which means the army

1672. about the King was so diminished that he could undertake no great design, besides the siege of Nimeguen, that held out some weeks with so small a force. And though the Prince of Orange had not above eight thousand men about him employed in keeping a pass near Woerden, yet no attempt was made to force him from it. Another probable reason of his returning back so soon was, a suggestion of the desperate temper of the Dutch, and that they were capable of undertaking any design, how black soever, rather than perish. Some told him of vaults under the streets of Utrecht, where gunpowder might be laid to blow him up as he went over them; and all these were observed to be avoided by him. He would never lodge within the town, and came but seldom to it. He upon one or other of these motives went back. Upon which the Prince of Conde said, he saw he had not the soul of a conqueror in him; and that his ministers were the best *commis*, but the poorest ministers in the world, who had not souls made for great things or capable of them.

If the King had a mind to be flattered by his people, he found at his return enough even to surfeit him. Speeches, verses, inscriptions, triumphal arches, and medals were prepared with a profusion and excess of flattery beyond what had been offered to the worst of the Roman emperors, bating the ceremony of adoration. But blasphemous impieties were not wanting to raise and feed his vanity. A solemn debate was held all about Paris, what title should be given him: Le Grand was thought too common: some were for Invincible: others were for Le Conquerant: some, in imitation of Charlemagne, for Lewis le Magne: others were for Maximus: but Très Grand sounded not so well; no more did Maxime: so they settled on Le Grand. And all the bodies of Paris seemed to vie in flattery. It appeared that the King took pleasure in it: so there has followed upon it the greatest run of the most fulsome flattery that is in history. Had the King of France left such a man as Turenne at Utrecht, it might have had ill effects on the resolutions taken by the Dutch. But he left Luxemburgh there, who had no regard to articles; but made all people see what was to be expected when they should come under such a yoke, that was then so intolerable a burden even while it ought to have been recommended to

those who were yet free by a gentle administration. This contributed not a little to fix the Dutch in those obstinate resolutions they had taken up. 1672.

The Dutch favoured by some extraordinary Providence.

There was one very extraordinary thing that happened near the Hague this summer: I had it from many eye-witnesses; and no doubt was made of the truth of it by any at the Hague. Soon after the English fleet had refitted themselves, (for they had generally been much damaged by the engagement in Solbay,) they appeared in sight of Scheveling making up to the shore. The tide turned; but they reckoned that with the next flood they would certainly land the forces that were aboard where they were like to meet with no resistance. So they sent to the Prince for some regiments to hinder the descent. He could not spare many men, having the French very near him. So between the two the country was given for lost, unless De Ruyter should quickly come up. The flood returned which they thought was to end in their ruin. But to all their amazement, after it had flowed two or three hours, an ebb of many hours succeeded, which carried the fleet again to the sea: and, before that was spent, De Ruyter came in view. This they reckoned a miracle wrought for their preservation. Soon after that they escaped another design, that otherwise would very probably have been fatal to them.

Ossory intended to surprise Helvoetsluys.

The Earl of Ossory, eldest son to the Duke of Ormond, a man of great honour, generosity and courage, had been oft in Holland; and, coming by Helvoetsluys, he observed, it was a place of great consequence, but very ill looked to. The Dutch trusting to the danger of entering into it, more than to any strength that defended it, he thought it might be easy to seize, and fortify that place. The King approved this; so some ships were sheathed, and victualled, as for a voyage to a great distance. He was to have five men of war, and transport ships for twelve or fifteen hundred men: and a second squadron, with a farther supply, if he succeeded in the attempt, was to follow: he had got two or three of their pilots brought out on a pretended errand, and these he kept very safe to carry him in. This was communicated to none, but to the Duke, and to Lord Arlington, and all was ready for the execution. Lord Ossory went to this fleet, and saw every thing ready as was ordered, and came up to receive the King's sailing orders: but the

1672. King, who had ordered him to come next morning for his dispatch, discovered the design to the Duke of Buckingham, who hated both the Duke of Ormond and Lord Ossory, and would have seen the King and all his affairs perish, rather than that a person whom he hated should have the honour of such a piece of merit: he upon that did turn all his wit to make the thing appear ridiculous, and impracticable: he represented it as unsafe on many accounts, and as a desperate stroke, that put things, if it should succeed, out of a possibility of treaty or reconciliation: the King could not withstand this. Lord Ossory found next morning that the King had changed his mind: and it broke out by the Duke of Buckingham's loose way of talking, that it was done by his means; so the design was laid aside: but when the peace was made, Lord Ossory told it to the Dutch ambassadors, and said, since he did not destroy them by touching them in that weak and sore part, he had no mind they should lie any longer open to such another attack. When the ambassadors wrote this over to their masters, all were sensible, how easy it had been to have seized and secured that place, and what a terrible disorder it would have put them in; and, upon this, they gave order to put the place in a better posture of defence for the future: so powerfully did spite work on those about the King; and so easy was he to the man of wit and humour. The Duke staid long at sea, in hopes to have got the East-India fleet; but they came sailing so near the German coast, that they passed him before he was aware of it: so he came back after a long and inglorious campaign: he lost the honour of the action that was at Solbay, and missed the wealth of that fleet, which he had long waited for.

An army from Utrecht came on the ice to Holland.

I will complete the transactions of this memorable year with an account of the impression that Luxemburgh made on the Dutch near the end of it, which would have had a very tragical conclusion, if a happy turn of weather had not saved them: Stoupe was then with him, and was in the secret. By many feints, that amused the Dutch so skilfully, that there was no suspicion of the true design, all was prepared for an invasion, when a frost should come. It came at last, and it froze and thawed by turns for some time, which they reckon makes the ice firmest: at last a frost continued so strong for some days, that upon piercing and exa-

mining the ice, it was thought it could not be dissolved by any ordinary thaw, in less than two days. So about midnight Luxemburgh marched out of Utrecht towards Leyden, with about sixteen thousand men. Those of Utrecht told me, that, in the minute in which they began to march, a thaw wind blew very fresh: yet they marched on till day-light, and came to Summerdam and Bodegrave, which they gained not without difficulty: there they stopped, and committed many outrages of crying lust and barbarous cruelty, and vented their impiety in very blasphemous expressions, upon the continuance of the thaw, which now had quite melted the ice, so that it was not possible to go back the way that they came, where all had been ice, but was now dissolved to about three feet depth of water. There were cause-ways, and they were forced to march on these; but there was a fort, through which they must pass; and one Painevine, with two regiments, was ordered to keep it, with some cannon in it: if he had continued there, they must all have been taken prisoners, which would have put an end to the war: but, when he saw them march to him in the morning, he gave all for lost, and went to Tergow, where he gave the alarm, as if all was gone; and he offered to them, to come to help them by that garrison to a better capitulation: so he left his post, and went thither. The French army, not being stopped by that fort, got safe home: but their behaviour in those two villages was such, that as great pains was taken to spread it over the whole country, so it contributed not a little to the establishing the Dutch in their resolutions, of not only venturing, but of losing all, rather than come under so cruel a yoke. 1672.

Painevine's sentence.

Painevine's withdrawing had lost them an advantage never to be regained; so the Prince ordered a council of war to try him: he pleaded, that the place was not tenable, that the enemy had passed it, so he thought the use it was intended for was lost; and if the enemy had come to attack him, he must have surrendered upon discretion; and he pleaded farther, that he went from it upon the desire of one of their towns to save it. Upon this defence, he was acquitted as to his life, but condemned to infamy, as a coward, and to have his sword broke over his head, and to be for ever banished the states' dominions; but an appeal lay, according to their discipline, to a council of war composed

1672. of general officers, and they confirmed the sentence. The towns of Holland were highly offended at these proceedings: they said, they saw the officers were resolved to be gentle to one another, and to save their fellow officers, how guilty soever they might be: the Prince yielded to their instances, and brought him to a third trial before himself, and a court of the supreme officers, in which they had the assistance of six judges. Painevine stood on it, that he had undergone two trials, which was all that the martial law subjected him to, and in those he was acquitted: yet this was overruled. It was urged against him, that he himself was present in the council of war that ordered the making that fort; and he knew, that it was not intended to be a place tenable against an army, but was only meant to make a little stand for some time, and was intended for a desperate state of affairs, and that therefore he ought not to have left his post, because of the danger he was in: he saw the thaw began, and so ought to have staid, at least till he had seen how far that would go; and, being put there by the Prince, he was to receive orders from none but him: upon these grounds he was condemned, and executed, to the great satisfaction of the states, but to the general disgust of all the officers, who thought they were safe in the hands of an ordinary council of war, and did not like this new method of proceeding.

They were also not a little troubled at the strict discipline that the Prince settled, and at the severe execution of it. But by this means he wrought up his army to a pitch of obedience and courage, of sobriety and good order, that things put on another face: and all men began to hope that their armies would act with another spirit, now that the discipline was so carefully looked to. It seems the French made no great account of them; for they released twenty-five thousand prisoners, taken in several places, for fifty thousand crowns.

Thus I have gone far into the state of affairs of Holland in this memorable year. I had most of these particulars from Dickvelt and Halewyn; and I thought this great turn deserved to be set out with all the copiousness with which my informations could furnish me. This year the King declared a new mistress, and made her Dutchess of Portsmouth. She had been maid of honour to Madame, the

A French mistress made

King's sister, and had come over with her to Dover; where the King had expressed such a regard to her, that the Duke of Buckingham, who hated the Dutchess of Cleveland, intended to put her on the King. He told him, that it was a decent piece of tenderness for his sister, to take care of some of her servants; so she was the person the King easily consented to invite over. That Duke assured the King of France, that he could never reckon himself sure of the King, but by giving him a mistress that should be true to his interests. It was soon agreed to. So the Duke of Buckingham sent her with a part of his equipage to Dieppe, and said he would presently follow; but he, who was the most inconstant and forgetful of all men, never thought of her more; but went to England by the way of Calais. So Montague, then ambassador at Paris, hearing of this, sent over for a yacht for her, and sent some of his servants to wait on her, and to defray her charge till she was brought to Whitehall: and then Lord Arlington took care of her. So the Duke of Buckingham lost the merit he might have pretended to, and brought over a mistress, whom his own strange conduct threw into the hands of his enemies. The King was presently taken with her. She studied to please and observe him in every thing: so that he passed away the rest of his life in a great fondness for her. He kept her at a vast charge; and she, by many fits of sickness, some believed real, and others thought only pretended, gained of him every thing she desired. She stuck firm to the French interest, and was its chief support. The King divided himself between her and Mistress Gwyn; and had no other avowed amour. But he was so entirely possessed by the Dutchess of Portsmouth, and so engaged by her in the French interest, that this threw him into great difficulties, and exposed him to much contempt and distrust.

1672. Dutchess of Portsmouth.

I now return to the affairs of Scotland, to give an account of a session of parliament, and the other transactions there in this critical year. About the end of May, Duke Lauderdale came down with his lady in great pomp. He was much lifted up with the French success; and took such pleasure in talking of De Wit's fate, that it could not be heard without horror. He treated all people with such scorn, that few were able to bear it. He adjourned the parliament for

The affairs of Scotland.

Lauderdale's great insolence.

1672. a fortnight, that he might carry his lady round the country; and was every where waited on, and entertained with as much respect, and at as great a charge, as if the King had been there in person. This enraged the nobility; and they made great applications to Duke Hamilton to lead a party against him, and to oppose the tax that he demanded, of a whole year's assessment. I soon grew so weary of the court, though there was scarce a person so well used by him as I myself was, that I went out of town. But Duke Hamilton sent for me, and told me how vehemently he was solicited by the majority of the nobility to oppose the demand of the tax. He had promised me not to oppose taxes in general: and I had assured Duke Lauderdale of it; but he said, this demand was so extravagant, that he did not imagine it would go so far: so he did not think himself bound, by a promise made in general words, to agree to such a high one. Upon this I spoke to Duke Lauderdale, to shew him the inclinations many had to an opposition to that demand, and the danger of it. He rejected it in a brutal manner, saying, they durst as soon be damned as oppose him. Yet I made him so sensible of it, that he appointed the Marquis of Athol to go and talk in his name to Duke Hamilton, who moved that I might be present: and that was easily admitted. Lord Athol pressed Duke Hamilton to come into an entire confidence with Duke Lauderdale; and promised that he should have the chief direction of all affairs in Scotland under the other. Duke Hamilton asked, how stood the parliament of England affected to the war. Lord Athol assured him there was a settled design of having no more parliaments in England; the King would be master, and would be no longer curbed by a House of Commons. He also laid out the great advantages that Scotland, more particularly the great nobility, might find by striking in heartily with the King's designs, and of making him absolute in England. Duke Hamilton answered very honestly, that he would never engage in such designs: he would be always a good and faithful subject; but he would be likewise a good countryman. He was very unwilling to concur in the land-tax: he said, Scotland had no reason to engage in the war, since as they might suffer much by it, so they could gain nothing, neither by the present war, nor by any peace that should be made. Yet he was prevailed on, in conclusion, to agree to

it; and upon that the business of the session of parliament went on smoothly without any opposition. 1672.

The Dutchess of Lauderdale, not contented with the great appointments they had, set herself by all possible methods to raise money. They lived at a vast expense: and every thing was set to sale. She carried all things with a haughtiness, that could not have been easily borne from a Queen; she talked of all people with an ungoverned freedom, and grew to be universally hated. I was out of measure weary of my attendance at their court, but was pressed to continue it. Many found I did good offices. I got some to be considered and advanced, that had no other way of access. But that which made it more necessary was, that I saw Sharp and his creatures were making their court with the most abject flattery, and all the submissions possible. Leightoun went seldom to them, though he was always treated by them with great distinction; so it was necessary for me to be about them, and keep them right: otherwise all our designs were lost without recovery. This led me to much uneasy compliance; though I asserted my own liberty, and found so often fault with their proceedings, that once or twice I used such freedom, and it was so ill taken, that I thought it was fit for me to retire; yet I was sent for, and continued in such high favour, that I was again tried if I would accept of a bishopric, and was promised the first of the two archbishoprics that should fall. But I was still fixed in my former resolutions, not to engage early, being then but nine and twenty: nor could I come into a dependance on them.

He expected addresses for a toleration.

Duke Lauderdale at his coming down had expected, that the presbyterians should have addressed themselves to him for a share in that liberty, which their brethren had now in England; and which he had asserted in a very particular manner at the council table in Whitehall. One Whatley, a justice of peace in Lincolnshire, if I remember the county right, had disturbed one of the meeting-houses, that had got a licence pursuant to the declaration for a toleration: and he had set fines on those that met in it, conformably to the act against conventicles; upon which he was brought up to council, to be reprimanded for his high contempt of his Majesty's declaration. Some privy counsellors shewed their zeal in severe reflections on his proceedings. Duke Lauderdale carried the matter very far: he said, the King's

1672. edicts were to be considered and obeyed as laws, and more than any other laws. This was writ down by some that heard it, who were resolved to make use of it against him in due time. He looked on near two months after he came down from Scotland, waiting still for an application for liberty of conscience. But the designs of the court were now clearly seen into. The presbyterians understood, they were only to be made use of in order to the introducing of popery; so they resolved to be silent and passive. Upon this he broke out into fury and rage against them. Conventicles abounded in all places of the country; and some furious zealots broke into the houses of some of the ministers, wounding them and robbing their goods, forcing some of them to swear that they would never officiate any more in their churches. Some of these were taken and executed. I visited them in prison; and saw in them the blind madness of ill-grounded zeal, of which they were never fully convinced. One of them seemed to be otherwise no ill man; another of them was a bold villain: he justified all that they had done, from the Israelites robbing the Egyptians, and destroying the Canaanites.

Designs from Holland to raise a rebellion in Scotland.

That which gave Duke Lauderdale a juster ground of offence was, that one Carstairs, much employed since that time in greater matters, was taken in a ship that came from Rotterdam. He himself escaped out of their hands: but his letters were taken: they had a great deal writ in white ink; which shewed that the design of sending him over was, to know in what disposition the people were, promising arms and other necessaries, if they were in a condition to give the government any disturbance; but the whole was so darkly writ, much being referred to the bearer, that it was not possible to understand what lay hid under so many mysterious expressions: upon this a severe prosecution of conventicles was set on foot; and a great deal of money was raised by arbitrary fines. Lord Athol made of this in one week 1900*l.* sterling. I did all I could to moderate this fury; but all was in vain. Duke Lauderdale broke out into the most frantic fits of rage possible. When I was once saying to him, was that a time to drive them into a rebellion? Yes, said he, would to God they would rebel, that so he might bring over an army of Irish papists to cut all their throats. Such a fury as this seemed to fur-

nish work for a physician, rather than for any other sort of men; but after he had let himself loose into these fits for near a month, he calmed all on the sudden: perhaps upon some signification from the King; for the party complained to their friends in London, who had still some credit at court. 1672.

He called for me all on the sudden, and put me in mind of the project I had laid before him, of putting all the outed ministers by couples into parishes; so that instead of wandering about the country, to hold conventicles in all places, they might be fixed to a certain abode, and every one might have the half of a benefice. I was still of the same mind, and so was Leightoun; who compared this to the gathering the coals that were scattered over the house, setting it all on fire, into the chimney, where they might burn away safely. Duke Lauderdale set about it immediately; and the benefit of the indulgence was extended to forty more churches: this, if followed as to that of doubling them in a parish, and of confining them within their parishes, would have probably laid a flame that was spreading over the nation, and was like to prove fatal in conclusion: but Duke Lauderdale's way was, to govern by fits, and to pass from hot to cold ones, always in extremes: so this of doubling them, which was the chief part of our scheme, was quite neglected. Single ministers went into those churches; and those who were not yet provided for, went about the country holding conventicles very boldly without any restraint; and no care at all was taken of the church. A farther indulgence.

Sharp and his instruments took occasion from this to complain, that the church was ruined by Leightoun's means; and I wanted not my share in the charge: and indeed the remissness of the government was such, that there was just cause of complaint. Great numbers met in the fields: men went to those meetings with such arms as they had: and we were blamed for all this. It was said, that things went so far beyond what a principle of moderation could suggest, that we did certainly design to ruin and overturn the constitution. Leightoun upon all this concluded he could do no good on either side: he had gained no ground on the presbyterians, and was suspected and hated by the episcopal party: so he resolved to retire from all public em- Leightoun resolved to retire, and to leave his see.

1672. ployments, and to spend the remainder of his days in a corner, far from noise and business, and to give himself wholly to prayer and meditation, since he saw he could not carry on his great designs of healing and reforming the church, on which he had set his heart. He had gathered together many instances out of church history, of bishops that had left their sees, and retired from the world: and was much pleased with these. He and I had many discourses on this argument. I thought a man ought to be determined by the providence of God, and to continue in the station he was in, though he could not do all the good in it that he had proposed to himself: he might do good in a private way by his example, and by his labours, more than he himself could know: and as a man ought to submit to sickness, poverty, or other afflictions, when they are laid on him by the hand of Providence; so I thought the labouring without success was indeed a very great trial of patience; yet such labouring in an ungrateful employment was a cross, and so was to be borne with submission; and that a great uneasiness under that, or the forsaking a station because of it, might be the effect of secret pride, and an indignation against Providence: he, on the other hand, said, his work seemed to be at an end. He had no more to do, unless he had a mind to please himself with the lazy enjoying a good revenue: so he could not be wrought on by all that could be laid before him; but followed Duke Lauderdale to court, and begged leave to retire from his archbishopric. The Duke would by no means consent to this: so he desired that he might be allowed to do it within a year. Duke Lauderdale thought so much time was gained: so to be rid of his importunities, he moved the King to promise him, that if he did not change his mind, he would, within the year, accept of his resignation. He came back much pleased with what he had obtained; and said to me upon it, there was now but one uneasy stage between him and rest, and he would wrestle through it the best he could.

And now I am come to the period that I set out for this book. The world was now in a general combustion, set on by the ambition of the court of France, and supported by the feebleness and treachery of the court of England. A stand was made by the Prince of Orange, and the Elec-

tor of Brandenburgh; but the latter, not being in time assisted by the Emperor, was forced to accept of such conditions as he could obtain. This winter there was great practice in all the courts of Europe, by the agents of France, to lay them every where asleep; and to make the world look on their King's design in that campaign as a piece of glory, for the humbling of a rich and proud commonwealth; and that, as soon as that was done suitably to the dignity of the great monarch, he would give peace to the world, after he had shewn that nothing could stand before his arms: but the opening the progress of these negotiations, and the turn that the affairs of Europe took, belongs to the next period. 1672.

BOOK III.

Of the rest of King Charles II's reign, from the year 1673 *to the year* 1685, *in which he died.*

1673. Great jealousies of the King.

HITHERTO the reign of King Charles was pretty serene and calm at home: a nation, weary of a long civil war, was not easily brought into jealousies and fears, which were the seeds of distraction, and might end in new confusions and troubles. But the court had now given such broad intimations of an ill design, both on our religion and the civil constitution, that it was no more a jealousy: all was now open and barefaced. In the King's presence the court flatterers were always magnifying absolute government, and reflecting on the insolence of a House of Commons. The King said once to the Earl of Essex, as he told me, that he did not wish to be like a grand signior, with some mutes about him, and bags of bowstrings, to strangle men as he had a mind to it: but he did not think he was a king, as long as a company of fellows were looking into all his actions, and examining his ministers, as well as his accounts. He reckoned, now he had set the church party at such a distance from the dissenters, that it was impossible to make them join in opposition to his designs. He hoped the church party would be always submissive; and he had the dissenters at mercy.

Schomberg brought to command the army.

The proceedings of the former year had opened all men's eyes: the King's own religion was suspected, as his brother's was declared; and the whole conduct shewed a design to govern by the French model. A French general was brought over to command our armies. Count Schomberg, who was a German by birth, but his mother was an English woman, was sent over: he was a firm protestant, and served at first in Holland; but upon the Prince of Orange's death he went into France, where he grew into so high a reputation, that he was kept under, and not raised to be a marshal, only on the account of his religion. He was a calm man, of great application and conduct. He thought much better than he spoke. He was a man of true judgment, of great probity, and of an humble and obliging

temper; and at any other time of his life he would have been very acceptable to the English: but now he was looked on as one sent over from France, to bring our army under a French discipline; and so he was hated by the nation, and not much loved by the court. He was always pressing the King to declare himself the head of the protestant party: he pressed him likewise to bring his brother over from popery: but the King said to him, you know my brother long ago—that he is as stiff as a mule. He liked the way of Charenton so well, that he went once a week in London to the French church there, that was according to that form; so the Duke and Lord Clifford looked on him as a presbyterian, and an unfit man for that purpose. The Duke of Buckingham hated him; for he hoped to have commanded the army; and as an army is a very unacceptable thing to the English nation, so it came to be the more odious, when commanded by a general sent over from France. Schomberg told me, he saw it was impossible that the King could bring any great design to a good effect: he loved his ease so much, that he never minded business; and every thing that was said to him of affairs was heard with so little attention, that it made no impression. 1673.

The court was much divided.

The ministry was all broke to pieces. The Duke of Buckingham was alone, hated by all, as he hated all the rest. But he went so entirely into all their ill designs, that the King considered him, and either loved or feared him so much, that he had a deep root with him. Lord Clifford stuck firm to the Duke, and was heated with the design of bringing in popery, even to enthusiasm. It was believed, if the design had succeeded, he had agreed with his wife to take orders, and to aspire to a cardinal's hat. He grew violent, and could scarce speak with patience of the church of England, and of the clergy. The Earl of Arlington thought that the design was now lost, and that it was necessary for the King to make up with his people in the best manner he could. The Earl of Shaftsbury was resolved to save himself on any terms.

A session of parliament.

The money was exhausted: so it was necessary to have a session of parliament; and one was called in the beginning of the year. At the opening it, the King excused the issuing out the writs, as done to save time, and to have a full house at the first opening; but he left that matter

1673. wholly to them: he spoke of the declaration for liberty of conscience in another style: he said, he had seen the good effects of it, and that he would stick to it, and maintain it: he said, he was engaged in a war for the honour of the nation, and therefore he demanded the supplies that were necessary to carry it on. On these heads Lord Shaftsbury enlarged: but no part of his speech was more amazing than that, speaking of the war with the Dutch, he said, *Delenda est Carthago:* yet, while he made a base complying speech in favour of the court, and of the war, he was in a secret management with another party.

The declaration was voted illegal.

The House of Commons was upon this all in a flame: they saw popery and slavery lay at the bottom; yet, that they might not grasp at too much at once, they resolved effectually to break the whole design of popery. They argued the matter of the declaration, whether it was according to law or not. It was plainly the annulling of the penal laws, made both against papists and dissenters. It was said, that though the King had a power of pardoning, yet he had not a power to authorise men to break laws: this must infer a power to alter the whole government. The strength of every law was the penalty laid upon offenders; and if the King could secure offenders by indemnifying them beforehand, it was a vain thing to make laws, since by that maxim they had no force but at the King's discretion. Those who pleaded for the declaration pretended to put a difference between penal laws in spiritual matters, and all others; and said, that the King's supremacy seemed to give him a peculiar authority over these: by virtue of this it was, that the synagogue of the Jews, and the Walloon churches, had been so long tolerated. But to this it was answered, that the intent of the law, in asserting the supremacy, was only to exclude all foreign jurisdiction, and to lodge the whole authority with the King; but that was still to be bounded, and regulated by law; and a difference was to be made between a connivance, such as that the Jews lived under, by which they were still at mercy, and a legal authority. The parliament had never disputed the legality of the patent for the Walloon congregations, which was granted to encourage strangers, professing the same religion, to come among us, when they were persecuted for it in their own country: it was at first granted only to

strangers; but afterwards, in the days of their children, who were natives, it had been made void; and now they were excepted by a special clause out of the act of uniformity. The House came quickly to a very unanimous resolution, that the declaration was against law; and they set that forth, in an address to the King, in which they prayed that it might be called in. Some were studying to divert this, by setting them on to inquire into the issuing out the writs: and the court seemed willing that the storm should break on Lord Shaftsbury, and would have gladly compounded the matter by making him the sacrifice. He saw into that, and so was resolved to change sides with the first opportunity. 1673.

A bill for a new test.

The House was not content with this; but they brought in a bill disabling all papists from holding any employment or place at court, requiring all persons in public trust to receive the sacrament in a parish church, and to carry an attested certificate of that, with witnesses to prove it, into chancery or the county sessions, and there to make a declaration, renouncing transubstantiation in full and positive words. Great pains were taken by the court to divert this: they proposed that some regard might be had to protestant dissenters, and that their meetings might be allowed. By this means they hoped to have set them and the church party into new heats; for now all were united against popery. Love, who served for the city of London, and was himself a dissenter, saw what ill effects any such quarrels might have; so he moved, that an effectual security might be found against popery, and that nothing might interpose till that was done. When that was over, then they would try to deserve some favour; but at present they were willing to lie under the severity of the laws, rather than clog a more necessary work with their concerns. The chief friends of the sects agreed to this: so a vote passed to bring in a bill in favour of protestant dissenters, though there was not time enough, nor unanimity enough, to finish one this session; for it went no farther than a second reading, but was dropped in the committee. But this prudent behaviour of theirs did so soften the church party, that there was no more votes nor bills offered at against them, even in that angry parliament, that had been formerly so severe upon them.

The prudence of the dissenters.

1673.

Debates in the House of Lords.

The court was now in great perplexity: if they gave way to proceedings in the House of Commons, there was a full stop put to the design for popery; and if they gave not way to it, there was an end of the war. The French could not furnish us with so much money as was necessary, and the shutting up the Exchequer had put an end to all credit. The court tried what could be done in the House of Lords. Lord Clifford resolved to assert the declaration with all the force, and all the arguments he could bring for it: he shewed the heads he intended to speak on to the King, who approved of them, and suggested some other hints to him. He began the debate with rough words; he called the vote of the Commons, *monstrum horendum ingens*, and run on in a very high strain. He said all that could be said, with great heat, and many indecent expressions. When he had done, the Earl of Shaftsbury, to the amazement of the whole House, said, he must differ from the lord that spoke last *toto cœlo*. He said, while those matters were debated out of doors, he might think with others, that the supremacy, asserted as it was by law, did warrant the declaration; but now that such a House of Commons, so loyal and affectionate to the King, were of another mind, he submitted his reasons to theirs: they were the King's great council; they must both advise and support him; they had done it; and would do it still, if their laws and their religion were once secure to them. The King was all in a fury to be thus forsaken by his chancellor, and told Lord Clifford how well he was pleased with his speech, and how highly he was offended with the other. The debate went on, and, upon a division, the court had the majority: but against that vote about thirty of the most considerable of the House protested; so the court saw they had gained nothing in carrying a vote that drew after it such a protestation.

This matter took soon after that a quick turn: it had been much debated in the cabinet what the King should do. Lord Clifford and Duke Lauderdale were for the King's standing his ground. Sir Ellis Leightoun assured me, that the Duke of Buckingham and Lord Berkeley offered to the King, if he would bring the army to town, that they would take out of both houses the members that made the opposition. He fancied the thing might easily have been

brought about, and that, if the King would have acted with the spirit that he sometimes put on, they might have carried their business. Duke Lauderdale talked of bringing an army out of Scotland, and seizing on Newcastle; and pressed this with as much vehemence, as if he had been able to have executed it. Lord Clifford said to the King, his people did now see through all his designs, and therefore he must resolve to make himself master at once, or be for ever subject to much jealousy and contempt. The Earls of Shaftsbury and Arlington pressed the King on the other hand to give the parliament full content; and they undertook to procure him money for carrying on the war; and, if he was successful in that, he might easily recover what he must in this extremity part with. This suited the King's own temper; yet the Duke held him in suspense. 1673. The variety of opinions in the King's council.

Colbert's brother, Croissy, was then the French ambassador here. Lord Arlington possessed him with such an apprehension of the madness of violent counsels, and that the least of the ill effects they might have would be the leaving the war wholly on the French King, and that it would be impossible to carry it on, if the King should run to such extremities, as some were driving him to at home; that he gained him both to press the King and his brother to comply with the parliament, and to send an express to his own master, representing the whole matter in the light in which Lord Arlington had set it before him. The French advise the King to yield to the parliament.

In the afternoon of the day in which the matter had been argued in the House of Lords, the Earls of Shaftsbury and Arlington got all those members of the House of Commons on whom they had any influence (and who had money from the King, and were his spies, but had leave to vote with the party against the court, for procuring them the more credit), to go privately to him, and to tell him, that upon Lord Clifford's speech the House was in such fury, that probably they would have gone to some high votes and impeachments; but the Lord Shaftsbury speaking on the other side restrained them: they believed he spoke the King's sense, as the other did the Duke's. This calmed them. So they made the King apprehend, that the lord chancellor's speech, with which he had been so much offended, was really a great service done him; and they persuaded him farther, that he might now save himself, and obtain an indemnity for his

1673. ministers, if he would part with the declaration, and pass the bill. This was so dexterously managed by Lord Arlington, who got a great number of the members to go one after another to the King, who by concert spoke all the same language, that before night the King was quite changed, and said to his brother, that Lord Clifford had undone himself, and had spoiled their business by his mad speech; and that, though Lord Shaftsbury had spoke like a rogue, yet that had stopt a fury which the indiscretion of the other had kindled, to such a degree that he could serve him no longer. He gave him leave to let him know all this. The Duke was struck with this, and imputed it wholly to Lord Arlington's management. In the evening he told Lord Clifford what the King had said. The Lord Clifford, who was naturally a vehement man, went upon that to the King, who scarce knew how to look him in the face. Lord Clifford said, he knew how many enemies he must needs make to himself by his speech in the House of Lords; but he hoped that in it he both served and pleased the King, and was therefore the less concerned in every thing else: but he was surprised to find by the Duke, that the King was now of another mind. The King was in some confusion: he owned, that all he had said was right in itself; but he said, that he, who sat long in the House of Commons, should have considered better what they could bear, and what the necessity of his affairs required. Lord Clifford, in his first heat, was inclined to have laid down his white staff, and to have expostulated roundly with the King; but a cooler thought stopped him. He reckoned he must now retire, and therefore he had a mind to take some care of his family in the way of doing it; so he restrained himself, and said, he was sorry that his best meant services were so ill understood. Soon after this, letters came from the French King, pressing the King to do all that was necessary to procure money of his parliament, since he could not bear the charge of the war alone. He also writ to the Duke, and excused the advice he gave upon the necessity of affairs; but promised faithfully to espouse his concerns, as soon as he got out of the war, and that he would never be easy, till he recovered that which he was now forced to let go. Some parts of these transactions I had from the Duke, and from

The King went into that suddenly.

Clifford disgraced.

Duke Lauderdale: the rest, that related to the Lord Clifford, Titus told me he had from his own mouth. 1673.

As soon as Lord Clifford saw he must lose the white staff, he went to the Duke of Buckingham, who had contributed much to the procuring it to him; and told him, he brought him the first notice that he was to lose that place to which he had helped him, and that he would assist him to procure it to some of his friends. After they had talked round all that were in any sort capable of it, and had found great objections to every one of them, they at last pitched on Sir Thomas Osborn, a gentleman of Yorkshire, whose estate was much sunk. He was a very plausible speaker, but too copious, and could not easily make an end of his discourse. He had been always among the high cavaliers; and, missing preferment, he had opposed the court much, and was one of Lord Clarendon's bitterest enemies. He gave himself great liberties in discourse, and did not seem to have any regard to truth, or so much as to the appearances of it; and was an implacable enemy: but he had a peculiar way to make his friends depend on him, and to believe he was true to them. He was a positive, and undertaking man; so he gave the King great ease, by assuring him all things would go according to his mind in the next session of parliament: and, when his hopes failed him, he had always some excuse ready to put the miscarriage upon; and by this means he got into the highest degree of confidence with the King, and maintained it the longest of all that ever served him. Osborn made lord treasurer.

The King now went into new measures. He called for the declaration, and ordered the seal put to it to be broken. So the act for the taking the sacrament, and the test against transubstantiation, went on; and together with it an act of grace passed, which was desired chiefly to cover the ministry, who were all very obnoxious by their late actings. The court desired at least 1,200,000*l.*; for that sum was necessary to the carrying on the war. The great body of those who opposed the court, had resolved to give only 600,000*l.*, which was enough to procure a peace, but not to continue the war. Garroway and Lee had led the opposition to the court all this session in the House of Commons; so they were thought the properest to name the sum. Above eighty of the chief of the party had met over night, and had agreed A great supply was given.

1673. to name 600,000*l.*; but Garroway named 1,200,000*l.*, and was seconded in it by Lee. So this surprise gained that great sum, which enabled the court to carry on the war. When their party reproached these persons for it, they said, they had tried some of the court as to the sum intended to be named, who had assured them, the whole agreement would be broke, if they offered so small a sum, and this made them venture on the double of it. They had good rewards from the court, and yet they continued still voting on the other side. They said, they had got good pennyworths for their money: a sure law against popery, which had clauses in it never used before; for all that continued in office after the time lapsed, they not taking the sacrament, and not renouncing transubstantiation (which came to be called the test, and the act from it the test act), were rendered incapable of holding any office: all the acts they did in it were declared invalid and illegal, besides a fine of 500*l.* to the discoverer. Yet upon that, Lord Cavendish, now Duke of Devonshire, said, that when much money was given to buy a law against popery, the force of the money would be stronger in order to the bringing it in, than the law could be for keeping it out. I never knew a thing of this nature carried so suddenly, and so artificially, in the House of Commons, as this was, to the great amazement of the Dutch, who relied on the parliament, and did not doubt but that a peace with England would be procured by their interposition.

The Duke laid down all his commissions.

Thus this memorable session ended. It was indeed much the best session of that long parliament. The church party shewed a noble zeal for their religion; and the dissenters got great reputation by their silent deportment. After the session was over, the Duke carried all his commissions to the King, and wept as he delivered them up; but the King shewed no concern at all: yet he put the admiralty in a commission composed wholly of the Duke's creatures; so that the power of the navy was still in his hands. Lord Clifford left the treasury, and was succeeded by Osborn, who was soon after made Earl of Danby. The Earl of Shaftsbury had lost the King's favour quite; but it was not thought fit to lay him aside, till it should appear what service he could do them in another session of parliament. Lord Arlington had lost the Duke more than any other. He looked on him as a pitiful coward, who would

forsake and betray any thing, rather than run any danger himself. Prince Rupert was sent to command the fleet; but the captain's were the Duke's creatures; so they crossed him all they could, and complained of every thing he did: in a word, they said, he had neither sense nor conduct left. Little could be expected from a fleet so commanded, and so divided. He had two or three engagements with the Dutch, that were well fought on both sides, but were of no great consequence, and were drawn battles. None of the French ships engaged except one, who charged their admiral for his ill conduct: but, instead of reward, he was clapped in the Bastile upon his return to France. This opened the eyes and mouths of the whole nation. All men cried out, and said, we were engaged in a war by the French, that they might have the pleasure to see the Dutch and us destroy one another, while they knew our seas and ports, and learned all our methods, but took care to preserve themselves. Count Schomberg told me he pressed the French ambassador to have the matter examined; otherwise, if satisfaction was not given to the nation, he was sure the next parliament would break the alliance: but, by the ambassador's coldness, he saw the French admiral had acted according to his instructions; so Schomberg made haste to get out of England, to prevent an address to send him away: and he was by that time as weary of the court, as the court was of him. 1673.

The Duke was now looking for another wife. He made addresses to the Lady Bellasis, the widow of the Lord Bellasis' son. She was a zealous protestant, though she was married into a popish family. She was a woman of much life, and great vivacity, but of a very small proportion of beauty; as the Duke was often observed to be led by his amours, to objects that had no extraordinary charms. Lady Bellasis gained so much on the Duke, that he gave her a promise under his hand to marry her; and he sent Coleman to her to draw her over to popery; but in that she could not be moved. When some of her friends reproached her for admitting the Duke so freely to see her, she could not bear it; but said, she could shew that his addresses to her were honourable. When this came to the Lord Bellasis' ears, who was her father-in-law, and was a zealous papist, and knew how intractable the lady was in those matters, he

The Duke treats for a second marriage.

1673. gave the whole design of bringing in their religion for gone, if that was not quickly broke: so he, pretending a zeal for the King, and the Duke's honour, went and told the King all he had heard. The King sent for the Duke, and told him, it was too much that he had played the fool once; that was not to be done a second time, and at such an age. The lady was also so threatened, that she gave up the promise, but kept an attested copy of it, as she herself told me. There was an Archduchess of Inspruck, to whom marriage was solemnly proposed; but the Empress happening to die at that time, the Emperor himself married her. After that a match was proposed to the Duke of Modena's daughter, which took effect; but because those at Rome were not willing to consent to it, unless she might have a public chapel, which the court would not hearken to, another marriage was proposed for a daughter of the Duke of Crequi's. I saw a long letter of the Duke's writ to Sir William Lockhart, upon this subject, with great anxiety. He apprehended, if he was not married before the session of parliament, that they would fall on that matter, and limit him so, that he should never be able to marry to his content. He was vexed at the stiffness of the court of Rome, who were demanding terms that could not be granted. He had sent a positive order to the Earl of Peterborough, who was negociating the business at Modena, to come away by such a day, if all was not consented to: in the mean while he hoped the King of France would not put that mortification on him, as to expose him to the violence of the parliament (I use his own words), but that he would give order for dispatching that matter with all possible haste; but, while he was thus perplexed, the court of Rome yielded; and so the Duke married that lady by proxy, and the Earl of Peterborough brought her over through France.

A treaty opened at Cologne.

The Swedes offered at this time a mediation in order to a peace, and Cologne was proposed to be the place of treaty. The King ordered the Earl of Sunderland, Sir Leolin Jenkins, and Sir Joseph Williamson thither, to be his plenipotentiaries.

Lord Sunderland's character.

Lord Sunderland was a man of a clear and ready apprehension, and a quick decision in business. He had too much heat both of imagination and passion, and was apt to speak very freely both of persons and things. His own notions were always good; but he

was a man of great expense: and, in order to the supporting himself, he went into the prevailing counsels at court; and he changed sides often, with little regard either to religion or the interest of his country. He raised many enemies to himself, by the contempt with which he treated those who differed from him. He had indeed a superior genius to all the men of business that I have yet known; and he had the dexterity of insinuating himself so entirely into the greatest degree of confidence with three succeeding princes, who set up on very different interests, that he came by this to lose himself so much, that even those who esteemed his parts, depended little on his firmness. 1673.

The treaty of Cologne was of a short continuance; for the Emperor, looking on Furstenberg, the Dean of Cologne, and Bishop of Strasbourg, afterwards advanced to be cardinal, who was the Elector's plenipotentiary at that treaty, as a subject of the empire, who had betrayed it, ordered him to be seized on. The French looked on this as such a violation of the passports, that they set it up for a preliminary, before they would enter upon a treaty, to have him set at liberty. The treaty broke off.

Maestricht was taken this summer, in which the Duke of Monmouth distinguished himself so eminently, that he was much considered upon it. The King of France was there. After the taking of Maestricht he went to Nancy in Lorraine, and left the Prince of Conde with the army in Flanders, Turenne having the command of that on the Upper Rhine against the Germans; for the Emperor and the whole empire were now engaged.

But I return now to the intrigues of our court. I came up this summer, in order to the publishing the Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton. I had left Scotland under an universal discontent. The whole administration there was both violent and corrupt, and seemed to be formed on a French model. The parliament had in the year 1663, in order to the bringing our trade to a balance with England, given the King in trust a power to lay impositions on foreign commodities. So upon that a great duty was lately laid upon French salt, in order to the better vending the salt made at home; upon which it was sold very dear: and that raised great complaints; for, as the salt was excessive dear, so it did not serve all purposes. All people The affairs of Scotland.

1673. looked on this as the beginning of a gabel. An imposition was also laid on tobacco; and all brandy was prohibited to be imported, but not to be retailed: so those who had the grant of the seizures sold them, and raised the price very much. These occasioned monopolies; and the price of those things that were of great consumption among the commons was much raised, so that a trust lodged with the crown was now abused in the highest degree. As these things provoked the body of the people, so Duke Lauderdale's insolence, and his engrossing every thing to himself and to a few of his friends, and his wife and his brother setting all things to sale, raised a very high discontent all over the nation. The affairs of the church were altogether neglected; so that in all respects we were quite out of joint.

I went up with a full resolution to do my country all the service I could, and to deal very plainly with the Duke of Lauderdale, resolving if I could do no good, to retire from all affairs, and to meddle no more in public business. I lost indeed my best friend at court. Sir Robert Murray died suddenly at that time. He was the wisest, and worthiest man of the age, and was as another father to me. I was sensible how much I lost in so critical a conjuncture, being bereft of the truest and faithfullest friend I had ever known; and so I saw I was in danger of committing great errors, for want of so kind a monitor.

Lauderdale's design.

At my coming to court, Duke Lauderdale took me into his closet, and asked me the state of Scotland. I upon that gave him a very punctual and true account of it. He seemed to think that I aggravated matters, and asked me, if the King should need an army from Scotland to tame those in England, whether that might be depended on? I told him, certainly not: the commons in the southern parts were all presbyterians, and the nobility thought they had been ill used, and were generally discontented, and only waited for an occasion to shew it. He said, he was of another mind, the hope of the spoil of England would fetch them all in. I answered, the King was ruined if ever he trusted to that; and I added, that with relation to other more indifferent persons, who might be otherwise ready enough to push their fortunes, without any anxious inquiries into the grounds they went on, yet even these would not trust the King, since

he had so lately said, he would stick to his declaration, and yet had so soon after given it up. He said, *hinc illæ lacrymæ:* but the King was forsaken in that matter, for none stuck to him but Lord Clifford and himself; and then he set himself into a fit of railing at Lord Shaftsbury. I was struck with this conversation, and by it I clearly saw into the desperate designs of the court, which were as foolish as they were wicked; for I knew, that upon the least disorder in England, they were ready in Scotland to have broke out into a rebellion: so far were they from any inclination to have assisted the King in the mastering of England. I was much perplexed in myself what I ought to do, whether I ought not to have tried to give the King a truer view of our affairs; but I resolved to stay for a fit opportunity. I tried the Dutchess of Lauderdale, and set before her the injustice and oppression that Scotland was groaning under; but I saw she got too much by it to be any way concerned at it. They talked of going down to hold a session of parliament in Scotland: I warned them of their danger; but they despised all I could say: only great offers were made to myself to make me wholly theirs, which made no impression on me. 1673.

The King liked my Memoirs.

He carried me to the King, and proposed the licensing my Memoirs to him. The King bid me bring them to him, and said, he would read them himself. He did read some parts of them, particularly the account I gave of the ill conduct of the bishops, that occasioned the beginning of the wars, and told me, that he was well pleased with it: he was at that time so much offended with the English bishops for opposing the toleration, that he seemed much sharpened against them: he gave me back my book to carry it to Secretary Coventry, in order to the licensing it. The Secretary said, he would read it all himself; so this obliged me to a longer stay than I intended. Sir Ellis Leightoun carried me to the Duke of Buckingham, with whom I passed almost a whole night, and happened so far to please him, that he, who was apt to be fired with a new acquaintance, gave such a character of me to the King, that ever after that he took much notice of me, and said, he would hear me preach: he seemed well pleased with my sermon, and spoke of it in a strain that drew much envy on me.

And shewed me great favour.

He ordered me to be sworn a chaplain, and admitted me to a long private audience, that lasted above an hour, in

1673. which I took all the freedom with him that I thought became my profession. He run me into a long discourse about the authority of the church, which he thought we made much of in our disputes with the dissenters, and then took it all away when we dealt with the papists. I saw plainly what he aimed at in this, and I quickly convinced him, that there was a great difference between an authority of government in things indifferent, and a pretence to infallibility. He complained heavily of the bishops for neglecting the true concerns of the church, and following courts so much, and being so engaged in parties. I went through some other things with relation to his course of life, and entered into many particulars with much freedom: he bore it all very well, and thanked me for it; some things he freely condemned, such as living with another man's wife; other things he excused, and thought God would not damn a man for a little irregular pleasure. He seemed to take all I had said very kindly; and, during my stay at court, he used me in so particular a manner, that I was considered as a man growing into a high degree of favour.

My conversation with the Duke. At the same time Lord Ancram, a Scotch earl, but of a small fortune, and of no principles, either as to religion or virtue, whose wife was a papist, and himself a member of the House of Commons, told the Duke that I had a great interest in Scotland, and might do him service in that kingdom. He depended on Duke Lauderdale, but hated him, because he did nothing for him. We were acquainted there; and, he having studied the most divinity of any man of quality I ever knew, we found many subjects of discourse: he saw I did not flatter Duke Lauderdale, and he fancied he might make a tool of me; so he seemed to wonder that I had not been carried to wait on the Duke, and brought me a message from him, that he would be glad to see me; and upon that he carried me to him. The Duke received me very graciously. Lord Ancram had a mind to engage me to give him an account of the affairs of Scotland, but I avoided that, and very bluntly entered into much discourse with him about matters of religion. He said some of the common things of the necessity of having but one church; otherwise we saw what swarms of sects did rise up on our revolt from Rome, and these had raised many rebellions, and the shedding much blood: and he named both his father's death,

and his great grandmother's, Mary Queen of Scots. He also turned to some passages in "Heylin's History of the Reformation," which he had lying by him; and the passages were marked, to shew upon what motives and principles men were led into the changes that were then made. I enlarged upon all these particulars, and shewed him the progress that ignorance and superstition had made in many dark ages, and how much bloodshed was occasioned by the papal pretensions, for all which the opinion of infallibility was a source never to be exhausted; and I spoke long to such things as were best suited to his temper, and his capacity. I saw Lord Ancram helped him all he could, by which I perceived how he made his court; for which, when I reproached him afterwards, he said, it was ill breeding in me to press so hard on a prince. The Duke upon this conversation expressed such a liking to me, that he ordered me to come often to him; and afterwards he allowed me to come to him in a private way, as often as I pleased. He desired to know the state of affairs in Scotland. I told him how little that kingdom could be depended on. I turned the discourse often to matters of religion; he broke it very gently, for he was not at all rough in private conversation. He wished I would let those matters alone; I might be too hard for him, and silence him, but I could never convince him. I told him, it was a thing he could never answer to God nor the world, that, being born and baptized in our church, and having his father's last orders to continue stedfast in it, he had suffered himself to be seduced, and as it were stolen out of it, hearing only one side, without offering his scruples to our divines, or hearing what they had to say in answer to them, and that he was now so fixed in his popery, that he would not so much as examine the matter: he said to me, he had often picqueered out (that was his word) on Sheldon, and some other bishops, by whose answers he could not but conclude, that they were much nearer the church of Rome, than some of us young men were. 1673.

Stillingfleet had a little before this time published a book of the idolatry and fanaticism of the church of Rome. Upon that the Duke said, he asked Sheldon, if it was the doctrine of the church of England, that Roman catholics were idolaters: who answered him, it was not; but that young men of parts would be popular, and such a charge was the way

1673. to it. He at that time shewed me the Dutchess's paper, that has since been printed; it was all writ with her own hand: he gave me leave to read it twice over, but would not suffer me to copy it; and upon the mention made in it of her having spoke to the bishops concerning some of her scruples, and that she had such answers from them as confirmed and heightened them, I went from him to Morley, as was said formerly, and had from him the answer there set down. I asked the Duke's leave to bring Dr. Stillingfleet to him: he was averse to it; and said, it would make much noise, and could do no good. I told him, even the noise would have a good effect; it would shew he was not so obstinate, but that he was willing to hear our divines. I pressed it much; for it became necessary to me, on my own account, to clear myself from the suspicion of popery, which this extraordinary favour had drawn upon me. I at last prevailed with the Duke to consent to it, and he assigned an hour of audience. Stillingfleet went very readily, though he had no hopes of success. We were about two hours with him, and went over most of the points of controversy. Stillingfleet thought the point that would go the easiest, and be the best understood by him, was the papal pretensions to a power over princes in deposing them, and giving their dominions to others; and upon that he shewed him, that popery was calculated to make the pope the sovereign of all Christendom. The Duke shifted the discourse from one point to another, and did not seem to believe the matters of fact and history alleged by us: so we desired he would call for some priests, and hear us discourse of those matters with them in his presence. He declined this, and said it would make a noise. He assured us, he desired nothing but to follow his own conscience, which he imposed on nobody else; and that he would never attempt to alter the established religion. He loved to repeat this often: but when I was alone with him, I warned him of the great difficulties his religion was like to cast him into. This was no good argument to make him change; but it was certainly a very good argument to make him consider the matter so well, that he might be sure he was in the right. He objected to me the doctrine of the church of England in the point of submission, and of passive obedience: I told him, there was no trusting to a disputable opinion;

I carried Doctor Stillingfleet to him.

there were also distinctions and reserves, even in those who had asserted these points the most; and it was very certain, that when men saw a visible danger of being first undone, and then burnt, they would be inclined to the shortest way of arguing, and to save themselves the best way they could: interest and self-preservation were powerful motives. He did very often assure me, he was against all violent methods, and all persecution for conscience sake; and was better furnished to speak well on that head than on any other. I told him, all he could say that way would do him little service; for the words of princes were looked on as arts to lay men asleep; and they had generally regarded them so little themselves, that they ought not to expect that others should have great regard to them. I added, he was now of a religion in which others had the keeping of his conscience, who would now hide from him this point of their religion, since it was not safe to own it, till they had it in their power to put it in practice; and, whenever that time should come, I was sure that the principles of their church must carry him to all the extremities of extirpation. I carried a volume of Judge Crook's to him, in which it is reported, that King James had once in council complained of a slander cast on him, as if he was inclined to change his religion; and had solemnly vindicated himself from the imputation; and prayed, that if any should ever spring out of his loins that should maintain any other religion than that which he truly maintained and professed, that God would take him out of the world. He read it, but it made no impression; and when I urged him with some things in his father's book, he gave me the account of it that was formerly mentioned. He entered into great freedom with me about all his affairs; and he shewed me the journals he took of business every day with his own hand; a method, he said, that the Earl of Clarendon had set him on. The Dutchess had began to write his life: he shewed me a part of it in a thin volume in folio: I read some of it, and found it writ with a great deal of spirit. He told me, he intended to trust me with his journals, that I might draw a history out of them; and thus, in a few weeks time, I had got far into his confidence. He did also allow me to speak to him of the irregularities of his life, some of which he very freely confessed; and when I urged him how such

1673.

1673. a course of life did agree with the zeal he shewed in his religion; he answered, Must a man be of no religion unless he is a saint? Yet he bore my freedom very gently, and seemed to like me the better for it. My favour with him grew to be the observation of the whole court: Lord Ancram said, I might be what I pleased, if I would be a little softer in the points of religion. Sir Ellis Leightoun brought me a message from F. Sheldon, and some of his priests, assuring me, they heard so well of me, that they offered me their service. He pressed me to improve my present advantages to the making my fortune: the see of Durham was then vacant; and he was confident it would be no hard matter for me to compass it: but I had none of those views, and so was not moved by them. The Duke of Buckingham asked me, what I meant in being so much about the Duke? If I fancied I could change him in point of religion, I knew him and the world very little; if I had a mind to raise myself, a sure method for that was, to talk to him of the Reformation, as a thing done in heat and haste, and that in a calmer time it might be fit to review it all. He said, I needed go no farther; for such an intimation would certainly raise me. And when I was positive not to enter into such a compliance, he told me, he knew courts better than I did: princes thought their favours were no ordinary things; they expected great submissions in return; otherwise they thought they were despised; and I would feel the ill effects of the favour I then had, if I did not strike into some compliances; and, since I was resolved against these, he advised me to withdraw from the court: the sooner the better. I imputed this to his hatred of the Duke: but I found afterwards the advice was sound and good. I likewise saw those things in the Duke's temper, from which I concluded I could not maintain an interest in him long. He was for subjects submitting in all things to the King's notions; and thought that all who opposed him, or his ministers in parliament, were rebels in their hearts; and he hated all popular things, as below the dignity of a king. He was much sharpened at that time by the proceedings of the House of Commons.

The Duke's marriage opposed by the Commons.

In the former session it was known that he was treating a marriage with the Archdutchess: and yet no address was made to the King to hinder his marrying a papist. His

honour was not then engaged: so it had been seasonable, and to good purpose, to have moved in it then; but now he was married by proxy, and Lord Peterborough had brought the lady to Paris; yet the House of Commons resolved to follow the pattern the King of France had lately set. He treated with the Elector Palatine for a marriage between his brother and the Elector's daughter, in which one of the conditions agreed to was, that she should enjoy the freedom of her religion, and have a private oratory for the exercise of it. When she came on her way as far as Metz, an order was sent to stop her till she was better instructed: upon which she changed, at least as to outward appearance. It is true, the court of France gave it out that the Elector had consented to this method for the saving his own honour; and he had given the world cause to believe he was capable of that, though he continued openly to deny it. The House of Commons resolved to follow this precedent, and to make an address to the King, to stop the Princess of Modena's coming to England till she should change her religion. Upon this the Duke moved the King to prorogue the parliament for a week, and a commission was ordered for it. The Duke went to the House on that day, to press the calling up the Commons before they could have time to go on to business. Some peers were to be brought in. The Duke pressed Lord Shaftsbury to put that off, and to prorogue the parliament. He said coldly to him, there was no haste. But the Commons made more haste: for they quickly came to a vote for stopping the marriage; and by this means they were engaged, (having put such an affront on the Duke) to proceed farther. He presently told me how the matter went, and how the Lord Chancellor had used him: he was confident the King would take the seals from him, if he could not manage the sessions so as to procure him money, of which there was indeed small appearance. I told him I looked on that as a fatal thing, if the Commons began once to affront him: that would have a sad train of consequences, as soon as they thought it necessary for their own preservation, to secure themselves from falling under his revenges. He said, he was resolved to stand his ground, and to submit to the King in every thing: he would never take off an enemy; but he would let all the world see that he was ready to forgive every one that should come off from his opposi-

1673.

1673. tion, and make applications to him. When the week of the prorogation was ended, the session was opened by a speech of the King's, which had such various strains in it, that it was plain it was made by different persons. The Duke told me that Lord Clarendon during his favour had penned all the King's speeches: but that now they were composed in the cabinet, one minister putting in one period, while another made another; so that all was not of a piece. He told me Lord Arlington was almost dead with fear: but Lord Shaftsbury reckoned himself gone at court, and acted more roundly. In his speech he studied to correct his "Delenda est Carthago," applying it to the Loevestein party, whom he called the Carthaginians: but this made him as ridiculous as the other made him odious. The House of Commons took up again the matter of the Duke's marriage, and moved for an address about it; but, it was said, the King's honour was engaged. Yet they addressed to him against it; but the King made them no answer. By that time I had obtained a licence of Secretary Coventry for my book, which the King said should be printed at his charge.

A parliament in Scotland.

But now I must give an account of a storm raised against myself, the effects of which were very sensible to me for many years. The Duke of Lauderdale had kept the Scotch nation in such a dependance on himself, that he was not pleased with any of them that made an acquaintance in England, and least of all in the court: nor could he endure that any of them should apply themselves to the King or the Duke, but through him; so he looked on the favour I had got into with a very jealous eye. His Dutchess questioned me about it. Those who know what court jealousies are, will easily believe that I must have said somewhat to satisfy them, or break with them. I told her what was very true as to the Duke, that my conversation with him was about religion; and that with the King I had talked of the course of life he led. I observed a deep jealousy of me in them both; especially because I could not go with them to Scotland. I said I would follow as soon as the Secretary would dispatch me; and as soon as that was done I took post, and by a great fall of snow was stopped by the way. But I unhappily got to Edinburgh the night before the parliament met. Duke Hamilton, and many others, told me how strangely Duke Lauderdale talked of my interest at court;

as if I was ready to turn papist. Duke Hamilton also told me, they were resolved next day to attack Duke Lauderdale and his whole administration in parliament. I was troubled at this; and argued with him against the fitness of it all I could; but he said he was engaged: the Earls of Rothes, Argyle, and Tweedale, and all the cavalier party had promised to stick by him. I told him what afterwards happened, that most of these would make their own terms, and leave him in the lurch; and the load would lie on him. When I saw the thing was past remedy, I resolved to go home and follow my studies, since I could not keep Duke Lauderdale and him any longer in a good understanding. 1673.

A party formed against Lauderdale.

Next day, when the parliament was opened, the King's letter was read, desiring their assistance in carrying on the war with Holland, and assuring them of his affection to them in very kind words. This was seconded by Duke Lauderdale in a long speech; and immediately it was moved to appoint a committee to prepare an answer to the King's letter, as was usual. Duke Hamilton moved, that the state of the nation might be first considered, that so they might see what grievances they had: and he hinted at some. And then, as it had been laid, about twenty men, one after another, spoke to several particulars. Some mentioned the salt, others the tobacco, and the brandy: some complained of the administration of justice, and others of the coin. With this the Duke of Lauderdale was struck, as one dead; for he had raised his credit at court by the opinion of his having all Scotland in his hand, and in a dependance on him: so a discovery of this want of credit with us he saw must sink him there. He had not looked for this; though I had warned him of a great deal of it. But he, reflecting on that, and on the credit I had got at court, and on the haste I made in my journey, and my coming critically the night before the session opened; he laid all this together, and fancied I was sent on design, as the agent of the party, and that the licensing my book was only a blind: he believed Sir Robert Murray had laid it, and that the Earl of Shaftsbury had managed it. And because it was a common artifice of King Charles's ministers, to put the miscarriage of affairs upon some accident that had not been foreseen by them, but should be provided against for the future; he assured the King that I had been the incendiary, that I had

1673. my uncle's temper in me, and that I must be subdued, otherwise I would embroil all his affairs. The King took all things of that kind easily from his ministers, without hearing any thing to the contrary: for he was wont to say, all apologies were lies: upon which one said to him once, then he would always believe the first lie. But all this was much increased, when Duke Lauderdale upon his coming up told the King, that I had boasted to his wife of the freedom that I had used with him, upon his course of life. With this the King was highly offended: or at least he made much use of it to justify many hard things that he said of me: and for many years he allowed himself a very free scope in talking of me. I was certainly to blame for the freedom I had used with the Dutchess of Lauderdale: but I was surprised by her question: and I could not bring myself to tell a lie: so I had no other shift ready to satisfy her. But the Duke kept up still a very good opinion of me. I went home to Glasgow, where I prosecuted my studies till the June following, when I went again to London.

He offers to redress grievances in council.

Duke Lauderdale put off the session of parliament for some time, and called a council, in which he said, great complaints had been made in parliament of grievances: he had full authority to redress them all in the King's name; therefore he charged the privy counsellors to lay all things of that kind before that board, and not to carry them before any other assembly, till they saw what redress was to be had there. Duke Hamilton said, the regular way of complaints was to make them in parliament, which only could redress them effectually; since the putting them down by the authority of council, was only laying them aside for a while, till a fitter opportunity was found to take them up again. Upon this Duke Lauderdale protested, that he was ready in the King's name to give the subject ease and freedom, and that those who would not assist and concur with him in this, were wanting in duty and respect to the King; and since he saw the matter of the salt, the tobacco, and the brandy, had raised much clamour, he would quash these. But the party had a mind to have the instruments of their oppression punished, as well as the oppression itself removed; and were resolved to have these things condemned by some exemplary punishments, and to pursue Duke Lauderdale and his party with this clamour.

Next session of parliament new complaints were offered. Duke Lauderdale said, these ought to be made first to the lords of the articles, to whom all petitions and motions ought to be made first; and that they were the only judges, what matters were fit to be brought into parliament. The other side said, they were only a committee of parliament, to put motions into the form of acts; but that the parliament had still an entire authority to examine into the state of the nation. In this debate, they had the reason of things on their side; but the words of the act favoured Duke Lauderdale: so he lodged it now where he wished it might be, in a point of prerogative. He valued himself to the King on this, that he had drawn the act that settled the power of the lords of the articles; who being all upon the matter named by the King, it was of great concern to him to maintain that, as the check upon factious spirits there; which would be no sooner let go, than the parliament of Scotland would grow as unquiet, as a House of Commons was in England: that was a consideration which at this time had great weight with the King. I now return to give an account of this year's session in England.

1674.

A dispute raised about the lords of the articles.

In the beginning of it, the Duke of Ormond, the Earls of Shaftsbury and Arlington, and Secretary Coventry, offered an advice to the King, for sending the Duke for some time from the court, as a good expedient both for himself and the Duke. The King hearkened so far to it, that he sent them to move it to the Duke. He was highly incensed at it: he said he would obey all the King's orders, but would look on those as his enemies, who offered him such advices; and he never forgave this to any of them; no not to Coventry, for all his good opinion of him. He pressed the King vehemently to take the seals from the Earl of Shaftsbury; so it was done: and they were given to Finch, then attorney-general, made afterwards Earl of Nottingham. He was a man of probity, and well versed in the laws: he was long much admired for his eloquence; but it was laboured and affected: and he saw it much despised before he died. He had no sort of knowledge in foreign affairs; and yet he loved to talk of them perpetually: by which he exposed himself to those who understood them. He thought he was bound to justify the court in all debates in the House of Lords, which he did with the vehemence of a pleader, rather than

The proceedings in the parliament of England.

Finch's character.

1674. with the solemnity of a senator. He was an incorrupt judge: and in his court he could resist the strongest applications, even from the King himself, though he did it no where else. He was too eloquent on the bench, in the House of Lords, and in common conversation. One thing deserves to be remembered of him: he took great care of filling the church livings, that belonged to the seal, with worthy men: and he obliged them all to residence. Lord Shaftsbury was now at liberty to open himself against the court, which he did with as little reserve as decency.

The House of Commons were resolved to fall on all the ministry. They began with Duke Lauderdale, and voted an address to remove him from the King's councils and presence for ever. They went next upon the Duke of Buckingham; and, it being moved, in his name, that the House would hear him, he was suffered to come to the House. The first day of his being before them he fell into such a disorder, that he pretended he was taken ill, and desired to be admitted again. Next day he was more composed. He justified his own designs, laying all the ill counsels upon others, chiefly on Lord Arlington, intimating plainly that the root of all errors was in the King and the Duke. He said hunting was a good diversion; but if a man would hunt with a brace of lobsters, he would have but ill sport. He had used that figure to myself, but had then applied it to Prince Rupert and Lord Arlington; but it was now understood to go higher. His speech signified nothing towards the saving of himself; but it lost him the King's favour so entirely, that he never recovered it afterwards. Lord Arlington was next attacked: he appeared also before the Commons, and spoke much better than was expected: he excused himself, but without blaming the King: and this had so good an effect, that though he, as secretary of state, was more exposed than any other, by the many warrants and orders he had signed, yet he was acquitted, though by a small majority. But the care he took to preserve himself, and his success in it, lost him his high favour with the King, as the Duke was out of measure offended at him: so he quitted his post, and was made lord chamberlain.

The House of Commons was resolved to force the King to a peace with the Dutch. The court of France recalled

Croissy, finding that the Duke was offended at his being led by Lord Arlington. Rouvigny was sent over; a man of great practice in business, and in all intrigues. He was still a firm protestant, but in all other respects a very dexterous courtier, and one of the greatest statesmen in Europe. He had the appointments of an ambassador, but would not take the character, that he might not have a chapel, and mass said in it. Upon his coming over, as he himself told me, he found all the ministers of the allies were perpetually plying the members of the House of Commons with their memorials. He knew he could gain nothing on them; so he never left the King. The King was in great perplexity: he would have done any thing, and parted with any persons, if that would have procured him money for carrying on the war: but he saw little appearance of that. He found he was indeed at the mercy of the states: so Lord Arlington pressed the Spanish ministers to prevail with the states and the Prince of Orange, to get a proposition for a peace to be set on foot. And that it might have some shew of a peace both begged and bought, he proposed that a sum of money should be offered the King by the states, which should be made over by him to the Prince for the payment of the debt he owed him. Rouvigny pressed the King much to give his parliament all satisfaction in points of religion. The King answered him, if it was not for his brother's folly, ("la sottise de mon frère,") he would get out of all his difficulties. Rouvigny drew a memorial for informing the House of Commons of the modesty of his master's pretensions: for now the French King was sensible of his errors in making such high demands as he had made at Utrecht, and was endeavouring to get out of the war on easier terms. The states committed a great error in desiring a peace with England, without desiring at the same time that the King should enter into the alliance for reducing the French to the terms of the triple alliance. But the Prince of Orange thought, that if he could once separate the King from his alliance with France, the other point would be soon brought about. And the states were much set on the having a peace with England, hoping then both to be freed of the great trouble of securing the coast at a vast charge, and also by the advantage of their fleet to ruin the trade and to insult the coast of France. The states

1674.

A peace concluded with the states.

1674. did this winter confer a new and extraordinary dignity on the Prince of Orange. They made him hereditary stadtholder: so that this was entailed on him and his issue-male. He had in a year and a half's time changed the whole face of their affairs. He had not only taken Naerden, which made Amsterdam easy, but, by a very bold undertaking, he had gone up the Rhine to Bon, and had taken it in a very few days; and in it had cut off the supplies that the French sent down to their garrisons on the Rhine and the Isel: so that the French, finding they could not subsist longer there, were now resolved to evacuate all those places, and the three provinces of which they were possessed, which they did a few months after. An alliance was also made with the Emperor: and by this means both the Elector of Cologne and the Bishop of Munster were brought to a peace with the states. The Elector of Brandenburgh was likewise returning to the alliance with the states: for in the treaty, to which he was forced to submit with Turenne for a truce of a year, he had put an article reserving to himself a liberty to act in concurrence with the empire, according to such resolutions as should be taken in the diet. This change of the affairs of the states had got the Prince of Orange the affections of the people to such a degree, that he could have obtained every thing of them that he would have desired; and even the loss of so important a place as Maestricht was not at all charged on him: so he brought the states to make applications to the King in the style of those who begged a peace, though it was visible they could have forced it. In conclusion, a project of a peace with England was formed, or rather the peace of Breda was writ over again, with the offer of two or 300,000*l.* for the expense of the war. And the King signed it at Lord Arlington's office.

He came up immediately into the drawing-room, where seeing Rouvigny, he took him aside, and told him, he had been doing a thing that went more against his heart, than the losing of his right hand: he had signed a peace with the Dutch, the project being brought him by the Spanish ambassador: he saw nothing could content the House of Commons, or draw money from them; and Lord Arlington had pressed him so hard, that he had stood out till he was weary of his life. He saw it was impossible for him to carry

on the war without supplies, of which it was plain he could have no hopes. Rouvigny told him, what was done could not be helped; but he would let him see how faithfully he would serve him on this occasion: he did not doubt but his master would submit all his pretensions to him, and make him the arbiter and mediator of the peace. This the King received with great joy; and said, it would be the most acceptable service that could be done him. The French resolved upon this to accept of the King's mediation; and so the King got out of the war very little to his honour, having both engaged in it upon unjust grounds, and managed it all along with ill conduct and bad success; and now he got out of it in so poor and so dishonourable a manner, that with it he lost his credit both at home and abroad. Yet he felt little of all this; he and his brother were now at their ease. Upon this, the parliament was quickly prorogued, and the court delivered itself up again to its ordinary course of sloth and luxury. But Lord Arlington, who had brought all this about, was so entirely lost by it, that though he knew too much of the secret to be ill used, yet he could never recover the ground he had lost.

1674. The King became the mediator of the peace.

The Dutchess of York came over that winter; she was then very young, about sixteen, but of a full growth: she was a graceful person, with a good measure of beauty, and so much wit and cunning, that during all this reign she behaved herself in so obliging a manner, and seemed so innocent and good, that she gained upon all that came near her, and possessed them with such impressions of her, that it was long before her behaviour after she was a queen could make them change their thoughts of her. So artificially did this young Italian behave herself, that she deceived even the eldest and most jealous persons both in the court and country. Only sometimes a satirical temper broke out too much, which was imputed to youth and wit not enough practised in the world. She avoided the appearances of a zealot, or a meddler in business, and gave herself up to innocent cheerfulness, and was universally esteemed and beloved as long as she was dutchess.

The Dutchess's character.

She had one put about her to be her secretary, Coleman, who became so active in the affairs of the party, and ended his life so unfortunately, that since I had much conversation with him, his circumstances may deserve that his cha-

Coleman's character.

1674. racter should be given though his person did not. I was told he was a clergyman's son; but he was early catched by the Jesuits, and bred many years among them. He understood the art of managing controversies, chiefly that great one of the authority of the church, better than any of their priests. He was a bold man, resolved to raise himself, which he did by dedicating himself wholly to the Jesuits; and so he was raised by them. He had a great easiness in writing in several languages, and writ many long letters, and was the chief correspondent the party had in England. He lived at a vast expense: and talked in so positive a manner, that it looked like one who knew he was well supported. I soon saw into his temper, and I warned the Duke of it; for I looked on him as a man much liker to spoil business than to carry it on dexterously. He got into the confidence of P. Ferrier, the King of France's confessor, and tried to get into the same pitch of confidence with P. de la Chaise, who succeeded him in that post. He went about every where, even to the jails among the criminals, to make proselytes. He dealt much both in the giving and taking of bribes. But now the affairs of England were calmed, I look again to Scotland, which was yet in a storm.

The affairs of Scotland.

The King writ to Duke Hamilton to come up: and, when he and Lord Tweedale arrived, they were so well received, that they hoped to carry their point; but the King's design in this was, that if he could have brought the House of Commons to have given money, he was resolved to have parted with Duke Lauderdale, and have employed them: and his kind usage of them was on design to persuade the Commons to use himself better, by shewing that he was ready to comply with them. He gave them so good a hearing, that they thought they had fully convinced him: and he blamed them only for not complaining to himself of those grievances: but, as soon as he saw it was to no purpose to look for money from the House of Commons, and had signed the peace, he sent them down with full assurances that all things should be left to the judgment of the parliament. They came down through the greatest fall of snow that has been in all my life-time. When they got home, instead of a session, there was an order for a prorogation; which gave such an universal discontent, that many

The parliament was prorogued.

offered at very extravagant propositions, for destroying Duke Lauderdale and all his party. Duke Hamilton, who told me this some years after, when an act of grace was published, was neither so bad nor so bold as to hearken to these. The King writ him a cajoling letter, desiring him to come up once more, and to refer all matters to him: and he assured him he would make up all differences. 1674.

In the meanwhile Duke Lauderdale took all possible methods to become more popular. He connived at the insolence of the presbyterians, who took possession of one of the vacant churches of Edinburgh, and preached in it for some months. The Earl of Argyle, and Sir James Dalrymple, were the men on whom the presbyterians depended most. Duke Lauderdale returned to his old kindness with the former: and Lord Argyle was very ready to forget his late unkindness; so matters were made up between them. Dalrymple was the president of the session, a man of great temper, and of a very mild deportment, but a cunning man. He was now taken into the chief confidence. He told the presbyterians, if they would now support Duke Lauderdale, this would remove the prejudice the King had against them, as enemies to his service: this wrought on many of them. Dalrymple's character.

What influence soever this might have on the presbyterians, the strange conduct with relation to them provoked the clergy out of measure. Some hot men, that were not preferred as they thought they deserved, grew very mutinous, and complained that things were let fall into much confusion; and they raised a grievous outcry for the want of a national synod, to regulate our worship and government: and so moved in the diocesan synods, that a petition should be offered to the privy council, setting forth the necessity of having a national synod. I liked no part of this. I knew the temper of our clergy too well to depend much on them; therefore I went out of the way on purpose when our synod was to meet. Petitions were offered for a national synod, which was thought an innocent thing: yet, it being done on design to heighten the fermentation the kingdom was in, great exceptions were taken to it. One bishop, and four of the clergy, were turned out by an order from the King, pursuant to the act asserting the supremacy. After a year, upon their submission, they were restored: The clergy was much provoked.

1674.

though I was not at all concerned in this (for I was ever of Nazianzen's opinion, who never wished to see any more synods of the clergy); yet the King was made believe, that I had laid the whole matter, even though I did not appear in any part of it.

A great distraction in Scotland.

Another disorder broke out, which had greater effects. A cause being judged in the supreme court of session, the party appealed to the parliament. This was looked on as a high contempt, done on design to make the parliament a court of judicature, that so there might be a necessity of frequent parliaments; so the judges required all the lawyers to condemn this, as contrary to law. And they had the words of a law on their side: for there lay no such appeal as stopped process, nor was there a writ of error in their law: but, upon petitions, parliaments had, though but seldom, reviewed and reversed the judgment of the courts; so the debate lay about the sense of the word "appeal." Sir George Lockhart, brother to the ambassador, was the most learned lawyer, and the best pleader I have ever yet known in any nation; and he had all the lawyers almost in a dependance on him. He was engaged with the party, and resolved to stand it out. The King sent down an order to put all men from the bar that did not condemn appeals; and, when that wrought not on them, they were by proclamation banished Edinburgh, and twelve miles about it: and a new day was assigned them for making their submission; the King in a very unusual style declaring, on the word of a prince, that if they submitted not by that day, they should never be again admitted to their practice. They stood it out: and the day lapsed without their submitting; yet afterwards they renounced appeals in the sense of the Roman law: and, notwithstanding the unusual threatening in the proclamation they were again restored to practice. But this made a stop for a whole year in all legal proceedings.

Lauderdale's proceedings there.

The government of the city of Edinburgh was not so compliant as was expected; so Duke Lauderdale procured a letter from the King to turn out twelve of the chief magistrates, and to declare them for ever incapable of all public trusts: so entirely had he forgot his complaints formerly made against incapacity, even when passed in an act of parliament. The boroughs of Scotland have by law a privilege of meeting once a year in a body, to consider of

trade, and of by-laws relating to it. At a convention held this year, a petition was agreed on and sent to the King, complaining of some late acts that hindered trade, for the repeal of which there was great need of a session of parliament: they therefore prayed, that when the King sent down a commissioner to hold a session, he might be instructed in order to that repeal. This was judged a legal thing by the lawyers there; for this was a lawful assembly: they did not petition for a parliament, but only for instructions to the session: yet it was condemned as seditious; and those who promoted it were fined and imprisoned for it. Thus Duke Lauderdale was lifted up out of measure, and resolved to crush all that stood in his way. He was made Earl of Guildford, in England, and had a pension of 3000*l*. And he let himself loose into a very ungoverned fury. When Duke Hamilton, and some other lords, came up, the King desired they would put their complaints in writing. They said, the laws were so oddly worded, and more oddly executed, in Scotland, that the modestest paper they could offer might be condemned as leasing-making, and misrepresenting the King's proceedings; so they would not venture on it. The King promised them, that no ill use should be made of it to their prejudice: but they did not think it safe to trust him; for he seemed to be entirely delivered up to all Duke Lauderdale's passions. 1674.

It is no wonder, then, that I could not stand before him; though at my coming up the Duke of York received me with great kindness, and told me, how he had got out of great difficulties; and added, that the King was very firm to him. He commended likewise his new Dutchess much: he was troubled at our disorders: he was firm to Duke Lauderdale: but he would have endeavoured to reconcile matters if there had been room for it. He told me, the King was highly incensed against me; and was made believe, that I was the chief spring of all that had happened: he himself believed me more innocent; and said, he would endeavour to set me right with him; and he carried me to the King, who received me coldly. Some days after, when the Duke was a hunting, the Lord Chamberlain told me, he had orders to strike my name out of the list of the chaplains; and that the King forbad me the court, and expected I should go back to Scotland. The Duke seemed I was disgraced.

1674. troubled at this, and spoke to the King about it; but he was positive: yet he admitted me to say to him what I had to offer in my own justification. I said all that I thought necessary; and appealed to Duke Hamilton, who did me justice in it. But the King said, he was afraid I had been too busy; and wished me to go home to Scotland, and be more quiet. The Duke upon this told me, that if I went home without reconciling myself to Duke Lauderdale, I should certainly be shut up in a close prison, where I might perhaps lie too long. This I looked on as a very high obligation; so I resigned my employment, and resolved to stay in England. I preached in many of the churches of London, and was so well received, that it was probable I might be accepted of in any that was to be disposed of by a popular election: so a church falling to be given in that way, the electors had a mind to choose me; but yet they were not willing to offend the court. The Duke spoke to Duke Lauderdale, and told him, that he had a mind I should be settled in London, and desired he would not oppose it: Duke Lauderdale said, all this was a trick of the party in Scotland, to settle me, that I might be a correspondent between the factions in both kingdoms. Yet, upon the Duke's undertaking that I should not meddle in those matters, he was contented that the King should let the electors know, he was not against their choosing me. Upon this Duke Lauderdale, seeing what a root I had with the Duke, sent a message to me, that if I would promise to keep no farther correspondence with Duke Hamilton, I should again be restored to his favour. I said, I had promised the Duke to meddle no more in Scotch affairs; but I could not forsake my friends, nor turn against them. By this he judged I was inflexible: so he carried a story to the King the very night before the election, that upon inquiry was found to be false, when it was too late to help what was done. Upon that the King sent a severe message to the electors: so I missed that. And some time after a new story was invented, of which Sharp was indeed the author, by which the King was made believe, that I was possessing both Lords and Commons against Duke Lauderdale. Upon that the King ordered Coventry to command me to leave London, and not to come within twenty miles of it. The Duke told me what the particulars

were, which were all false; for Lord Faulconbridge and Lord Carlisle were the lords, into whom it was said I was infusing those prejudices. Now, I was known to neither of them; for, though they had desired my acquaintance, I had declined it. So I told all this to Secretary Coventry, who made report of it to the King in the Duke's presence; and those lords justified me in the matter. I hoped the King would, upon all this, recal his order; but he would not do it: so I asked to have it in writing. The Secretary knew it was against law; so he would not do it; but I was forbid the court. The Duke brought Duke Lauderdale and me once together, to have made us friends; but nothing would do unless I would forsake all my friends, and discover secrets: I said, I knew no wicked ones; and I could not break with persons with whom I had lived long in great friendship. The Duke spoke to the Lord Treasurer, to soften Duke Lauderdale with relation to me; and sent me to him. He undertook to do it; but said afterwards, Duke Lauderdale was intractable. 1674.

This violent and groundless prosecution lasted some months; and, during that time, I said to some, that Duke Lauderdale had gone so far in opening some wicked designs to me, that I perceived he could not be satisfied, unless I was undone: so I told what was mentioned before, of the discourses that passed between him and me. This I ought not to have done, since they were the effects of confidence and friendship; but such a course of provocation might have heated a cooler and elder man than I was, being then but thirty, to forget the caution that I ought to have used. The persons who had this from me resolved to make use of it against him, in the next session of parliament, for which the Earl of Danby and he were preparing, by turning to new methods.

The ministers turned to the church party.

Lord Danby set up to be the patron of the church party, and of the old cavaliers, and Duke Lauderdale joined himself to him. It was said, the King had all along neglected his best and surest friends; so a new measure was taken up, of doing all possible honours to the memory of King Charles I. and to all that had been in his interests. A statue of brass on horseback, that had been long neglected, was bought, and set up at Charing-cross; and a magnificent funeral was designed for him. The building of St. Paul's, in

1674. London, was now set on foot with great zeal. Morley, and some of the bishops were sent for, and the new ministry settled a scheme with them, by which it was offered to crush all the designs of popery. The ministers expressed a great zeal in this, and openly accused all the former ministers for neglecting it so long: but, to excuse this to the Duke, they told him, it was a great misfortune, that the church party and the dissenters were now run into one, that the church party must have some content given them, and then a test was to be set on foot, that should for ever shut out all dissenters, who were an implacable sort of people. A declaration renouncing the lawfulness of resistance in any case whatsoever, and an engagement to endeavour no alteration in church or state, was designed to be a necessary qualification of all that might choose, or be chosen members of parliament. If this could be carried, the King's party would be for ever separated from the dissenters, and be so much the more united to him. In order to this, it was necessary to put out severe orders of council against all convicted or suspected papists. The Duke acquainted me with this scheme; he disliked it much: he thought this would raise the church party too high: he looked on them as intractable in the point of popery: therefore he thought, it was better to keep them under, by supporting the papists: he looked on the whole project, as both knavish and foolish: and upon this he spoke severely of Duke Lauderdale, who he saw would do any thing to save himself: he had been all along in ill terms, both with Sheldon and Morley; but now he reconciled himself to them, he brought Sharp out of Scotland, who went about assuring all people, that the party set against him was likewise set against the church: this, though notoriously false, passed for true among strangers: and, Leightoun coming up at the year's end to quit his archbishopric of Glasgow, Burnet had made such submissions that he was restored to it: so that wound, which had been given to episcopacy in his person, was now healed; and Leightoun retired to a private house in Sussex, where he lived ten years in a most heavenly manner, and with a shining conversation: so now Duke Lauderdale was at the head of the church party.

Correspondence with

The court was somewhat disturbed with discoveries that were made at this time. When Sir Joseph Williamson

came back from Cologne, he secretly met with Wicquefort, who has published a work about ambassadors. He was the Dutch secretary, that translated the intelligence that came from England; and sometimes the originals were left in his hands. Williamson prevailed with him to deliver these to him; most of them were writ by the Lord Howard's brother, who upon his brother's death was afterwards Lord Howard. He was a man of wit and learning, bold and poor, who had run through many parties in religion. In Cromwell's time he was rebaptized, and had preached in London. He set up in opposition to Cromwell, as a great commonwealth's man, and did some service in the restoration. But he was always poor, and ready to engage in any thing that was bold. He went over in the beginning of the war, and offered to serve De Wit; but he told me he found him a dry man. As soon as the Prince was raised he waited on him, and on Fagel; and undertook not only to send them good intelligence, but to make a great party for them. He pressed the Prince to make a descent on England, only to force the King to call a parliament, and to be advised by it; and he drew such a manifesto, as he believed would be acceptable to the nation. He, and one of the Du Moulins, that was in Lord Arlington's office, joined together, and gave the states very good intelligence. Du Moulin, fearing that he was discovered, took the alarm in time, and got beyond sea. Most of the papers that Wicquefort delivered were of Howard's writing; so upon his examination in the Tower, it appeared they had his letters against him; and, when notice was sent of this to Holland, Wicquefort was called on to bring before them all the original letters that were trusted to him; and, upon his not doing it, he was clapped up; and the states sent word to the King, that if any person suffered in England on the account of the letters betrayed by him, his head should go for it. Halewyn told me, when it was put to the judges, to know what sort of crime this could be made, since the papers were given up after the peace was concluded, (otherwise the betraying the secrets of the state to enemies was a manifest crime) they came to this resolution, that as by the Roman law every thing was made capital that was *contra salutem populi Romani*, so the delivering up such papers was a capital crime. This threatening saved Howard. But yet Wicquefort was

1674. Holland discovered.

1674. kept very long in prison, and ruined by it. He had a sort of a character from one of the princes of Germany, upon which he insisted; but the states thought, that his coming into their service was the throwing up of that character.

Jealousies of the Prince of Orange.

Upon this occasion Carstairs, mentioned in the year 1672, was sent over from Holland to England; and he was seized on with a paper of instructions, that were drawn so darkly, that no wonder if they gave a jealousy of some ill designs then on foot. The Prince said, when asked about it, that it was only meant for a direction for carrying on the levies of some regiments, that the King had allowed the Dutch to make in Scotland, which the King did the better to excuse his letting so many continue in the French service. Howsoever, mention being made of money to be paid, and of men to be raised, and a compliment being ordered to be made to Duke Hamilton, this looked suspicious. Howard had confessed all he knew upon promise of pardon; so that and this laid together gave the court some apprehensions. Duke Lauderdale made use of it to heighten the King's ill opinion of the party against him; and, because Lieutenant-General Drummond was of all the military men he that had the best capacity, and the greatest reputation, he moved that he might be secured. The method he took in doing it, shewed that he neither suspected him, nor regarded the law. The ancient method was to require men to render themselves prisoners by such a day. This was a snare to many, who, though innocent, yet hating restraint went out of the way, and were proceeded against by an outlawry: but an act of parliament had been made, condemning that method for the future; yet Duke Lauderdale resolved to follow it; and Drummond, knowing his innocence, rendered himself as required; and was kept a year in a very cold and inconvenient prison, at Dunbarton, on the top of a high rock. This coming after a whole life of loyalty and zeal, was thought a very extraordinary reward for such high pretensions.

Drummond was ordered to prison.

One thing on this occasion may be fit to be told. Lord Kincardin had served Duke Lauderdale faithfully, even longer than he could do with a good conscience: for he had stuck to him, and was left by him with the King, when he went to Scotland, who knew well with how much zeal he had supported his interest, and excused his faults. When

Duke Lauderdale was hotly pushed at, he then promised to all his friends, that he would avoid all former errors, if he got out of his trouble: and that made Lord Kincardin so earnest to serve him. But when he saw into how much fury he was running, he tried to have persuaded him to more temper, but found it was in vain. Then he confessed to me that I had judged truer than he had done; for I believed he would grow worse than ever. When Lord Kincardin found he could not hinder things in private, he opposed them in council: and so they broke with him. He came up to justify himself to the King, who minded those matters very little; but thought it was necessary to give a full scope to Duke Lauderdale's motions, who had told the King there was a spirit of rebellion that run through all sorts of people, and that was to be subdued by acts of power, though perhaps neither legal nor just: and when that evil spirit was once broken, then it would be fit to return to more legal and moderate counsels. So Lord Kincardin found there was no arguing with the King upon particulars; therefore he begged leave to stay some time at court, that he might not be obliged to oppose that, which the King was made believe his service required. The King consented to this; and upon all occasions used him very well. Duke Lauderdale could not bear that, and pressed the King often to command him home, which he refused to do. Once he urged it with much vehemence: and the King answered as positively, that he saw no reason for it, and he would not do it. Upon this he came home as in a fit of distraction, and was gathering together all his commissions to deliver them up to the King. Upon that the Marquis of Athol, who was then in high favour with him, went to the King, and told him that he had sent Duke Lauderdale home half dead, and half mad, and begged the King to take pity on him. So the King sent a message to Lord Kincardin, ordering him to go home. This Lord Athol himself told me afterwards. 1674.

Towards the end of summer the battle of Seneff was fought; in the beginning of which the French had a great advantage; but the Prince of Conde pushed it too far: and the Prince of Orange engaged the whole army with so much bravery, that it appeared that the Dutch army was now brought to another state than he had found it in. He charged himself in many places, with too great a neglect The battle of Seneff.

1674. of his person, considering how much depended upon it. He once was engaged among a body of French, thinking they were his own men, and bid them charge: they told him they had no more powder: he, perceiving they were none of his men, with great presence of mind got out of their hands, and brought up a body of his army to charge them, who quickly routed them. The action in the afternoon recovered the loss that was made in the morning, and possessed all the world, the Prince of Conde in particular, with a great esteem of the Prince's conduct and courage. I will say little of foreign affairs, because there are many copious accounts of them in print; and I can add little to them. With relation to the battle of Seneff, the Prince himself told me, that the day before he saw a capuchin that came over from the French army, and had a long conversation with Zouch, the Emperor's general, who behaved himself so ill on the day of battle, that the Prince said to his son at night, that his father had acted so basely, that, if it had not been for the respect he bore the Emperor, he would have shot him through the head. He was disgraced on this: but the success of the campaign was lost by it. They had a noble army; and might have done much more than they did. Grave was retaken in the end of the campaign: so the Provinces were now safe on that side. And the Prince had gained so much credit with the states, that he was now more than ever the master of their counsels.

Arlington went to Holland.

The alarm that those discoveries from Holland gave our court, made Lord Arlington offer at one trial more for recovering the King's confidence. He offered to go over to Holland with the Earl of Ossory: for they fancied they had a great interest in the Prince, by their having married two of Beverardt's daughters; and the Prince had always a particular affection to Lord Ossory. Lord Arlington said, he would go to the bottom of every thing with the Prince, and did not doubt but he would bring him into an entire dependance on his uncle, and particularly dispose him to a general peace; on which the King was much set, it being earnestly desired by the French. It was likewise believed, that he had leave to give the Prince the hope of marrying her, whom he afterwards married. The Duke told me, he knew nothing of the matter; he had heard Lord Arlington had talked as if the managing that was his chief errand;

and, upon that, he had asked the King, who assured him that he had a positive order not so much as to speak of that matter. Yet, whether notwithstanding this he had a secret order, or whether he did it without order, he certainly talked a great deal of it to the Prince as a thing which he might depend on, if he would in all other things be governed by the King. 1674.

Sir William Temple had been sent over the summer before as ambassador; and his chief instructions were, to dispose all people's minds, chiefly the Prince's, to a peace. But the Prince had avoided the seeing him till the end of the campaign. Lord Arlington had thrown him off when he went into the French interest; and Temple was too proud to bear contempt, or forget such an injury soon. He was a vain man, much blown up in his own conceit, which he shewed too indecently on all occasions. He had a true judgment in affairs, and very good principles with relation to government; but in nothing else. He seemed to think that things were as they are from all eternity; at least he thought religion was fit only for the mob. He was a great admirer of the sect of Confucius in China, who were atheists themselves, but left religion to the rabble. He was a corrupter of all that came near him: and he delivered himself up wholly to study ease and pleasure. He entered into a close friendship with Lord Danby, who depended much on him, and was directed in all his notions as to foreign affairs by him; for no man ever came into the ministry that understood the affairs of Europe so little as he did. Temple sent ambassador to Holland.

I will henceforth leave the account of our affairs beyond sea wholly to Temple's Letters, in which they are very truly and fully set forth. And in them it appears, that the Prince of Orange, even while so young, and so little practised in affairs, had so clear and so just a view of them, that nothing could misguide him; and that the bad prospect he had from the ill condition of affairs did not frighten him into accepting of any mean or base conditions of peace. His fidelity to his country, and the public interest, was so firm, that no private considerations of his own could bias him, or indeed be much considered by him. These Letters give him a character that is so sublime, as well as so genuine, that it raises him much above all the performances of rhetoric or panegyric. I will mention very little that is to be

1674. found in them. Holland was in great expectation, when they saw two such men as the Earls of Ossory and Arlington come over, together with the Earl of Danby's eldest son, though the last only made the shew a little greater. Lord Arlington for some days insisted vehemently on the Prince's dismissing Du Moulin, who had discovered the secrets of his office to him: in this the Prince complied; and Du Moulin was sent to one of their plantations. As to all other things, Lord Arlington talked to him in the strain of a governor; and seemed to presume too much on his youth, and on his want of experience. But, instead of prevailing on the Prince, he lost him so entirely, that all his endeavours afterwards could never beget any confidence in him. So he came back; and reckoned this was his last essay, which succeeding so ill, he ever after withdrew from all business. He made himself easy to the King, who continued to be still very kind to him.

1675. Affairs in England. At Easter a piece of private news came from France, which the Duke was much delighted with, because it did an honour to the order of the Jesuits, to whom he had devoted himself. The new confessor had so pressed the King of France in Lent to send away his mistress, Montespan, that he prevailed at last: she was sent to a nunnery; and so the King received the sacrament, as was said, in a state of contrition. This was writ to the Duke, and set out with such circumstances, as the French usually do every thing that relates to their King. The Duke was much pleased with it: he told me, he had related it with all its circumstances to the King in the Dutchess of Portsmouth's hearing; and said, they both heard it with great uneasiness, and were much out of countenance at it. The Duke himself was then in the best temper I had ever known him in: he was reading Nurembergius on the difference of things temporal and things eternal; and we had much good discourse on that subject. Lord Arlington ran so much in his mind, that he once said to me, If Lord Arlington would read that book, he would not meddle in so many affairs as he did. I saw he was very jealous of him, and of his interest in the King. Thus I have given a full account of my acquaintance with the Duke.

I was examined by I lost his favour soon after this: for in April, 1675, a session of parliament was held, as preparatory to one that

was designed next winter, in which money was to be asked, but none was now asked; it being only called to heal all breaches, and to beget a good understanding between the King and his people. The House of Commons fell upon Duke Lauderdale; and those who knew what had passed between him and me, moved that I should be examined before a committee. I was brought before them; I told them how I had been commanded out of town; but though that was illegal, yet, since it had been let fall, it was not insisted on. I was next examined concerning the design of arming the Irish papists: I said, I, as well as others, had heard him say, he wished the presbyterians in Scotland would rebel, that he might bring over the Irish papists to cut their throats. I was next examined concerning the design of bringing a Scotch army into England: I desired to be excused, as to what had passed in private discourse, to which I thought I was not bound to answer, unless it were high treason. They pressed me long, and I would give them no other answer: so they all concluded, that I knew great matters, and reported this specially to the House. Upon that I was sent for, and brought before the House. I stood upon it as I had done at the committee, that I was not bound to answer; that nothing had passed that was high treason; and as to all other things, I did not think myself bound to discover them. I said farther, I knew Duke Lauderdale was apt to say things in a heat, which he did not intend to do: and, since he had used myself so ill, I thought myself the more obliged not to say any thing that looked like revenge for what I had met with from him: I was brought four times to the bar; at last I was told, the House thought they had a right to examine into every thing that concerned the safety of the nation, as well as into matters of treason; and they looked on me as bound to satisfy them; otherwise they would make me feel the weight of their heavy displeasure, as one that concealed what they thought was necessary to be known. Upon this I yielded, and gave an account of the discourse formerly mentioned. They laid great weight on this, and renewed their address against Duke Lauderdale.

1675. the House of Commons.

I was much blamed for what I had done. Some, to make it look the worse, added, that I had been his chaplain, which was false; and that I had been much obliged to him, though

1675. I had never received any real obligation from him, but had done him great services, for which I had been very unworthily requited: yet the thing had an ill appearance, as the disclosing of what had passed in confidence; though I make it a great question, how far even that ought to bind a man, when the designs are very wicked, and the person continued still in the same post and capacity of executing them. I have told the matter as it was, and must leave myself to the censure of the reader. My love to my country, and my private friendships, carried me perhaps too far; especially since I had declared much against clergymen's meddling in secular affairs, and yet had run myself so deep in them.

This broke me quite with the court; and in that respect proved a great blessing to me: it brought me out of many temptations; the greatest of all being the kindness that was growing towards me from the Duke, which might have involved me into great difficulties, as it did expose me to much censure; all which went off upon this occasion; and I applied myself to my studies, and my function, being then settled preacher at the Rolls, and soon after lecturer of St. Clements. I lived many years under the protection of Sir Harbottle Grimstone, master of the Rolls, who continued steady in his favour to me, though the King sent Secretary Williamson to desire him to dismiss me. He said he was an old man, fitting himself for another world, and he found my ministry useful to him; so he prayed that he might be excused in that. He was a long, and very kind patron to me. I continued ten years in that post, free from all necessities: and, I thank God, that was all I desired: but, since I was so long happy in so quiet a retreat, it seems but a just piece of gratitude, that I should give some account of that venerable old man.

Sir Harbottle Grimstone's character.

He was descended from a long-lived family; for his great grandfather lived till he was ninety-eight, his grandfather to eighty-six, and his father to seventy-eight, and himself to eighty-two. He had to the last a great soundness of health, of memory, and of judgment. He was bred to the study of the law, being a younger brother. Upon his elder brother's death he threw it up; but, falling in love with Judge Crook's daughter, the father would not bestow her on him unless he would return to his studies; which he did

with great success. That Judge was one of those who delivered his judgment in the chequer-chamber against the ship-money, which he did with a long and learned argument; and Sir Harbottle's father, who served in parliament for Essex, lay long in prison, because he would not pay the loan-money. Thus both his family, and his wife's, were zealous for the interest of their country. In the beginning of the long parliament he was a great assertor of the laws; and inveighed severely against all that had been concerned in the former illegal oppression. His principle was, that allegiance and protection were mutual obligations; and that the one went for the other. He thought the law was the measure of both; and that when a legal protection was denied to one that paid a legal allegiance, the subject had a right to defend himself. He was much troubled, when preachers asserted a divine right of legal government. He thought it had no other effect but to give an ill impression of them as aspiring men: nobody was convinced by it. It inclined their hearers rather to suspect all they said besides. It looked like the sacrificing their country to their own preferment; and an encouraging of princes to turn tyrants: yet when the long parliament engaged in the league with Scotland, he would not swear to the covenant; and he discontinued sitting in the House till it was laid aside: then he came back, and joined with Hollis, and the other presbyterians, in a high opposition to the independents, and to Cromwell in particular, as was told in the first book; and he was one of the secluded members that were forced out of the House. He followed afterwards the practice of the law; but was always looked upon as one who wished well to the ancient government of England: so he was chosen speaker of that House, that called home the King; and had so great a merit in that whole affair, that he was soon after, without any application of his own, made master of the rolls: in which post he continued to his death with a high reputation, as he well deserved; for he was a just judge; very slow, and ready to hear every thing that was offered, without passion or partiality. I thought his only fault was, that he was too rich: and yet he gave yearly great sums in charity, discharging many prisoners by paying their debts. He was a very pious and devout man, and spent every day, at least an hour in the

1675.

1675. morning, and as much at night, in prayer and meditation; and even in winter when he was obliged to be very early on the bench, he took care to rise so soon, that he had always the command of that time which he gave to those exercises. He was much sharpened against popery: but had always a tenderness to the dissenters, though he himself continued still in the communion of the church. His second wife, whom I knew, was niece to the great Sir Francis Bacon; and was the last heir of that family. She had all the high notions for the church and the crown in which she had been bred; but was the humblest, the devoutest, and best-tempered person I ever knew of that sort. It was really a pleasure to hear her talk of religion, she did it with so much elevation and force. She was always very plain in her clothes, and went oft to gaols to consider the wants of the prisoners, and relieve or discharge them; and, by the meanness of her dress, she passed but for a servant trusted with the charities of others. When she was travelling in the country, as she drew near a village, she often ordered her coach to stay behind till she had walked about it, giving orders for the instruction of the children, and leaving liberally for that end. With two such persons I spent several of my years very happily; but I now return to the session of parliament.

Danby attacked, but in vain.

In the House of Commons, the business against Duke Lauderdale was taken up warmly at three several times; and three several addresses were made to the King against him. The King's answer was, that he would protect no man against law and justice; but would condemn none without special matter well made out. There was no money offered; so addresses were feeble things. The next attempt was against the Earl of Danby, who had begun to invert the usual methods of the Exchequer. But the majority were for him; so that charge came to nothing: only, those who begun it formed a party against him, that grew in conclusion to be too hard for him. He took a different method from those who were in the ministry before him. They had taken off the great and leading men; and left the herd as a despised company, who could do nothing, because they had none to head them. But Lord Danby reckoned that the major number was the surer game: so he neglected the great men, who he thought raised their price too high; and reck-

oned, that he could gain ten ordinary men, cheaper than one of those. This might have succeeded with him, if they that did lead his party had been wise and skilful men: but he seemed to be jealous of all such, as if they might gain too much credit with the King. The chief men that he made use of, were of so low a size, that they were baffled in every debate. So that many, who were inclined enough to vote in all obedience, yet were ashamed to be in the vote on the side that was manifestly run down in the debate. 1675.

The ablest man of his party was Seymour, who was the first speaker of the House of Commons that was not bred to the law. He was a man of great birth, being the elder branch of the Seymour family; and was a graceful man, bold and quick: but he had a sort of a pride so peculiar to himself, that I never saw any thing like it: he had neither shame nor decency with it; he was violent against the court, till he forced himself into good posts: he was the most assuming speaker that ever sat in the chair; he knew the House, and every man in it so well, that by looking about he could tell the fate of any question: so, if any thing was put when the court party was not well gathered together, he would have held the House from doing any thing, by a wilful mistaking or mistating the question. By that he gave time to those who were appointed for that mercenary work, to go about and gather in all their party, and he would discern when they had got the majority; and then he would very fairly state the question, when he saw he was sure to carry it. Seymour's character.

A great many of the court grew to be so uneasy, especially when they saw the King was under the influence of French and popish counsels, that they were glad to be out of the way at critical times. On some occasions they would venture to vote against the court: of which, the memorable answer of Harvey's, who was treasurer to the Queen, was a noted instance. He was one whom the King loved personally; and yet upon a great occasion he voted against that which the King desired: so the King chid him severely for it. Next day, another important question falling in, he voted as the King would have him; so the King took notice of it at night, and said, You were not against me to-day: he answered, No sir, I was against my conscience to-day. This was so drily delivered, that the King seemed pleased with

1675. it: and it was much talked of. While things went thus in the House of Commons, there was the greatest and longest debate in the House of Lords that has been in all my time: they sat upon it often till midnight.

Debates concerning a test.

It was about the test that Lord Danby had contrived, as was formerly mentioned. Lord Danby, and Lord Finch, and some of the bishops, were the chief arguers of it. They said it was necessary that a method should be found out to discriminate the good subjects from the bad: we had been lately involved in a long civil war, occasioned by the ill principles that some had taken up with relation to government: it was fit to prevent the return of such miseries: the King had granted a very full indemnity, and had observed it religiously: but there was no reason, while so much of the old leaven still remained, to leave the nation exposed to men of such principles: it was not fit to make a parliament perpetual: yet that was a less evil than to run the hazard of a bad election; especially when jealousies and fears had been blowed about the nation: a good constitution was to be preserved by all prudent methods: no man was to be pressed to take this test: but as they who were not willing to come into such an engagement, ought to have the modesty to be contented with the favour and connivance of the government, so, if that did not teach them good manners, it might be fit to use severer methods. To all this great opposition was made. It was plain, the Duke did not like it: but the King was so set on it, that he did not declare himself against it. But all the papists were against it: they thought the bringing any test in practice, would certainly bring on one that would turn them out of the House. The Lords Shaftsbury, Buckingham, Hollis, Hallifax, and all those who were thought the country party, opposed this mightily. They thought there ought to be no tests, beyond the oath of allegiance, upon the elections to parliament: that it being the great privilege of Englishmen, that they were not to be taxed but by their representatives; it was therefore thought a disinheriting men of the main part of their birthright, to do any thing that should shut them out from their votes in electing: all tests in public assemblies were thought dangerous, and contrary to public liberty: for if a parliament thought any law inconvenient for the good of the whole, they must be supposed still free to alter it: and no previous

limitation could bind up their legislature: a great deal was said, to shew that the peace of the world was best secured by good laws and good government: and that oaths or test were no security: the scrupulous might be fettered by them: yet the bulk of the world would boldly take any test, and as boldly break through it; of which the late times had given large proofs: the matter of this test was very doubtful: for, though generally speaking, the King's person and his power were not to be distinguished, yet that was not universally true: an infant king, or a lunatic, were exceptions: as also a King in his enemies' hands, which was the case of Henry VI. for whose power his own party fought even against his person: so an exception was to be understood; otherwise the proposition, that affirmed it was a traitorous position to separate them, was not true: nor could it be reasonable to bind up men against alterations: every new law was an alteration: it was not easy to define how far the power of making alterations might go, and where it must stop: these things were best left at large: upon the whole matter, as they were against any parliamentary test, so they were more particularly against this. Lord Shaftsbury distinguished himself more in this session than ever he had done before. He spoke once a whole hour, to shew the inconvenience of condemning all resistance upon any pretence whatsoever. He said, it might be proper to lay such ties upon those who served in the militia, and in corporations, because there was still a superior power in parliament to declare the extent of the oath: but it might be of very ill consequence to lay it on a parliament; since there might be cases, though so far out of view that it was hard to suppose them, in which he believed no man would say it was not lawful to resist. If a king would make us a province, and tributary to France, and subdue the nation by a French army, or to the papal authority, must we be bound in that case tamely to submit? Upon which he said many things, that did cut to the quick. And yet, though his words were watched, so that it was resolved to have sent him to the Tower, if any one word had fallen from him that had made him liable to such a censure, he spoke both with so much boldness and so much caution, that though he provoked the court extremely, no advantage could be taken against him. The court carried every question in favour of the test, though

1675.

1675. with great opposition, and a protestation made upon every step that was carried. So that the bill was in a fair way to have passed: and very probably it would have passed in the House of Commons, when by an unlooked-for emergency the session was broke.

A dispute about appeals and privileges. Ever since the end of King James the First's reign, petitions of appeal were brought to the House of Lords from decrees in chancery. This rose from a parity of reason, because writs of error lay from the courts of law to the House of Lords; and since the business of the chancery grew to be so extended and comprehensive, it was not thought safe to leave it wholly to the lord chancellor's conscience; so this practice, though so lately begun, grew on by degrees to be the main business of the House of Lords. A petition of appeal was brought against a member of the House of Commons. The Lords received it, and made an order upon it. The member being served with it, brought it into the House of Commons; and they voted it a breach of privilege, for the Lords to meddle with one of their House. The Lords on the other hand said, they were bound to do justice to all; and no privilege could lie against that: and, since they never sat but when the Commons sat likewise, if a privilege from that House could stop their proceedings, there must be a failure in justice; and since no privilege was ever pretended in the case of a writ of error, it could not lie against an appeal: so they resolved to proceed in the cause. The Commons passed a vote against any lawyers that should plead at the Lords' bar in this cause. But the Lords commanded the council to go on, with which they complied. And as they went from the Lords' bar, they were, by an order from the House of Commons, sent to the Tower. But they were, by another order from the Lords, set at liberty: so the two houses being as it were at war, it was necessary to put an end to the session.

The sessions broke up on it. This was very uneasy to the court; for they saw it was a very sure method to break a session of parliament, every time that it was taken up. I am not sure if this was laid, or if it happened by accident. Lord Shaftsbury said, it was laid by himself; but others assured me, it happened in course, though it produced great effects: for there never was a strength in the court, to raise this debate of the test in any subsequent session. And as this made the court ap-

prehend, they might by the prosecution of the same appeal lose the next session, since the prorogation did only discontinue parliamentary proceedings, but not judiciary ones; so they feared this might go so far as to force a dissolution of the present parliament: to which the court would be very hardly brought, after they had practised so long upon the members, and knew them all so well. 1675.

In this session, on a day that grievances were to be gone upon, Grimstone said, that considering the extent of privilege, he looked on a standing parliament as the greatest grievance of the nation, so many men being exempted from justice and from the demands of their creditors, for so long and so indefinite a time: this motion was let fall at that time, but it was not forgot; and it was likely to be taken up, when new opportunities should be offered. The summer went over without any considerable accidents at home.

A new session met next winter; and at the first opening it the King laid before the Commons the great difficulties he was in by the anticipations of his revenues. It was then generally thought, that the King was in such straits, that, if money could not be obtained, he must turn to other counsels and to other ministers. The debate went high in the committee of the whole House. It was offered on the one side to shew, that the King had not enough in his hands to maintain the government, and to secure the nation; though our neutrality at that time made trade flow in upon us, so that the customs rose higher than ever. On the other hand it was said, that if anticipations were once admitted as a reason for a supply, the court would never want that reason; it was fitter to examine by whose means, or on what design those anticipations were made: at last the question was put, and, the vote being then stated, and the previous questions being then put, whether the main question should be then put, or not, the votes were equal: so Sir Charles Harbord, who was in the chair, gave it for putting the main question; but some of the country side coming in between the two questions, the main question was lost by two or three: so near was the court to the carrying so great a point. Harbord was much blamed for his rashness; he said, the duty of the chair was always to set matters forward, and so he ought to have given it for putting the main question; and if the same equality had continued, he said he would

A session of parliament.

1675. have given it for the court. He was a very rich and covetous man, who knew England well, and his parts were very quick about him in that great age, being past eighty. A lively repartee was made by his own son to him in the debate; he had said, the right way of dealing with the King, and of gaining him to them, was to lay their hands on their purses, and to deal roundly with him: so his son said he seconded his motion; but he meant, that they should lay their hands on their purses, as he himself did, and hold them well shut, that no money should go out of them. The Earl of Danby was much disappointed at this; yet he took heart, since it was brought so near, that he reckoned he would make the next session sure. The petition of appeal that had broke the former session, was now brought on again before the Lords: the court tried their whole strength to keep it off, till they saw what might be expected from the Commons. So, upon the miscarriage of the great vote in the House of Commons, the Lords went on upon the petition; and the Commons opposing them vigorously, as before, it was visible that the parliament must be prorogued.

The characters of some parliament men.

Upon this it was proposed in the House of Lords to address the King for dissolving the present parliament; it was manifest the two Houses could no longer maintain the correspondence that was necessary: in a new parliament this must fall to the ground; but it could not while this lasted. It was said, a standing parliament changed the constitution of England. The King did no more consult with his people, nor know them; but he had now a cabal of single persons to deal with. The people were now cut off from their liberty of electing; and so had no more a true representative. It was said, that a parliament of a long continuance would be either an engine to sell the liberties of the country; or would, by rendering themselves popular, join with the people against the crown. In either case it was like to be destructive to the constitution. So it was moved, that an address should be made to the King for dissolving the parliament; and, to the wonder of all men, the Duke joined in it. The majority of the temporal lords were for it: but the bench of bishops was against it; and so it was not carried. The thing became the universal subject of discourse. It was infused into the members of the House of Commons, that if they would not be more

tractable, and help the King out of his necessities, he was sure a new parliament would give him money, and make him easy; and that the rather for having dissolved them. This wrought on many of them, who had been chosen while the nation was in a fit, or rather a fury of loyalty. They knew they could never hope to be chosen again. Many of them were ruined in their fortunes, and lived upon their privileges, and upon their pensions. They had got it among them for a maxim, which contributed not a little to our preservation while we were in such hands, that as they must not give the King too much at a time, lest there should be no more use for them, so they were to take care not to starve the court, lest they themselves should be starved by that means. They were indeed, generally, both against popery and France; and, to redeem their credit for the money that they were ready to give somewhat too lavishly, they said, when they went into their countries, that it was on design to fix the King to an English interest, and the protestant religion. And they talked so high on those heads, that the court itself could not manage them, when any thing relating to these came before them. Some of them were high for the prerogative; others high for the church; and all the mercenary men were careful of themselves. In opposition to these a great party was formed, who declared more heartily for the protestant religion and for the interest of England. The Duke of Buckingham and the Earl of Shaftsbury opened many of their eyes, and let them know the designs of the court; and indeed they were then so visible, that there was enough seen, without such secret intelligence, to convince the most incredulous. Sir William Coventry had the greatest credit of any man in the House; he never meddled personally with any minister; he had a perfect understanding of affairs; so he laid open the errors of the government with the more authority, because he mixed no passion nor private resentments with it. His brother usually answered him with much life in a repartee, but not with the weight and force with which he spoke. Colonel Birch was a man of a peculiar character: he had been a carrier at first, and retained still, even to an affectation, the clownishness of his education. He got up in the progress of the war to be a colonel, and to be concerned in the excise. And at the restoration he was found

1675.

1675. to be so useful in managing the excise, that he was put in a good post. He was the roughest and boldest speaker in the House; and talked in the language and phrases of a carrier, but with a beauty and eloquence that was always acceptable. I heard Coventry say, he was the best speaker to carry a popular assembly before him that he had ever known. He spoke always with much life and heat; but judgment was not his talent. Waller was the delight of the House; and even at eighty he said the liveliest things of any among them: he was only concerned to say that which should make him be applauded; but he never laid the business of the House to heart, being a vain and empty, though a witty man. He deserves the character of being one of the great refiners of our language and poetry. He was, for near sixty years, one of the best of all our writers that way. The two men of quality that were the most considered were, the Lord Russell and the Lord Cavendish: Lord Russell was a man of great candour, and of a general reputation; universally beloved, and trusted; of a generous and obliging temper. He had given such proofs of an undaunted courage, and of an unshaken firmness, that I never knew any man have so entire a credit in the nation as he had. He quickly got out of some of the disorders into which the court had drawn him, and ever after that his life was unblemished in all respects. He had from his first education an inclination to favour the nonconformists, and wished the laws could have been made easier to them, or they more pliant to the law. He was a slow man, and of little discourse; but he had a true judgment, when he considered things at his own leisure: his understanding was not defective, but his virtues were so eminent, that they would have more than balanced real defects, if any had been found in the other. Lord Cavendish, afterwards Earl, and then Duke of Devonshire, was too much a libertine both in principle and practice. He went off from the court at first upon resentments for some disappointments there: he was ambitious, and had the courage of a hero, with an unusual proportion both of wit and knowledge: he had a great softness in his exterior deportment. Littleton and Powle were the men that laid the matters of the house with the greatest dexterity and care. Powle was very learned in precedents, and parliament journals,

which goes a great way in their debates: and when he had time to prepare himself, he was a clear and strong speaker. Littleton was the ablest and the vehementest arguer of them all. He commonly lay quiet till the end of a debate; and he often ended it, speaking with a strain of conviction and authority, that was not easily resisted. I lived the very next door to him for several years; and we spent a great deal of our time every day together. He told me all their management; and commonly, when he was to put his whole strength to argue any point, he used to talk it over with me, and to set me to object all that I could against him. He lived wholly in London; so matters were most in his hands during the intervals of parliament: and by his means it was, that I arrived at such knowledge of their intrigues. He was a wise and worthy man, had studied much modern history, and the present state and interest of Europe. Sir Thomas Lee was a man that valued himself upon artifice and cunning, in which he was a great master, without being out of countenance when it was discovered. Vaughan, the chief justice's son, was a man of great integrity, had much pride, but did great service. These were the chief men that preserved the nation from a very deceitful and practising court, and from a corrupt House of Commons: and by their skill and firmness, they, from a small number who began the opposition, grew at last to be the majority. 1675.

All this I thought fit to lay together, and to fill as it were an empty place in my history; for, as our main business lay in preparing for or managing a session of parliament, so we had now a long interval of above a year, between this session in winter 1675, and the next session of parliament, which was not till the spring in 1677. The French were much set on procuring a peace; and they, seeing how much the parliament was set on engaging the King in the alliance, prevailed with him to discontinue the session; for which no doubt he had round sums of money sent to him. 1676. A long interval between the sessions of Parliament.

About this time Lockhart the ambassador in France died. The farther he saw into the designs of the court he grew the more uneasy in the post he was in, though he acted in it with great spirit and resolution, both with relation to his own master and to the French King; of which I will set down two passages, that may be very instructive to ambas- An account of some passages of Lockhart's courage in France.

1676. sadors. In this time of neutrality the French privateers took many English ships, pretending they were Dutch only with English passes. One of these was taken by a privateer, that, as was believed, Pepys, then secretary to the English admiralty, and in great favour with the Duke, had built, and as was said, out of the King's stores. The merchants proved in council that the ship was English: so Lockhart had an order to demand her; and he pressed it so effectually, that an order was sent from the court of France to discharge her. But before that was executed, the King was prevailed on by Pepys to tell the French ambassador that he did not concern himself in that ship: he believed merchants were rogues, and could bring witnesses to prove whatsoever they had a mind to; so the court of France might do what they pleased in that matter. This was writ to Versailles a day or two after the former order was sent; but upon it a new one went to Dunkirk, where the ship lay, to stop her. This came before she could get out. So Lockhart being informed of that, went to court and complained heavily. He was told what the King himself had said about it. He answered resolutely, that the King spoke to them only by him. Yet he wrote upon this to the court of England desiring to be recalled, since he could serve no longer with honour after he had been so disowned. Upon this the King wrote him a letter with his own pen, excusing the matter the best he could, and justified him in what he had done: and upon that secret orders were sent, and the ship was discharged. The other was a higher point, considering the bigotry of the King of France. Lockhart had a French popish servant, who was dying, and sent for the sacrament; upon which it was brought with the procession ordinary in such cases. Lockhart, hearing of this, ordered his gates to be shut: and upon that many were inflamed, and were running to force his gates; but he ordered all his family to stand to their arms, and if any force was offered to fire. There was a great noise made of this; but no force was offered. He resolved to complain first; and so went to court and expostulated upon it. He said, his house was his master's house; and here a public triumph was attempted on his master's religion, and affronts were offered him: he said if a priest had brought the sacrament pri-

vately, he would have connived at it; but he asked reparation for so public an injury. The King of France seemed to be highly displeased at this, calling it the greatest indignity that had ever been done to his God during his reign. Yet the point did not bear arguing; so Lockhart said nothing to that. When Lockhart went from him, Pomponne followed him, sent after him by the King, and told him he would force the King to suffer none of his subjects to serve him. He answered, he would order his coachman to drive the quicker to Paris to prevent that, and left Pomponne to guess the meaning. As soon as he came to his house, he ordered all his French servants to be immediately paid off and dismissed. The court of England was forced to justify him in all this matter. A public letter of thanks was writ to him upon it; and the court of France thought fit to digest it: but the French King looked on him ever after with great coldness, if not with aversion. Soon after that he fell into a languishing, which after some months carried him off. I have ever looked on him as the greatest man that his country produced in this age next to Sir Robert Murray. 1676.

Management in France.

The Earl of Danby began now to talk against the French interest with open mouth. Rouvigny staid but two years in England; for though he served his master's interests but too well, yet the popish party could not bear the want of a chapel in the French ambassador's house. So he was recalled, and Courtin was sent in his room. Before he parted, he talked roundly with Lord Danby; he said he was going into popular interests against those of his master's honour, who having engaged the King of France in the war, and being forced to leave him to fight it out alone, ought not to turn against him; especially since the King of France referred every thing to him as the arbiter and mediator of the peace: he remembered him of the old Duke of Buckingham's fate, who thought to become popular by breaking the Spanish match, and it was his ruin: he said the King of France was the King's best friend and truest ally; and if he made the King forsake him and depend on his parliament, being so tempered as they were then, both the King and he might come to repent it when it was too late: I had all this from himself. To this Lord Danby replied, that he spoke as a faithful servant to his

1676. own master, and that he himself would act as a faithful servant to his master. Courtin spoke a great deal to the same purpose in the Prince of Conde's presence when I had the honour to wait on him. He told me there was a strange reverse in things: Lord Danby was at that time suffering for being in the French interest; and Lord Montague was popular as being against it; whereas, to his knowledge, during his employment in England, Lord Danby was an enemy to their interest as much as Lord Montague was for it. I can say nothing as to one point, whether any great sums came over from France all this while, or not. Some watched the rising and falling of the exchange, by which men skilful in those matters can judge when any great sum passes from one kingdom to another, either in specie or by bill; but they could never find out any thing to make them conclude it was done. Lord Montague told me he tried often to get into that secret but in vain: he often said to the King, that, if he would trust him, he could make better bargains for him than others had made; but the King never answered him a word on that head: and he believed, that what sums soever came over, they were only to the Dutchess of Portsmouth or to the King's privy purse; and that the French ambassador had the sole managing of that matter, the King perhaps not being willing to trust any of his own subjects with so important and so dangerous a secret. In all companies the Earl of Danby was declaring openly against France and popery. And the see of London falling then void by Henchman's death, he brought Compton, brother to the Earl of Northampton, to succeed him. He was made bishop of Oxford upon Crew's being promoted to Duresme.

The character of some bishops.

Compton carried arms for some years; when he was past thirty, he took orders: he was an humble and modest man; he applied himself more to his function, than bishops had commonly done: he went much about his diocese, and preached and confirmed in many places. His preaching was without much life or learning; for he had not gone through his studies with the exactness that was fitting. He was a great patron of the converts from popery, and of those protestants whom the bad usage they were beginning to meet with in France drove over to us: and by these means he came to have a great reputation. He was making many complaints to the King, and often in council, of the

insolence of the papists, and of Coleman's in particular: so that the King ordered the Duke to dismiss Coleman out of his service: yet he continued still in his confidence. But with these good qualities Compton was a weak man, wilful, and strangely wedded to a party. He was a property to Lord Danby, and was turned by him as he pleased. The Duke hated him, but Lord Danby persuaded both the King and him, that as his heat did no great hurt to any person, so the giving way to it helped to lay the jealousies of the church party. About a year after that, Sheldon dying, Compton was persuaded that Lord Danby had tried with all his strength to promote him to Canterbury, though that was never once intended. There were none of the order, that were in any sort fitted to fill that see, whom the court could trust. 1676.

Sancroft, dean of St. Paul's, was raised to it. He was a man of solemn deportment, had a sullen gravity in his looks, and was considerably learned: he had put on a monastic strictness, and lived abstracted from company. These things, together with his living unmarried, and his being fixed in the old maxims of high loyalty, and a superstitious valuing of little things, made the court conclude, that he was a man, who might be entirely gained to serve all their ends; or, at least, that he would be an unactive speculative man, and give them little opposition in any thing that they might attempt, when they had more promising opportunities. He was a dry, cold man, reserved and peevish; so that none loved him, and few esteemed him: yet the high church party were well pleased with his promotion.

As Lord Danby thus raised his creatures in the church, so he got all men turned out of their places that did not entirely depend on him; and went on in his credit with the King, still assuring him, that if he would leave things to his conduct, he would certainly bring about the whole cavalier party again to him: and such was the corruption and poverty of that party, that, had it not been that French and popish counsels were so visible in the whole course of our affairs, he had very probably gained them to have raised the King's power, and to have extirpated the dissenters, and to have brought things very near to the state they were in, in King Charles the First's time, before the war.

1676.

The projects of the papists.

All this while the papists were not idle: they tried their strength with the King to get the parliament dissolved; in which their hopes carried them so far, that Coleman drew a declaration for justifying it. Their design in this was, once to divide the King and his people; for they reckoned the new parliament would not be so easy to him as this was. For how angry soever this was at him, and he sometimes at them, yet they saw that a severe act against popery, or some steps made against France, would dispose them to forget all quarrels, and to give money; and as the King always wanted that, and loved to be easy, so the prospect of it was ever in his view. They feared, that at some time or other, this might make him both sacrifice popery, and forsake France. So they took all possible methods to engage the King in a more entire dependance on France, and a distrust of his own people. They were labouring for a general peace in all courts, where they had any interest. The Prince of Orange's obstinacy was the common subject of their complaints. Lord Shaftsbury tried, upon the Duke's concurring in the vote for an address to have the parliament dissolved, if he could separate him from the Earl of Danby. And he sent a message to him by the Lord Stafford, that his voting as he did in that matter, had gained much on many who were formerly his enemies: he wished he would use his interest with the King to get that brought about; and he durst undertake, that a new parliament should be more inclinable to grant the papists a toleration than they would ever find this would prove.

Coleman's intrigues.

But the Duke and Lord Danby were too firmly united to be easily divided; for whatever Lord Danby gave out, he made the Duke believe that all that he intended would really turn to his service. Coleman was very busy in writing many letters to all places, but chiefly to the court of France. He was in all his dispatches setting forth the good state of the Duke's affairs, and the great strength he was daily gaining. He was either very sanguine, if he believed this himself, or very bold in offering to impose it so positively on others. He was always full of assurances, that, if a peace could be brought about, so that the King of France was set at liberty to assist them with his purse and his force, they were never in such hopes of succeeding in the great design of rooting out this pestilent heresy, that

had so long overrun these northern kingdoms. He had a friend, one Sir William Throgmorton, of whom he intended to make great use: he and his wife had prevailed with him and his lady to change their religion; and so he sent them over to France, recommending him to the King's confessor, F. Ferrier, as a man that might do them great service, if he could be made one of theirs. So Ferrier, looking on him as a man of importance, applied himself to turn him, which was soon done; and the confessor, to raise the value of his convert, spoke of him to the King in such a strain, that he was much considered. When his lady abjured, the Duke of Orleans led her up to the altar: he took great state on him, and soon spent all he had. He was a busy man between the two courts: but before he got into any considerable post, Ferrier died, and the new confessor did not take such care of him as his predecessor had done; so he was forced to quit his high living, and retire to a private house, and he sent his lady into a monastery. Yet he continued still to be Coleman's agent and correspondent. He went often to see an English lady, that was of their religion, Lady Brown; and being one day with her, he received a deep wound by a knife stuck into his thigh, that pierced the great artery. Whether the lady did it to defend herself, or he to shew the violence of his passion, was not known; it was not possible to stop the bleeding, yet the lady would have him carried out of her house. He died in the house of one Hollman, an eminent man of their religion, then at Paris. The whole matter was carried off with such secrecy, that Lockhart, then at Paris, could never penetrate farther into it. I had this from his lady after his death. 1676.

Coleman quickly found out another correspondent, that was more useful to him than he whom he lost could ever have been, F. St. German, a Jesuit, who was sent over with the Dutchess, and passed for her confessor, though I have been assured that was a mistake. He had all the heat of his order in him, and was apt to talk very boldly. I was sometimes in company with him. He was complained of in council, by the Bishop of London, for some practice on one that was come over a convert, whom he was between threatening and persuasion working on, in order to the sending him back. This came to be discovered; upon which he fled, and

1676. on him Coleman fixed for his chief correspondent. Howard was about this time by Cardinal Altieri's means promoted to be a cardinal: and upon that, the King and Duke sent compliments to Rome. This opened a negotiation with that court, that was put in the hands of the internuncio at Brussels: so it was proposed, that a sum of money should be given the King, if in return of that some suitable favours for those of their religion could be obtained. Coleman was sent over by the Duke to Brussels to treat about it, none being in the secret but the Lord Arundell; yet, as he understood it, the King himself knew of it. When he went thither, he found the sum offered was so small, and the conditions demanded were so high, that he made no progress in the negotiation. Whatsoever Coleman did in the main business, he took good care of himself: all his letters were full of their being able to do nothing for want of money; and he made the French ambassador believe, he could do his master great service, if he was well supplied: he got once 2500 guineas from him, to gain his master some friends; but he applied it all to furnish out his own expense: he was at that time so lifted up, that he had a mind to pass for the head of the party; and of this I will give one instance, in which I myself had a share.

Sir Philip Terwhit, a papist, had married a zealous protestant, who suspecting his religion, charged him with it; but he denied it before marriage, and carried that so far, that he received the sacrament with her in her own church. After they were married, she found that he had deceived her, and they lived untowardly together. At this time some scruples were put in her head, with which she acquainted me, and seemed fully satisfied with the answers that I gave her: she came afterwards to me, and desired, I would come to her house, and talk of all those matters with some that her husband would bring to meet us. I told her, I would not decline the thing, if desired, though I seldom knew good come of such conferences. She made the same proposition to Dr. Stillingfleet, and he gave the same answer: so a day was set, and we went thither, and found ten or twelve persons that were not known to us. We were scarce set down, when Coleman came in, who took the whole debate upon him. I writ down a very exact account of all that passed, and sent it to them, and had their additions to it, and I printed it.

A conference between Coleman and some divines.

The thing made a great noise, and was a new indication of Coleman's arrogance. Soon after that, the lady, who continued firm upon this conference, was possessed with new scruples about the validity of our ordinations. I got from her the paper that was put in her hand, and answered it, and she seemed satisfied with that likewise: but afterwards, the uneasiness of her life prevailed more on her than her scruples did; and she changed her religion. 1676.

Some time after I had printed the Memoirs of the Dukes of Hamilton, which were favourably received, the reading of those got me the acquaintance and friendship of Sir William Jones, then attorney-general. He was raised to that high post merely by merit, and by his being thought the greatest man of the law; for, as he was no flatterer, but a man of morose temper, so he was against all the measures that they took at court: they were weary of him, and were raising Sir John King to vie with him; but he died in his rise, which indeed went on very quick. Jones was an honest and wise man: he had a roughness in his deportment, that was very disagreeable; but he was a good-natured man at bottom, and a faithful friend. He grew weary of his employment, and laid it down; and, though the great seal was offered him, he would not accept of it, nor return to business. The quickness of his thoughts carried his views far; and the sourness of his temper made him too apt both to suspect, and to despise most of those that came to him. My way of writing history pleased him, and so he pressed me to undertake the history of England; but Sanders's book, that was then translated into French, and cried up much in France, made all my friends press me to answer it, by writing the "History of the Reformation:" so now all my thoughts were turned that way. I laid out for MSS., and searched into all offices. I got for some days into the Cotton Library; but Duke Lauderdale hearing of my design, and apprehending it might succeed in my hands, got Dolben, bishop of Rochester, to divert Sir John Cotton from suffering me to search into his library. He told him I was a great enemy to the prerogative, to which Cotton was devoted, even to slavery: so he said I would certainly make an ill use of all I had found. This wrought so much on him, that I was no more admitted till my first volume was

I undertook to write the History of our Reformation.

1676. published; and then, when he saw how I had composed it, he gave me free access to it.

The Earl of Essex's character.

At this time the Earl of Essex was brought over from being lord lieutenant of Ireland, whose friendship to me was afterwards such, that I think myself obliged to stop, and to give some account of him. He was the Lord Capell's son: his education was neglected by reason of the war; but, when he was at man's age, he made himself master of the Latin tongue, and made a great progress in mathematics, and in all the other parts of learning. He knew our law and constitution well, and was a very thoughtful man. He began soon to appear against the court: the King imputed it to his resentments, so he resolved to make use of him. He sent him ambassador to Denmark, where his behaviour, in the affair of the flag, gained him much reputation; though he said to me there was nothing in it. That King had ordered the Governor of Croonenburgh to make all ships that passed strike to him: so when Lord Essex was sailing by, he sent to him, either to strike to him or to sail by in the night, or to keep out of his reach: otherwise he must shoot, first with powder, but next with ball. Lord Essex sent him a resolute answer, that the Kings of England made others strike to them, but their ships struck to none: he would not steal through in the dark, nor keep out of his reach; and, if he shot at him, he would defend himself. The Governor did shoot him, but on design shot over him: this was thought great bravery in him; yet he reckoned it was impossible the Governor would endeavour to sink a ship that brought over an ambassador. While he was there, the King died, which made a great change in the court; for that King had made one of his servants stadtholder, which was indeed a strange thing, he himself being upon the place. He was but a mean person, and was advanced by the favour the Queen bore him. Lord Essex's first business was to justify his behaviour in refusing to strike. Now at his going from England, Sir John Cotton had desired him to take some volumes of his library that related to Danish affairs, which he took, without apprehending that he should have great occasion to use them: but this accident made him search into them, and he found very good materials to justify his conduct; since by formal treaties it had been expressly stipulated, that the

His employment in Denmark.

English ships of war should not strike in the Danish seas. This raised his character so high at court, that it was writ over to him, that he might expect every thing he should pretend to at his return. The change of government that he saw in Denmark, and the bringing it about with so little difficulty, made a great impression on him, since one of the freest nations in the world was on a sudden brought under a most arbitrary form of government. Many of the ancient nobility seemed uneasy under the change; and even the Chancellor himself, though raised by favour from very mean beginnings, could not forbear to lament even to him the change of their constitution. 1676.

And his government of Ireland.

Upon his return from Denmark, he was made lord lieutenant of Ireland. He could never understand how he came to be raised to that post; for he had not pretended to it, and he was a violent enemy to popery; not so much from any fixed principle in religion, in which he was too loose, as because he looked on it as an invasion made on the freedom of human nature. In his government of Ireland he exceeded all that had gone before him, and is still considered as a pattern to all that come after him. He studied to understand exactly well the constitution and interest of the nation. He read over all their council books, and made large abstracts out of them, to guide him, so as to advance every thing that had been at any time set on foot for the good of the kingdom. He made several volumes of tables of the state, and persons that were in every county and town, and got true characters of all that were capable to serve the public: and he preferred men always upon merit, without any application from themselves; and watched over all about him, that there should be no bribes going among his servants. The revenue of Ireland was then in the Earl of Ranelagh's management, who was one of the ablest men that island had bred, capable of all affairs, even in the midst of a loose run of pleasure, and much riot. He had the art of pleasing masters of very different tempers and interests so much, that he continued above thirty years in great posts. He had undertaken to furnish the King with money for the building of Windsor out of the revenue of Ireland; and it was believed the Dutchess of Portsmouth had a great yearly pension out of his office. By this means payments in Ireland were not regularly made:

1676. so the Earl of Essex complained of this. The King would not own how much he had from Lord Ranelagh; but pressed Lord Essex to pass his accounts: he answered, he could not pass them as accounts; but, if the King would forgive Lord Ranelagh, he would pass a discharge, but not an ill account. The King was not pleased with this, nor with his exactness in that government: it reproached his own too much; so he took a resolution about this time to put the Duke of Ormond in it again. Upon this occasion the Earl of Essex told me, that he knew the King did often take money into his privy purse, to defraud his exchequer; for he reckoned that what was carried thither, was not so much his own, as his privy purse was: and Coventry told Lord Essex, that there was once a plantation cause at the council board, and he was troubled to see the King espouse the worst side; and upon that he went to him, and told him secretly, that it was a vile cause which he was supporting. The King answered him, he had got good money for doing it.

About this time there was a proposition made for farming the revenue of Ireland; and Lord Danby seemed for some time to favour one set of men, who offered to farm it: but on a sudden he turned to another. The secret of this broke out, that he was to have great advantages by the second proposition. The matter was brought to the council table, and some were examined to it upon oath. Lord Widdrington did confess that he made an offer of a round sum to Lord Danby, but said that he did not accept of it. Lord Hallifax was yet of the council; so he observed, that the Lord Treasurer had rejected that offer very mildly, but not so as to discourage a second attempt. It would be somewhat strange, if a man should ask the use of another man's wife, and if the other should indeed refuse it, but with great civility. This nettled Lord Danby, who upon that got him to be dismissed from that board: at which the Duke was much pleased, who hated Lord Hallifax at that time, more even than the Earl of Shaftsbury himself; for he had fallen severely on the declaration for toleration, in the House of Lords. He said, if we could make good the Eastern compliment, "O king, live for ever," he could trust the King with every thing; but since that was so much a compliment, that it could never become real, he could not be implicit in his confidence. Thus matters went on all 1676,

and to the beginning of the year 1677 when another session of parliament was held. I have brought within this year several things that may be of use to enlighten the reader as to the state of things, though perhaps of their own nature they were not important enough to deserve to be told: but in so bare a year as this proved to be, it seemed no impertinent digression, to bring all such matters into the reader's way. 1676.

I shall next give some account of Scotch affairs. The Duke of Lauderdale had mastered the opposition made to him so entirely, that men were now silent, though not quiet. The field conventicles increased mightily: men came to them armed: and upon that great numbers were outlawed; and a writ was issued out, that was indeed legal, but very seldom used, called intercommoning; because it made all that harboured such persons, or did not seize them, when they had it in their power, to be involved in the same guilt. By this means, many, apprehending a severe prosecution, left their houses, and went about like a sort of banditti, and fell into a fierce and savage temper. The privy council upon this pretended they were in a state of war: and, upon an old statute, that was almost quite forgot, it was set on foot, that the King had a power to take any castle, that lay convenient for his forces, and put a garrison in it. So twelve houses were marked out; of which two were the chief dwelling houses of two peers: the rest were the houses of gentlemen that had gone into the party against Duke Lauderdale: and, though these were houses of no strength, and not at all properly situated for the suppressing of conventicles, yet they were taken,—soldiers were put in them,—and the countries about were required to furnish those small garrisons with all things necessary. This was against the express words of the law that had lately settled the militia. Great opposition was made to it; yet it was kept up above a year, till the houses were quite ruined by the rude soldiers, who understood, that the more waste they made it would be the more acceptable. At last it was let fall. The affairs of Scotland.

Another thing happened, scarce worth mentioning, if it was not for the effects that followed on it. One Carstairs, a loose and vicious gentleman, who had ruined his estate, undertook to Sharp to go about in disguise to see those conventicles, and to carry some with him to witness against such as they saw at them, in which he himself was not to

1676. appear; but he was to have a proportion of all the fines that should be set upon this evidence: and he was to have so much for every one of their teachers that he could catch. He had many different disguises, and passed by different names in every one of them. He found Kirkton an eminent preacher among them, who was as cautious as the rest were bold, and had avoided all suspicious and dangerous meetings. Carstairs, seeing him walking in the streets of Edinburgh, told him, there was a person that was sick, and sent him to beg a visit from him. He, suspecting nothing, went with him. Carstairs brought him to his own lodgings; and there he told him, he had a warrant against him, which he would execute, if he would not give him money to let him alone. Kirkton said, he had not offended, and was willing to go to prison till his innocence should appear. Carstairs really had no warrant; but, as was afterwards discovered, he had often taken this method, and had got money by it: so he went out to procure a warrant, and left Kirkton locked up in his chamber. Kirkton called to the people of the house, and told them how he was trepanned: and he got one of them to seek Baillie of Jerriswood, his brother-in-law, who was a gentleman of great parts, but of much greater virtue. Carstairs could not find nine privy counsellors to sign a warrant, which were the number required by law; yet, when he came back, he pretended he had a warrant, and would force Kirkton to go to prison upon it. Kirkton refused to obey any such warrant, till he saw it: and upon that Carstairs struggled, and pulled him to the ground, and sat on him, the other crying out murder. At that time Baillie came to the door; and hearing him cry out, he called to Carstairs to open the door; and, that not being done, he forced it, and found Carstairs sitting upon Kirkton: he drew his sword, and made him come off him. He then asked him, what warrant he had to use him as he did? he said, he had a warrant to carry him to prison; but he refused to shew it. Baillie offered to assist in executing it, if he had any; but he persisted in this, that he was not bound to shew it. Baillie made Kirkton to go out, and followed him, no violence being used; for which he had many witnesses, whom the noise had brought together; and he said, he was resolved to sue Carstairs for this riot. But, before the next council day, a warrant was signed by nine

privy counsellors, but antedated, for the committing of Kirkton, and of six or seven more of their preachers. Lord Athol told me, he was one of those who signed it, with that false date to it: so Baillie was cited before the council. Carstairs produced his warrant, which he pretended he had at the time that Kirkton was in his hands, but did not think fit to shew, since that would discover the names of others, against whom he was also to make use of it. Baillie brought his witnesses to prove his behaviour: but they would not so much as examine them. It was said, that upon Carstairs saying he had a warrant, Kirkton was bound to go to gaol; and that, if it had been found that he was carried thither without a warrant, the gaoler would not have received him. Duke Hamilton, and Lord Kincardin, were yet of the council; and they argued long against this way of proceeding, as liker a court of inquisition than a legal government. Yet Baillie was fined 500*l.*, and condemned to a year's imprisonment; and upon this an occasion was taken to turn Duke Hamilton and Lord Kincardin out of the council, as enemies to the church, and as favourers of conventicles. 1676.

END OF VOL. I.

Printed by J. F. DOVE, St. John's Square.

BE.NYP 61 JAN '28